Manual of hygiene for students and nurses / [John Glaister].

Contributors

Glaister, John, 1856-1932.

Publication/Creation

Edinburgh : Livingstone, 1905.

Persistent URL

https://wellcomecollection.org/works/zmqq3kbm

License and attribution

The copyright of this item has not been evaluated. Please refer to the original publisher/creator of this item for more information. You are free to use this item in any way that is permitted by the copyright and related rights legislation that applies to your use.
See rightsstatements.org for more information.

wellcome collection

Wellcome Collection
183 Euston Road
London NW1 2BE UK
T +44 (0)20 7611 8722
E library@wellcomecollection.org
https://wellcomecollection.org

LIVINGSTONES' MEDICAL HANDBOOKS.

Symington's Topographical Anatomy of the Child		£2 : 2/-
M'Lachlan's Applied Anatomy: Surgical, Medical, and Operative, 2 vols. (3rd Edition)		18/-
Glaister's Medical Jurisprudence, Toxicology and Public Health, *Illustrated*	net	15/-
—— Manual of Hygiene (2nd Edition)	"	6/-
Mikulicz's Tubercular Joint Disease	"	4/6
Wheeler's Medicine and Therapeutics (2nd Edition)	"	8/-
Hughes' Nerves of the Human Body, with Plates		7/6
—— Manual of Surgical Anatomy	net	4/6
Gynecology: A Handbook for Students, *Illustrated*		5/-
Husband's Forensic Medicine, Toxicology and Public Health (7th Edition)	net	10/6
—— Practice of Medicine (5th Edition)	"	10/6
—— Pocket Prescriber (New Edition)	"	1/6
—— Examination of the Urine (4th Edition)	"	1/-
Croom's Minor Gynecology (2nd Edition)		6/-
Examination Questions, Practice of Medicine, with Answers, Part 1 — General Diseases. Part 2 — Skin Diseases. Part 3 — Fevers	each, net	1/-
Craig's Posological Tables (New Edition)	"	1/-
Whitaker's The Brain and Spinal Cord, with Plates (3rd Ed.)	"	5/-
—— Notes on Pathology—Vol. I. General	"	4/6
Martin's Yellow Fever	"	4/-
Masterman's Zoology (2nd Edition), *Illustrated*	"	12/-
Orr' Handbook of Public Health	"	4/-
Poole's Vaccination Eruptions	"	4/6
Handbook of Diseases of the Skin, *Illustrated*	"	2/6
Giffen's Materia Medica (2nd Edition)	"	2/-
Kempe's Diseases of the Eye	"	1/6
Wishart's Botanist's Vade Mecum	"	2/-
—— Schedules of Plant Description	"	6d.
Hughes' References to Nerves	"	1/-
Webster's Puberty and the Change of Life	"	1/-
Anatomy— *Catechism Series*, Six Parts—each	"	1/-
Bacteriology— Do.	"	1/-
Botany— Do. Two Parts—each	"	1/-
Chemistry— Do. Two Parts—each	"	1/-
Forensic Medicine— Do.	"	1/-
Histology— Do.	"	1/-
Materia Medica— Do. Three Parts—each	"	1/-
Midwifery— Do. Two Parts—each	"	1/-
Pathology— Do. Parts I., II. & III.—each	"	1/-
Physics— Do. Two Parts—each	"	1/-
Physiology— Do. Four Parts—each	"	1/-
Public Health— Do. Five Parts—each	"	1/-
Surgery— Do. Seven Parts—each	"	1/-
Surgical Anatomy and Operations.—Two Parts—each	"	1/-
Toxicology— *Catechism Series*,	"	1/-
Zoology— Do. Two Parts—each	"	/-
Johnstone's Botany Notes (4th Edition)		/-
—— Zoology Notes	"	3/6
EDINBURGH MEDICAL EXAM. QUESTIONS, by post		2/3

Full Catalogue of our Publications on application. 12.4

22101356616

Med
K22034

NOTICE.

It is intended that this book shall be sold to the Public at 6/- NET *and the terms on which it is supplied to the Trade will not allow of discount.*

E. & S. Livingstone.

WITH THE PUBLISHERS' COMPLIMENTS
E. & S. L.

MANUAL OF HYGIENE

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2016

https://archive.org/details/b28084500

MANUAL OF HYGIENE

FOR STUDENTS AND NURSES

BY

JOHN GLAISTER, M.D., D.P.H. (CAMB.)

Fellow of the Faculty of Physicians and Surgeons of Glasgow; Licentiate of the Royal Colleges of Physicians and Surgeons of Edinburgh; Fellow of the Royal Society of Edinburgh; Fellow of the Chemical Society; Fellow of the Sanitary Institute; Professor of Forensic Medicine and Public Health in the University of Glasgow; Examiner in Forensic Medicine and Hygiene to the Royal Colleges of Physicians and Surgeons of Edinburgh and the Faculty of Physicians and Surgeons of Glasgow, for Diplomas in Medicine and Surgery, and Examiner in Public Health for the Diploma in Public Health of these United Corporations, etc.

SECOND EDITION

EDINBURGH

E. & S. LIVINGSTONE

1905

7950

WELLCOME INSTITUTE LIBRARY

Coll.	we!MOmec
Call No.	WA

302200

TO

WILLIAM TENNANT GAIRDNER, K.C.B.,

M.D., LL.D., F.R.S., ETC.,

SENIOR PHYSICIAN IN ORDINARY TO HIS MAJESTY THE KING IN SCOTLAND;

EMERITUS PROFESSOR OF MEDICINE IN THE UNIVERSITY OF GLASGOW;

FIRST MEDICAL OFFICER OF HEALTH TO THE CITY OF GLASGOW (1863-1872);

AND ONE OF THE EARLIEST EXPONENTS OF PUBLIC HEALTH TEACHING IN SCOTLAND;

THE FOLLOWING PAGES ARE AFFECTIONATELY DEDICATED

BY HIS OLD STUDENT AND FRIEND,

THE AUTHOR.

PREFACE TO SECOND EDITION

In preparing a second edition the author gratefully acknowledges the kindly and appreciative reviews which were made of the first edition. That the book met the wants of readers was evidenced by the rapidity with which it was taken up by those for whom it was written. Nothing requires to be added to the original preface on the question of the ever-increasing importance of a knowledge of personal and general hygiene by the public and by those engaged in dealing with disease. It is sufficient to say that more and more does the State recognise the value of the enforcement of the principles of disease-prevention in local and general statutes.

This edition has been carefully revised. It has not been thought necessary or advisable, in view of the knowledge required of those for whom the book is specially intended, to institute large changes. At the same time, additional chapters have been added to make the work more complete, and various annotations have been interpolated in the text, with the object of increasing the

usefulness of the book without unduly extending its scope. The author hopes, therefore, that it may continue to receive that measure of appreciation which was extended to the former edition.

University of Glasgow,
1904.

PREFACE TO FIRST EDITION

SANITARY science, not only in its name but also in its development in this country, belongs peculiarly to the Victorian Era. Sixty years ago sanitation, as we now understand it, was conspicuous by its absence. The health of the peoples of populous centres and of rural communities alike was seriously affected by insanitary environments, by limited house spaces, by imperfect means of sewage disposal, by insufficient and polluted water supplies, and, not less, by general ignorance of the causes which make for disease.

Then, the nation was passively careless of the housing and surroundings of the poorer classes; epidemics claimed their victims by thousands, and their prime causes were so imperfectly understood that they were deemed to be visitations of God, which might only be stayed by prayers and fastings.

Now, the Legislature, actuated by advancing scientific knowledge, and by public opinion founded thereupon, has made considerable provision for the better housing of the working-classes, has laid down regulations for the con-

servation of the health of factory workers and of those who are engaged in other unhealthy occupations, and has set up throughout the length and breadth of the land a public sanitary service charged with the duty of supervising the removal of those conditions which are prejudicial to the public health. Former superstitions have been largely swept away, and have given place to a more intelligent knowledge of the prime factors of preventable diseases. Municipalities and the educated public alike share in the promotion of this forward sanitary movement.

Perfection, however, has not yet been attained,—for many problems of the first importance still await the solution of the future,—but the vast congregation of persons whose lives have been saved, or have been prolonged, or have been made more comfortable by these developments during the past few decades, encourages toward further efforts.

None who are in any way engaged in the care of the healthy or of the sick can, with impunity, remain ignorant of the main principles of Hygiene and Preventive Medicine. A knowledge of the laws of health is required of the student of medicine and of the nurse, as well as of the physician and surgeon.

From a long experience as a teacher of Hygiene and Public Health to medical men, students of medicine and nurses, the writer may fairly claim to be able, in some measure, to form an estimate of the respective needs of each class; and it is for the last two of these that the following pages have been written.

The larger portion of this manual, as suited to nurses, originally appeared as a series of papers in *The Hospital*, and after various alterations—additions and subtractions—both in text and illustrations, the book is now intended for the student of medicine while studying for degrees or diplomas in medicine and surgery, as well as for nurses for certificates of competency.

The author places it in their hands in the hope that it will enable them to comprehend the leading principles of that science which is likely to bulk more largely in the policy of the future than it has in the past—the science of Preventive Medicine.

The writer tenders his thanks to Messrs. Macmillan & Co., Messrs. Baird & Tatlock, and others, for their kind permission to use certain of the blocks which serve to illustrate the text.

GLASGOW, 1897.

CONTENTS

CHAP.		PAGE
1.	Hygiene and its Bearings—The House we Live in, in Relation to Health, considered generally . .	1
2.	Soils in Relation to Houses	8
3.	Sites and Foundations of Houses	14
4.	The House we Live in	20
5.	The House—Sanitary Conveniences—Lighting and Heating—Ventilation	26
6.	Air in Relation to Health—Its Composition and Common Impurities—Cubic and Superficial Space .	31
7.	Ventilation—Its Principles—Detection of Air Impurities	38
8.	Methods of Ventilation applied to Rooms, Large Buildings, and Hospital Wards	44
9.	Ventilation — Modes applicable to Living-Rooms, Large Buildings, and Hospitals	55
10.	Heat in Relation to Health—Modes of Heat Propagation	65
11.	Heat in Relation to Health (*Continued*) . . .	70

CHAP. PAGE

12. Heat in Relation to Health: Gas Stoves, Oil Stoves, Hot-Water Pipes, Steam-Pipes 76

13. Modes of Heat Measurement — Thermometers — Temperature Scales 81

14. Sick-Room Temperatures—Regulation of Heat in Sick-Rooms—Bath Temperatures 87

15. Water in Relation to Health—Sources of Supply—Modes of Supply 93

16. Water Supply (*Continued*)—Modes of Supply—Characteristics of Wholesome Water . . . 99

17. Water Supply (*Continued*)—Characteristics of Potable Waters—Effects of Impure Water on Health . . 106

18. Detection of Impurities in Water—Modes of Purification of Water 112

19. How Water reaches our Homes — The Pump—Gravitation—The Siphon—The Hydrometer . . 122

20. Personal Habits in Relation to Health—Hereditary and Acquired 130

21. Exercise—Rest—Relaxation—In Relation to Maintenance of Health 137

22. Sleep—Hypnotism—Idiosyncrasies—In Relation to Health 143

23. Effects of Occupation on Health 150

24. Food—Classification of Foods—Proximate Principles. 158

25. Diet and Dietaries—Composition of Foods—Standard Diets—Calculation of Dietaries 171

26. Rationale of Food and Food-taking 181

CHAP. PAGE

27. Characteristics of Groups of Foods 187

28. Characteristics of Groups of Foods (*Continued*) . . 200

29. Characteristics of Groups of Foods (*Continued*) . . 206

30. Characteristics of Groups of Foods (*Continued*)—Vegetarianism—Food and Energy 222

31. House Drainage in Relation to Health—The Sanitary Fittings of the House—Waste Water and Soil Disposal 234

32. The Sanitary Fittings of the House (*Continued*) . 242

33. Sanitary Fittings (*Continued*)—Different forms of Closets—The Soil Pipe 248

34. Sanitary Fittings (*Continued*)—The House Drain—Traps and their Uses 259

35. House Drainage (*Continued*)—Traps—Siphoning of Traps—Forms of Traps 265

36. Atmosphere of House Drain and Sewer—Modes of Testing Drains—Sewer Ventilation . . . 272

37. Sewage Disposal and Purification—Precipitation—Irrigation—Filtration—Bacteriolysis—House Refuse Disposal—Conservancy Systems—Practical Hints for Householders and Nurses . . . 278

38. Clothing in Relation to Health—Materials Employed in Manufacture—Their Uses and Values . . 291

39. Clothing in Temperate Climates—Of Children—And of the Sexes, considered generally . . . 298

40. Preventable Diseases—Epidemic—Endemic—Pandemic—Their Prime Causes 304

CHAP. PAGE

41. Microbes—Their Place, Power, and Effects—Forms of Microbes—Their Natural History—Modes of Propagation—Nature of Infective Material—Contagium—Infective Microbes—Their Intimate Action on the Human Body 309

42. Influence of Climate, Season, Locality, etc., on Infective and Contagious Diseases—Modes of Convection of Infective Material 315

43. Influence of Climate, etc., on Infective and Contagious Diseases (*Continued*) 320

44. Characteristics of Infective Materials of Zymotic Diseases — Incubation — Invasion — Infectivity — Infectious Diseases in Relation to Schools . . 329

45. Infectious Diseases—Modes of Spread—Modes of Prevention of Spread—Prophylaxis—Notification—Isolation—Quarantine—Disinfection . . . 335

46. Disinfection and Disinfectants 342

47. Disinfection and Disinfectants (*Continued*)—Heat as a Disinfecting Agent 347

48. Disinfection—Natural Disinfectants—Practical Disinfection of Excretory Products of Patient, of Clothing, and of Room—German and French Modes of Disinfection 353

49. Sanitary Law relating to Infective Diseases . . 362

50. Isolation Hospitals 369

INDEX 391

MANUAL OF HYGIENE.

CHAPTER I.

HYGIENE AND ITS BEARINGS—THE HOUSE WE LIVE IN, IN RELATION TO HEALTH, CONSIDERED GENERALLY.

Hygiene is that science which teaches of the preservation of the health of man and of the conservation and prolongation of life. The word is derived from "Hygeia," who was in the pagan mythology designated the goddess of health. She was the daughter of Æsculapius. Hygiene has a collective as well as an individual application; its precepts are alike valuable to man in the mass, as to man in the unit. In its collective application, since it deals with the lives of the inhabitants of a State—which are its most valuable assets—it is denominated State medicine. In respect also that it instructs in the principles of prevention of disease, it is often designated Preventive medicine.

But, by whatever name it may be called, the object of hygiene is to enable us to live as healthily and as long as possible by forewarning us against those causes which make for disease, and thus to avoid them. It therefore deals with everything within, without, and around us which will prejudicially affect the natural tear and wear

of the body. Thus, the house we live in, the food we eat, the coverings of our bodies, the air we breathe, and the water we drink, all come under our purview. Our relations to our neighbour, the schemes of drainage and water supply common to large communities, will also demand attention. Likewise, the effects of occupation, rest and relaxation, and sleep in relation to health, the nature of infective matter, the infective diseases, disinfection, and isolation hospitals, will receive some attention.

In the succeeding chapters it is proposed to treat the subject both systematically and succinctly, and in this connection probably the most important subject to be first discussed is, the house we live in, in its relation to health.

THE HOUSE IN ITS RELATION TO HEALTH.

The importance of the house is at once apparent when it is recollected that the average person spends at least half of his lifetime indoors; consequently the home forms a very important factor in our lives. Its condition, from a sanitary point of view, exercises considerable influence on the health of the inmates. It may only be in the direction of impairing vitality, or it may be in the production of actual disease. Most people cannot command everything they would desire in their houses; economic considerations frequently forbid. The exigencies, too, of city life compel many persons to live near their work, amid surroundings alike uncongenial as they are unhealthy. Hence the site of the house, its surroundings, its relation to climatic conditions, to wind, and sunlight, are beyond their control. It will be, at least, certain that the more open the space is around a

house, the more bountiful will be the supply of air and sunlight. A house in a hollow is likely to prove a more unhealthy house than one on a hill; here the subsoil conditions—the soil upon which the foundations are laid—become of importance. The former house is more likely to be damp than the more elevated one, for reasons which will be pointed out later. Again, the drainage of the latter house will be better than that of the former, since water runs from heights into hollows.

Again, the kind of house in relation to the neighbour is of some importance. The one-tenant, or self-contained, house is more independent of the careless neighbour than the house in a flat, or apartments in a tenement occupied by different holders. The careless neighbour in such circumstances as the latter would likely prove a grave menace to the others, for instance, in the spread of the infectious diseases of children. The housing of people has an influence *per se* on the health of a community. The denser the population in a given area the higher will be the death-rate, under ordinary conditions. This is abundantly proved from the experience of large cities. If this dense population be composed largely of the vicious class, the death-rate will still be higher than if a population of equal density were made up chiefly of the industrious working-classes. The average density of any given population is arrived at by dividing the total number of the inhabitants by the area covered by their habitations. Thus we speak of so many persons per acre, or square mile, or whatever the unit of space may be. The actual density is obtained by ascertaining the precise number of inhabitants living within a certain defined and measured area. The average density, therefore, will be no true guide, since

the most densely and most sparsely populated districts are "lumped" together, as are also the most open with the most crowded spaces. So, too, has the number of rooms in a house an effect on the health of its inmates. Generally speaking, the smallest houses—that is, those of the smallest number of apartments—are occupied by those whose struggle for existence is the hardest. With such people it is all work and no play, and little time, and perhaps less care, are exercised in observing ordinary cleanliness. There is but the scantiest heed for infant life, and hence follows a high death-rate in children. The law of the survival of the fittest is in full operation here, for life at the extremes of age—childhood and old age—is held cheap. As the house increases in size these conditions gradually disappear until a point is reached when disease-producing factors have least chance to operate, because of the observance of the principles of personal hygiene, and of the attention given to the sanitation of the home. It is not to be wondered at, therefore, that from all classes of disease, and at all periods of life, the mortality rates increase as the scale of accommodation is descended.

If we view houses from the point of view of nursing, we can also see why it is that such things should be. Nursing, worthy of the name, is absolutely impossible in houses of the poorer classes, and any kind of medical treatment is well-nigh valueless. Recoveries are to be attributed more to the native strength of the patient—otherwise called the *vis medicatrix naturæ, i.e.* the healing power of nature—than to anything the physician or the nurse may do. In the larger houses, on the other hand, both medical and nursing treatment are afforded room to work, and the patients having been brought up

in healthier conditions are better able to resist the operations of disease; hence more recoveries follow. From these causes, as well as from other physical and moral causes, there are higher death-rates in the poorer class than in the better class houses. Probably the most important factor in the health-conditions of any home, be it small or large, is the "elbow-room,"—that is, the superficial floor space and cubic space at the command of the occupants. It has been assumed, hitherto, that the average-sized family occupied the classes of houses described, but it is obvious that in houses even of four or five apartments, the elbow-room may be not greater, indeed may be less, than in houses of smaller dimensions. This involves the question of the house-space in relation to the number of occupants. There is a minimum amount of space, both superficial and cubic, which each adult person must have in order that health may be fairly maintained. Economy prohibits the maximum. The Legislature has taken this subject into consideration in connection with the sanitary supervision of the smaller houses of certain populous places. The reasons for this largely depend on ventilation. The following tables illustrate the amount of space given to children in the schools of different countries, and to adults in the poorer classes of houses:—

Table I.—Showing School Spaces in Different Countries.

Country.	Superficial Floor Space in Square Feet.	Cubic Space in Feet.
Great Britain (Government Code)	10	100 to 140
London School Board	...	130
Dundee School Board	...	152
Canada	...	240
Belgium	10½	160
„ Educational League	17½	338
Holland (average)	...	131
„ Haarlem (average)	...	160
Bavaria (children of eight years)	...	137
„ (children of twelve years)	...	197
Dresden	7	152
Frankfort (Med. Society)	15½	300 to 325
Basle (Switzerland)	15½	148 to 165
Sweden (Primary schools)	16	188 to 266
„ (Higher schools)	17 to 23	271 to 352
America (New York City)	...	88 to 105
Columbia (Commission)	15	218
Massachusetts (State)	Demands that each pupil receive 1800 cubic feet of warmed fresh air per hour.	

Taken from a paper by the Author on "The Hygiene of Schools" in the *Sanitary Journal*, January 1895.

Table II.—Showing Cubic Space allowed by Law.

Cubic Space allowed by Law or Local Regulations.	Cubic Space per Head.	Authority.
Board Schools under Education Act	80	Education Act.
Board Schools (minimum under New Code)	100	Education Department.
General School-rooms	130	London School Bd.
Graded Schools	117	,, ,, ,,
Dundee Board Schools—newest	152	Dundee School Bd.
Canadian Schools	240	Canadian Govmt.
Ordinary Dwelling-houses in Glasgow and Edinburgh, in one- and two-roomed houses—for adult	400	Glasgow Police Authority.
Two children under 10	400	Glasgow Police Authority.
Common Lodging-houses	240 to 400	
Poor Law for healthy persons	300	
Poor Law for sick persons	850 to 1200	
Barracks	600	Army Regulations.
Army Hospital Wards	1200	,, ,,
,, Huts (free ventilation)	400	,, ,,
,, Hospital	600	,, ,,
Canal Boats (persons over 12)	60	Local Govt. Board Regulations under Canal Boats Act, 1877.
,, ,, (persons under 12)	40	
Seamen's Cabins	72	Merchant Shipping Act.
Non-textile workshops and work-places	250	Factory and Workshop Act, 1901.
Non-textile workshops and work-places (overtime)	400	
Work-places, used at night as sleeping-places	400	Factory and Workshop Act, 1901.

CHAPTER II.

SOILS IN RELATION TO HOUSES.

It requires comparatively little knowledge or experience to arrive at the fact that soils, which compose the surface of the earth, vary in colour, in appearance, and in consistency. Most persons appreciate the differences between the sand of the sea-shore, garden earth, and clay. It is more difficult, however, to realise that all soils have their origin in the gradual disintegration of the rocky crust of the earth by various natural forces, such as erosive action of water, the action of frost, and other factors, all collectively comprehended in the general term "weathering." All soils contain certain proportions of sand, clay, and other mineral substances, in addition to organic matter, together with living microbes. Depending upon the preponderating components of soils, a classification has been made, by which definite names have been given to each, such as sands, clays, humus, loam, peat, and others. A sandy soil, as the name implies, contains sand predominantly, clayey soils, clay preponderatingly, and so on. Clay contains large proportions of silicate of alumina in a state of very fine division, and thus possesses its cohesive, tenacious, and plastic character. Humus consists mainly of decomposed vegetable matters. Loam is a mixture of sand, clay, and humus; and a light or heavy loam is so designated because of the large or small amount of sand

which it contains. Peat is the product of partially decomposed vegetable matter. From the point of view of public health, the chief points with relation to soils to engage the attention are certain properties which soil possesses. These are (1) porosity or pore-volume, (2) permeability, and (3) water-retaining capacity.

The porosity of a soil depends not so much upon the size of the constituent particles which compose it as upon the uniformity of size and the arrangement of particles. This may easily be demonstrated experimentally with small-shot of two different sizes, one smaller than the other, put in cylindrical vessels containing water. But in soils, particles are by no means uniform in size. They are made up, in fact, of different-sized and different-shaped particles more or less compacted together, and thus porosity is lessened or increased as circumstances differ. All soils, however, possess a certain amount of porosity, as also do rocks, but the amounts differ much between the extremes. In ordinary soils the average amount is about 40 per cent, but in clay the amount is very much less.

Permeability depends upon the size of the spaces between the individual particles which compose soil. The smaller the size, the greater the obstruction to the passage of air; the larger the size, the less obstruction: in other words, the lesser or greater the permeability. It has been shown, for example, that in a sample of coarse sand, tested under like conditions to one of fine sand, air will pass about 950 times more rapidly in the same unit of time. From this, therefore, emerges the general principle, that permeability to air diminishes in proportion to the fineness of the constituent particles of which a soil is composed. Applying this principle practically, it is found that clays possess the least permeability to air, and

gravelly soils the greatest, while loam, humus, and sand occupy intermediate positions. The same principle on general lines holds true of permeability of soils to water.

The capacity of a soil for water, and its water-retaining capacity, are also factors of importance in public health problems. These do not mean the same thing. The former may be illustrated by an experiment with an ordinary brick. If a brick be thoroughly dried, weighed when cool, be thereafter submerged in a vessel of water for some time to ensure its contained air being replaced by water, be then taken out of the water and be wiped dry on the surface, and be again weighed, the difference in weight will be the measure of the amount of water which the brick is capable of holding. This is the water-capacity of the brick. The amount varies in different kinds of bricks—from 20 per cent of the original weight of the dry brick to about 8 per cent. Like experiments may be made with different soils packed into a glass or metal cylinder. The water which is contained in the brick after the foregoing experiment owes its presence therein to the operation of two natural forces, viz. (*a*) surface attraction of solids for liquids, and (*b*) capillary attraction; the latter being the more active.

The water-retaining capacity of a soil is determined very largely, perhaps mainly, by the fineness of the interspaces between the particles forming capillary spaces. The finer or more compact, therefore, the soil is, the more tenacious its hold upon the water which it contains. Clay corresponds to such conditions, and therefore it ought to possess, as experience shows it does possess, great water-retaining power. But this property is also a characteristic of soil which is rich in organic matter. It may be proved of humus, for example, that it is capable of retaining from

eight to ten times its own weight of water. Depending upon these characteristics is the temperature of soils. The capacity of soils for absorbing heat differs owing to their composition and constitution. Sand, mixed with lime, gives a standard, which, reckoned as 100 per cent of heat-absorbing power, enables us to gauge this property relatively in soils of other compositions. Compared with this standard, and under like conditions of test, pure sand absorbs 95 per cent, heavy clay 71 per cent, chalky soils about 60 per cent, and humus about 50 per cent. Soil-temperature, however, is influenced by a large variety of factors, of which the principal are, exposure to sun's rays, atmospheric temperature, compactness, composition, and contained moisture. Colour, too, is a factor which ought not to be ignored. A dark-coloured soil absorbs more heat than a chalky soil under like conditions. Contained moisture is a determining factor. Owing to the loss of heat which always accompanies evaporation, water-retaining soils are always colder than dry soils. Hence clayey soils are colder than sandy soils or porous soils. It is for this reason also that, in hot countries, water is always stored in porous earthenware vessels; the contained water being kept cool by the evaporation, which constantly takes place on the outer surface of the porous vessel, of the water which these pores contain.

Associated with the composition of soil is the composition of the soil atmosphere. Owing to the organic matter which most soils more or less contain, the air of soils always contains relatively high proportions of carbonic acid gas, and, within certain limits, it is true that the richer in organic matter a soil is, the higher will be the proportion of this gas in its atmosphere. Pettenkofer and the Munich School of hygienists founded upon this

the doctrine that the impurity of a soil from organic matter might be gauged by the amount of carbon dioxide gas which a sample of the air of a soil contained. This, however, must not be looked upon as an infallible rule, since so many factors disturb and influence the composition of ground air,—such, for example, as wind, barometric pressure, and others. The Legislature of this country, alive to the risks of building houses upon "made" ground, has enacted that it shall not be lawful to erect any new building "upon ground which has been filled up with any matter impregnated with fæcal, animal, or vegetable matter, or upon which any such matter has been deposited, unless and until such matters shall have been properly removed by excavation or otherwise, or shall have been rendered or have become innocuous." (Public Health (Scotland) Act, 1897, sec. 182; Public Health (England) Amendment Act, 1890, sec. 25.)

Another factor which must be considered in connection with soils and sites is what is commonly termed "ground water." Collectively, this is composed of *hygroscopic* water, which adheres to the surfaces of soil particles; *capillary* water, which is retained in the minute soil interspaces; and *gravitation* water, which has fallen upon and been absorbed into the soil, and which has sunk by gravity down to the surface of the first impermeable layer. It is to the last-named, however, that the term ground water or subsoil water is commonly applied. The zone of soil in which this water is found, called the ground-water level, lies between the first impermeable layer and the level of soil next above it whose pores are air-filled. The level of this subsoil water rises and falls according to circumstances, such as the rainfall, the presence or absence of deep-rooted vegetation, as well as

other causes. This may be called its vertical motion. But it has also a lateral movement. This mainly depends upon the configuration of the impermeable layer upon which it rests, the rate of its movement varying, therefore, in different places and at different times. Depending upon the average distance of the column of this ground water from the surface of the ground is the depth to which a well-shaft must be driven before water will collect in the well; in other words, the distance from the ground level to the subsoil water is practically the distance to the first impervious layer. The depth at which subsoil water may be found can best be ascertained by digging a shaft or a series of shafts in any given locality.

One of the not least important constituents of soil is the micro-organisms which it contains. Their function seems mainly to consist in purifying the soil, and in converting organic matter into substances fitted for the nutrition of plants. The effects of their action are perceivable, in the analysis of water, in the ammonia, nitrites, and nitrates which are sometimes therein found. It may be held as a general expression of the truth to say that the number of these organisms is greatest per gramme in the superficial layers, and smallest in the deep strata, and that, relatively, the total number in that unit quantity of soil is much higher in soils rich in organic matter, whether animal or vegetable, than in virgin and unpolluted soil.

CHAPTER III.

SITES AND FOUNDATIONS OF HOUSES.

THE choice of a site for a house is practically limited to persons who can afford, and who elect to live in the country. The denizen of the town has usually little or no option, whatever he may have as to its situation. Assuming, however, the possibility of choice of sites for a dwelling, what considerations ought to determine the choice? These may be comprehended in (1) aspect, (2) character and composition of soil, and (3) configuration of ground.

Since "it is a pleasant thing for the eyes to behold the sun," a house should be so planned, relative to the compass, that the living-rooms of the dwelling should receive most of the rays of the sun during the course of the day. Assuming suitable architectural arrangement, the best position is north-east by south-west. Exposure comes next into consideration. While a house site may in other respects be suitable, it may be exposed to prevailing winds, which at certain periods of the year are boisterous, or to north or east winds. Shelter from these, in some measure, is desirable. That may in time be accomplished by planting a belt of trees. But despite the risks of exposure of this kind, a house is better placed upon an elevation than in a hollow, if for nothing else than that the situation is airier, there is usually a larger and wider prospect around

it, and, besides, a better fall for drainage is easily obtainable. Hollows, as sites, are objectionable for a variety of reasons: chiefly, first, because the level of the ground water is likely to be nearer the surface, and, therefore, there is more risk of ground damp in walls and in basement; second, because they are more liable to be surrounded or enveloped in mists, especially in late autumn, which tend to make the house atmosphere damp and cold; and, third, because drainage is usually more difficult and more costly to engineer. As regards the character and composition of soil of site, it will be obvious from what has already been said, that a porous gravelly soil is drier and, therefore, warmer than any other, and, when possible, ought for these reasons to be preferred, whereas clayey, tenacious soils, for the reverse reasons ought to be avoided. The *configuration* of the ground around the site comes into consideration in the questions of the exact position and exposure of the house. Into its special consideration, however, enters the *altitude* above sea-level. The altitude of any site may be looked at from two points of view, viz. first, its absolute altitude or height above sea-level; and second, its relative altitude or height in relation to surrounding ground. It is not difficult to imagine sites situated some hundreds of feet above sea-level, which are, at the same time, relatively low to the surroundings. With regard to salubrity, even such sites as the latter are superior to those which are both absolutely and relatively low. Altitude is of some importance: for example, in the choice of site for a sanatorium for consumptives; but it is not of the prime importance believed as essential by some. Altitude, however, offers reduced atmospheric pressures and freer movement of air. In the open country, the problems of sufficient light and ventilation ought not to

arise where architectural planning has been carefully worked out. But in towns these problems always occur, on account of the comparatively crowded positions of buildings. In the older parts of old towns and cities, the imperfect supply of both of these important factors is abundantly evident. To-day, the importance of these has come to be realised by the Legislature and by municipal authorities; and in various general and local statutes local authorities are not only empowered to deal with insanitary areas and insanitary and obstructive dwellings, but with the erection of new buildings and the formation of new streets, in the Building Regulations for which bye-laws have been instituted by every well-regulated authority, and wherein are laid down standard conditions for width of streets and lanes, height of houses relative thereto, planning of "hollow squares" and courts, and many other such problems. Moreover, the manner of laying out land for the formation of new streets comes under the cognisance of burghal authorities. In an old town, however, the planning of streets is limited to new suburbs, because in the centre of the town or city the land is so valuable for building sites that drastic alterations cannot be ruthlessly made except at enormous cost. If, however, the problem of planning a new town has to be faced, it is quite clear that many healthful improvements would be effected, based upon the sanitary lessons of the past. For example, more elbow-room would be provided in building blocks of houses, streets would be wider, and more attention would be paid to the light and ventilation of street dwellings. Those streets which run from north-east to south-west, or from north-west to south-east, would enable the houses therein to receive the largest daily available amount of sunshine. To secure substantially these ends,

"garden cities" have been proposed. The proposal to institute such a city within easy reach of London, and the results obtained when instituted, will doubtless be watched by many with great interest.

Foundations of Dwellings.—Before erecting a dwelling in a district in which the distance of the ground water from the surface is not already known, it is advisable, some time before the building operations are commenced, to sink a shaft to a depth of some feet below the deepest part of the proposed foundations, in order to obtain information regarding two conditions, viz. (1) the character of the soil, and (2) the level of the subsoil water under varying conditions. Such an experimental shaft will demonstrate the depth, and the variability in rise and fall, of level of ground water, and, therefore, the respiratory movement of the soil itself. In any case where the ordinary level of this subsoil water is within eight or ten feet of the surface, one of two courses is open to the builder, viz. either to abandon the site and look for another, or to drain the subsoil at some depth below that level. The latter course would, necessarily, entail much expense. It is a good plan in all buildings to lay down the foundations in good concrete, or to raise the walls upon large founding blocks of stone, and at a point in the walls, just about the level of the ground, a damp-proof course should be introduced. The object of a damp-proof course is to prevent dampness rising in the walls by capillary action; therefore, it must consist of some kind of material which is impervious to damp. Various materials are used for damp-proof courses. In Scotland, Caithness flag-stone, which is a dense, close-grained stone, is commonly used for main walls, and in many parts of England a course of hard, stoneware bricks is not infre-

quently employed. For interior brick walls, asphalted felt, or thick roof-slate, is often used. Caithness flags of less thickness than for outside walls are undoubtedly better. Sometimes for external walls of brick buildings asphalted felt is used, but experience has proved that in course of time this felt layer gradually disappears, due possibly to the constant superincumbent pressure, and damp begins to rise in the walls. We know of an Isolation Hospital in which this happened. When some of the walls were taken down on account of dampness which began to show therein, no vestige of the asphalted felt could be discovered.

Next, the whole ground area of the dwelling within the walls should be covered over with concrete, or with a layer of asphalt put down in the liquid form while hot. The object of this is twofold, viz. to prevent humidity rising from the soil into the house atmosphere, and to check ground air from rising into the ground apartments, owing to the difference in temperature of house-interior and soil.

To cure dampness in walls of houses which have been constructed without damp-proof wall-courses is hardly possible by ordinary methods. All houses, indeed, which are a century old, or more, may be reckoned to be without such a provision. Temporary measures may be employed which may lessen the evil—such, for example, as excavating the soil round the external walls down to the wall-foundations, laying agricultural drain-pipes, and placing over the pipes, and between the soil and the wall, a layer of coarse rubble of two or more feet in breadth. This procedure is not likely to overcome completely the wall-dampness, but it is calculated to minimise it. Where internal walls also are without damp-proof courses, nothing short of underpinning the walls and inserting such a course is likely to be of permanent value. Where walls, outer

and inner, are in this state, there is little likelihood that the ground area will have been covered with any impervious substance as concrete or asphalt. Under all these circumstances, it becomes almost essential that the whole basement area should be bared, and the surface of soil and the walls treated as has been described.

Ventilation of Ground Flooring.—It is requisite for preservation of wood of basement floors, laths of walls, and other basement woodwork, as well as for maintenance of dryness under basement floor, that means of ventilation should be provided between the asphalt or concrete layer and the flooring. This may be accomplished by grated openings placed at intervals in the external walls close to the ground-level, and at opposite points, to ensure cross-ventilation. In these gratings a movable shutter is provided, by which the superficies of the opening may be lessened in certain conditions of weather. Without such an arrangement, basement apartments are liable to be draughty, with the result that the occupants permanently close the gratings. For want of this provision, dry-rot, a fungus named *Merulius lachrymans*, may develop its growth, and spread undetected over a large area of woodwork. Although the fungus is most apt to begin in wood which has not been properly seasoned,—in other words, in wood containing sap,—it will commence in any wood, flooring or other, due chiefly to want of under-floor ventilation. In some instances which we have seen, it has extended within a period of three years from the woodwork of basement to the woodwork in upper stories. In view, therefore, of such conditions, and of the different forms of disease which may have their origin in living in a damp-house atmosphere, it is hardly possible for too much attention to be paid to the means of prevention of basement dampness.

CHAPTER IV.

THE HOUSE WE LIVE IN.

THE SICK-ROOM.

In the preceding chapter the subject of "elbow-room" was partly discussed. A few words still remain to be said, however, on this subject. If two rooms contained 3000 cubic feet, and were occupied by a family composed of father, mother, and six children, the amount of cubic space available for each—even counting two of the youngest children as one adult—would be less than a room of 1000 cubic feet occupied by two adults. The amount of ventilation necessary to supply the two apartments with an adequate supply of fresh air must necessarily be much greater than that for the one apartment. This will be clearer when the subject of ventilation comes to be discussed, as will also the point whether it would be possible to ventilate these apartments in consonance with the health requirements of the inmates, without risk of draughts. Hence the relation of the amount of cubic space per individual to the possibility of safe ventilation becomes a question of great importance. It may be taken as an axiom that the smaller the apartment the greater is the difficulty of sufficient and safe ventilation; in like manner the smaller the amount of cubic space allotted per individual,

the more difficulty is experienced in solving the problem of supplying the necessary amount of air to maintain health. The cubic space of a room in reference to ventilation has always an important bearing on the health of the occupants at any period of the time of occupancy, and this bearing is a thoroughly practical one. It is quite true that in considering the theoretic amount of air required per person, the question of cubic space loses some of its importance at the end of the first hour of occupancy, but it is always of importance in reference to the practicability of supplying the necessary amount of air.

When illness of any kind enters a house, if the patient must needs be confined to bed, it becomes of prime importance that the room best suited for his treatment should be devoted to that end. Where there is comparatively little spare space in the house, it is often advisable to convert one of the sitting-rooms into a bedroom, particularly if it be more suitable in certain respects than the other rooms. If, however, the house be of more than one flat, usually a bedroom on the upper story is preferable to one on the lower. The patient is less likely to be disturbed by household operations, the sick-room slops can be more easily disposed of in the adjacent bath-room, and the atmospheric conditions of the sick-room are liable to less disturbance, being further away from the doors opening to the outer air. The conditions which should be looked for in the required room are these—viz. it ought to be well lighted by a window which is capable of being opened under certain precautions to admit of the entrance of fresh air; it should contain a good fireplace, which will exhaust the lower strata of air of the room when the fire

is in operation; and it ought to be convenient to the bath-room, for disposal of sick-room slops. Should there be anything in the nature of the ailment calling for special treatment, the room should be chosen accordingly. If, for instance, the patient be a nervous one, or one suffering from insomnia, the situation of the room must be such as will procure the greatest amount of quiet. Here the question of light becomes of less importance, although that of ventilation remains. These general conditions will suffice for the ordinary run of illnesses. When, however, infectious disease makes its appearance in a house, not only is the same attention to be paid to the patient's comfort, but a new element enters into the problem, viz. the comfort and safety of the other occupants of the house. Equally of importance with the care of the patient is the prevention of the extension of the disease to others, both inside and outside the house. Under these circumstances, the position of the room occupied by such a patient becomes of the chiefest importance. It must be removed as far as possible from the living-rooms of the other occupants, and it must also be in proximity to the bath-rooms, so that sick-room utensils may be amply disinfected, sick-room clothing be steeped in germicide liquid, the patient be adequately supplied with water for cleansing purposes, and the nurse for disinfecting herself preparatory to taking exercise out of doors. Contagium is a particulate substance, and cannot pass through doors or walls. That is true. Wherefore, then, the necessity for all these precautions? Because this particulate matter is so light that it is easily airborne, and may be thrown into the common air supply of the other rooms on opening and shutting the sick-room

door; besides it adheres to everything that proceeds from the sick-room. Hence the above necessary precautions.

The duties of the nurse in the sick-room, in addition to those necessary for the personal comfort of the patient and to those laid down by the physician, include the proper ventilation of the room, and the maintenance of a suitable temperature, during her term of duty. The ventilation of the ordinary sick-room is by no means a simple matter; indeed, it is rather a difficult duty to perform. "Not at all," says some one; "it only means the opening of the window." If that were all, too much fuss has been made regarding ventilation. Opening of windows without special precautions causes draughts; draughts mean danger to patient, if not, indeed, actual mischief. Suppose that the temperature of the room has been maintained at 65 degs. Fahr., and that the temperature of the outside air be about 30 degs. Fahr., the air—being so many degrees colder—will rush in by the opened window as does a torrent of cold water, with a quickened velocity, because of the difference of the two temperatures. This will become more apparent to the reader later. There are, however, ways by which safe ventilation may be obtained by means of the window, which will be discussed in due course.

So likewise is the maintenance of a proper temperature in a sick-room of great importance. A routine temperature, say 60-65 degs. Fahr., is not suitable for all classes of diseases. A room temperature suitable for a convalescent who cannot part safely with much body heat would not be grateful to one suffering from high fever. In like manner a comparatively dry atmosphere would be less suitable to a "croupy" patient than a humid one.

These general considerations are set down to in-

dicate how much less simple than is usually thought such points are.

THE NURSERY.

There was a time when any odd room in the house was thought good enough for the daily life of the little ones. Such a time is now, fortunately for the children, nearly over. The nursery ought, indeed, to be one of the best, one of the largest, one of the brightest rooms in the whole house, situated, perhaps preferably, in the top of the house, because very often there the light is best and most sunlight is to be obtained. After appropriate feeding, probably the next most important thing which is conducive to healthy child-life is abundance of light and sunlight. Like the plant deprived of sunlight which does not develop the chlorophyll—the green colouring matter—in its leaves, so the child grows up pale and sickly-looking; and not only sickly-looking, but actually in depreciated health. The Italian proverb, "Where the sunlight does not go, the doctor does," is very true; and the light seems as necessary for the proper development of the red colouring matter of the blood of the child as for the green colouring matter of the leaf of the plant.

In addition to the best light, let there be free elbow-room. The animal life of the young is considerable. Romping is as natural and as necessary as eating and drinking, and, while confinement is irksome to all, it is much more so to the child.

Of equal importance to the two foregoing is the temperature of the nursery. Children are like sensitive thermometers: their bodies register a falling temperature nearly as quickly as do these instruments. Parting

with their body heat rapidly, they are extremely susceptible to outside frigifactive influences. Much harm has been produced from ignorance on this point, and many children have received fatal illnesses from mistaken notions on the part of parents and nurses in regard to the means necessary to make them hardy.

Well lighted, large spaced, appropriately heated, let the nursery be, and the children will thrive into vigorous health.

CHAPTER V.

THE HOUSE—SANITARY CONVENIENCES—LIGHTING AND HEATING—VENTILATION.

In every house which forms a connection with a public system of sewerage there must be conveniences for carrying off the "soil" and waste water. Where a public disposal system does not exist, facilities must equally be provided, but these, to some extent, may differ in character from the former. The waste water occasioned by washing, personal and domestic, and by culinary operations, together with the rain water which falls from the house tops (when it is not preserved), must be carried off by suitable pipes. The pipes which come from every fitting of this class ought to be united in a main waste-water pipe, which should reach from a point above the eaves of the house to a point close to the level of the ground. It is extended above the eaves to enable a current of air to pass through it, and so effect ventilation, and it opens below over a grated "gully," which is connected with the house drain, and is trapped. The pipes which form the waste-water system come from baths, lavatories, and kitchen sinks.

There must also be provision for carrying off the excretory products, or "soil" as it is termed, of the inmates. All of the pipes coming from fittings of this class ought to unite in a separate main pipe or "soil-pipe,"

which should also extend from above the eaves to a point below the ground-level, where it enters the house drain through a "trap"; and the house drain, in its turn, opens into the street sewer. These main pipes are attached to the outside of the outer walls of the house.

If the "fittings" of a house consisted simply of an unbroken continuity of pipes, foul-smelling gases, etc., would find their way back into the house and produce

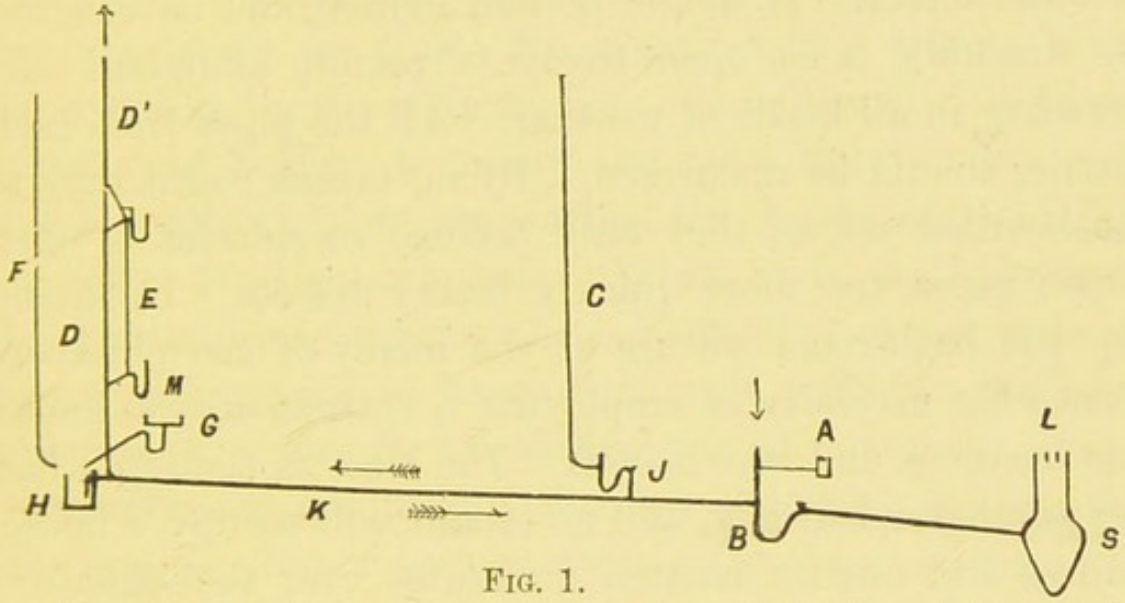


FIG. 1.

A, gully yard trap; B, trap on house drain; C, rain-conductor, trapped at J; D, soil-pipe; D', upper part of soil-stack, as ventilator; E, ventilating pipe of traps of closets M, and one above; F, waste-pipe; G, kitchen sink, opening into H; H, gully trap; K, house drain; L, ventilating grating over sewer; S, sewer. The arrows, on top of B and D, indicate direction of air current, and between K and B, of sewage current from house to sewer.

ill-health and disease. To prevent such a contingency, "traps," as they are called, are placed at each "fitting," whether it be water-closet, bath, kitchen sink, lavatory, or house drain. A trap in its simplest form consists of a bend in a pipe in which water will constantly lie. The water acts as a "seal" or "trap" against the passage backwards of foul products. An essential feature of an efficient trap is a ventilating branch, which keeps the water of the trap "sweet," and prevents it being emptied by "siphoning." These points will be discussed in detail,

later. The object of all traps is to completely cut off the atmosphere of the house drain and sewer from the house interior. The preceding diagram exhibits the points mentioned.

THE BATH-ROOM.

This apartment ought to be roomy, as not infrequently it lodges, in addition to the bath and wash-hand basin, a water-closet. It should be well lighted, and its window, or windows, must open freely to permit abundant air-flushing in all kinds of weather. All the pipes from each fitting should be uncovered. By no means ought they to be boarded up, as they only become receptacles of dirt. Open pipes, too, more quickly betray defects. In fitting up the bath-room we are at the mercy of the plumber; hence the necessity of employing a craftsman who knows his business, and who does it. The time is coming when no purchaser will buy, and no tenant will occupy, a house, unless and until a written guarantee over the signature of a sanitary official is provided, which will indicate that the property is in perfect sanitary condition.

Where cases of infective fevers are to be nursed at home, it is essential that the room to be occupied by the patient should be in the near vicinity of the bath-room, in order that infective materials may safely be disposed of.

In lying-in cases, on the other hand, unless the bath-room be known to be sanitarily perfect, the further the room in which the patient lies is from the bath-room the better and safer, for experience has amply proved the causal relationship of insanitation and so-called "puerperal" fever.

LIGHTING AND HEATING.

In cities, particularly in winter, it is almost impossible to obtain sufficient light in living-rooms. This is one of the penalties of civilisation, and is caused by imperfect combustion of coal in household fires. This produces a smoke-laden atmosphere, with resulting fogs. Inadequacy of light, too, is often due to too close building of houses and streets. Economic reasons are chiefly, in more recent days, to blame for this. No remedies of a simple kind can overtake these contingencies. Abundance of light is essential to health; therefore the more lightly curtained and blinded windows are during the hours of daylight the better for the occupants. While it is probably true that sunlight may destroy the colours of a carpet, it is of greater importance to know that it is probably the best provision of nature for the destruction of microbes.

Apartments are usually warmed either by (1) fires in open grates, now of various forms; (2) closed stoves; (3) gas fires; or (4) steam or hot-water pipes. They are all intended to protect the inmates against variable outside temperatures, and to preserve the walls of apartments against damp. The season of the year has only a general determining influence upon the amount of heat to be artificially supplied in our rooms. The need for artificial heat should always depend upon the difference of temperature at any given time, the determining factor being our sensations.

VENTILATION.

Ventilation is of the utmost importance. To ventilate a room properly means something more than the mere opening of a window. Scientific ventilation aims to

achieve two objects, viz. (1) to introduce a current of fresh air to replace the foul air at such a rate of movement as will not operate prejudicially upon the occupants of a confined space, and (2) to introduce it in such an amount as will satisfy the physiological requirements of the occupants. The unchanged air of a room, or of a badly ventilated room, in other words, becomes odorous. We use the words "close," "stuffy," or "foul," to denote this characteristic odour, which is due to gaseous and other products given off from the mouth, body, and skin of the occupants. Ventilation becomes increasingly difficult the more confined the space is; hence a small apartment is not so capable of safe ventilation as a large one. In an ordinary room where no special provision exists for ventilation, the doors and windows act as inlets of fresh air, and the chimney, where a live fire is burning in the grate, as the outlet. Of this, however, we will treat more fully in another chapter.

CHAPTER VI.

AIR IN RELATION TO HEALTH—ITS COMPOSITION AND COMMON IMPURITIES—CUBIC AND SUPERFICIAL SPACE.

AIR is one of the prime necessities of life. Without it, animal and vegetable life could not exist, and combustion could not go on either in its chemical or physical aspects. All animals, whether they live in the ocean of air which surrounds the planet, or in the ocean of water which encompasses the land of which it is composed, demand air in one form or another for their existence. All animals may be divided into two main classes, viz. those which inhale air *directly* from the atmosphere, and those which inhale air *indirectly*. To the latter class belong the myriads of animals which live in water. They obtain their supply from the air which is dissolved in the water; consequently their lives depend upon the efficient aeration of that fluid. A simple experiment with fish in a jar will demonstrate this.

We live at the bottom of an ocean of air. If in imagination we picture ourselves living at the bottom of the sea, where all around is water, we will be better able to estimate our position on the earth, where all around is air. Air, like water, is a fluid, and in several respects obeys the same laws. It possesses weight and

elasticity, and is capable of contraction and expansion by cold and heat. By our senses we can easily perceive the weight of water—not so with air. But the latter, like the former, may be weighed in a balance. A cubic foot of dry air at 32 deg. Fahr., and at 30 in. of barometric pressure, weighs 566·85 grains; a similar bulk of water, 61¼ lbs. If it is desired to measure the weight of the atmosphere on a large scale, that is effected by means of the barometer (Gr. *baros*—weight, and *metron*—a measure), or the weight-measure applied to air. When, for instance, the mercury in the barometer at the sea-level stands at 30 in. on the scale, a certain atmospheric weight or pressure is sustained, viz. 14·7 lbs. (usually called 15 lbs.) per square inch; but if a hill about 2000 ft. in height is ascended, the mercury will now be found to stand at about 28 in.; and the higher the ascent the greater the fall of the mercury becomes, hence the less pressure upon the body-surface. The reason for this is simple. As we ascend, the weight of the atmosphere becomes less, and, in consequence, presses with less force on the mercurial column. Hence it is, that if we could ascend three miles above sea-level, the barometric reading would be found to be but little more than one-half of that at sea-level; or, to a height of five miles—about the height of the highest Himalayan peaks—to a little more than one-quarter of the sea-level reading. Fig. 2 illustrates this.

Atmospheric pressure—which varies from day to day and often from hour to hour—has a determinate influence on the health of the people. It has a direct influence on the "fiery" condition of coal mines; explosions occur more frequently when the pressure is great than when it is light, because the gases in the coal are, as it were, forcibly

squeezed out. It is directly associated, also, with weather changes.

Air also possesses elasticity. If a thin glass globe

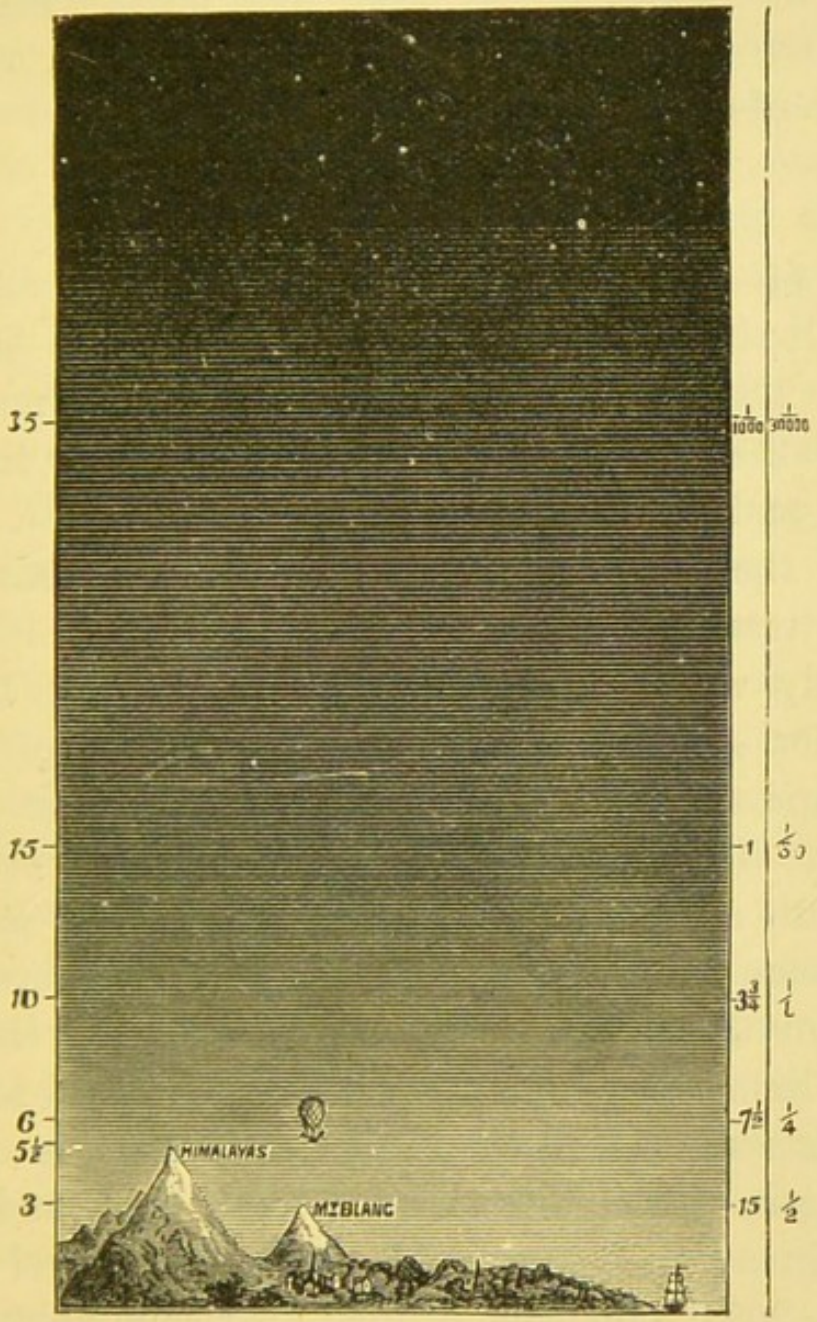


FIG. 2.

The figures on the right of the diagram represent the readings of the barometer in inches, those on the left the height in miles.

be filled with air at 40 deg. Fahr., and sealed, and the temperature then raised to 100 deg. Fahr., the globe would be shivered into pieces. This is due to expansion

of the contained air. Conversely, air may be compressed into smaller bulk; indeed, within recent years it has been liquefied so that it may be poured from one vessel to another like water or any other fluid body. The usefulness of the aneroid barometer depends upon this phenomenon of expansion and contraction of air.

COMPOSITION OF AIR.

Pure air consists of a mechanical mixture of certain gases. It is not a chemical mixture. The difference between the two is very distinct. In a mechanical mixture the component parts retain their individual identity, and do not form new compounds. In a chemical mixture the constituent parts lose their identity, and become transformed into new compounds. However intimately we grind together salt and sugar, they will remain for all time as a mechanical mixture of salt and sugar; and the same would happen if they were dissolved in water. If, on the other hand, we put some clear lime-water into a bottle, and breathe into it, the water will now become milky, owing to a new substance having been formed by the union of the carbonic acid of the breath and the lime-water. This would be a chemical mixture.

The gases of which air, in its purest form, is composed are oxygen, ozone, nitrogen, carbonic acid, and watery vapour in a gaseous form. In 1000 volumes of such air oxygen = 209·6 + nitrogen = 790·0 + carbonic acid gas ·4 = 1000. To these, recent chemical investigation has added argon, helium, neon, and crypton gases, which exist in the air, however, in very minute proportions. The amounts of watery vapour and ozone are very variable. Volumes may be called pounds, ounces, gallons, or any other measure or weight, since these proportions are

relative in any amount in any measure or weight. By shifting the decimal point one place to the left, percentages are obtained. Oxygen is the vital constituent of air. By it combustion in any form is sustained, and it is the source by which the blood in the lungs is purified. The act of breathing consists essentially of inspiration, *i.e.* the taking-in of air, and of expiration, *i.e.* the out-putting of air. In the former we inhale fresh air, in the latter we exhale foul air. The composition of expired air is therefore very different from that of fresh air. In 1000 volumes of it, oxygen = 169·2 + nitrogen = 790·4 + carbonic acid gas = 40·4; together with watery vapour and organic matter. The nitrogen serves the useful purpose of diluting the oxygen for the needs of the body. It is an important agent, also, in plant nourishment, being, in thunderstorms, converted into such a form as to enable plants to assimilate it. Moreover, certain plants—those of the leguminous order—such as the bean, pea, and others, have, by means of certain nodules on their roots which contain microbes, the power of assimilating nitrogen directly from the atmosphere. Carbonic acid gas may be deemed, so far as man is concerned, a normal adulterant or impurity of air, but it also serves a useful purpose as plant-food, as during sunlight the green colouring matter of plants splits it up, absorbs the carbon, and liberates the oxygen. Probably, therefore, for plants it is an essential atmospheric constituent.

IMPURITIES OF AIR.

These may be divided into two main classes, viz. (1) those that are particulate, and (2) those that are gaseous The cause which chiefly determines the amount of both

is the congregation of persons in a limited area. In populous places, the former class mainly consists of unconsumed particles of coal-soot, débris from the tear and wear of the bodies of men and animals, of the streets, and from industrial operations, of both inorganic and organic composition; and micro-organisms. The second class is composed chiefly of the gaseous products of combustion and of chemical works—these being mainly compounds of ammonia and sulphur of different chemical compositions. Hundreds of thousands of tons of these gases are computed to be given off annually into the atmospheres of large cities. Carbonic acid gas is also largely increased in these circumstances. In foggy weather, in Manchester, London, or Glasgow, this gas may be increased from four to seven parts per 10,000 of air. The air of a populous place is, therefore, notably more impure than that of the open country or the sea. In like manner the air of an occupied room becomes impure by increase of carbonic acid gas, watery vapour, and organic matter. In schools, for example, this gas may be found present from five to ten times, and organic matter twenty times more plentifully than in pure air.

SPACE IN REFERENCE TO AIR SUPPLY.

By superficial space is meant space multiplied into two dimensions, viz. the length by the breadth; by cubic space, into three dimensions, viz. length by breadth by height, or thickness. Feet multiplied by feet equals square feet, and feet × feet × feet equals cubic feet. Both measurements are of great importance in reference to air supply, the one as much as the other. Superficial space in reference to a room is often called floor-space or floor-

age. The cubic space of a room is obtained by multiplying the length by the breadth, and the product by the height. In considering the dimensions of any room in reference to ventilation, regard must be had to each dimension. This is true of rooms whether occupied by the healthy or sick In the latter case, however, each dimension of space must be increased, and particularly so in infectious hospitals, where the minimum amount of superficial space per patient ought to be 144 square feet, and of cubic space, 2000 feet.

CHAPTER VII.

VENTILATION—ITS PRINCIPLES—DETECTION OF AIR IMPURITIES.

We frequently speak of an empty room, but, in relation to ventilation, a room is never empty, since all its available space is filled with air. Whether its total capacity is filled with air or not will depend upon whether or not part of its air space is occupied by solid substances, such as solid articles of furniture; and since no two portions of matter can occupy the same space at the same time the solid article takes up its own bulk of air space. It is important that this simple fact should not be forgotten. Ventilation begins to have importance when a given column or body of air, bounded on four sides by walls, the openings in which bear but small proportions to the total superficies so bounded, requires to be more or less frequently changed in a given period of time. In the open, ventilation goes on unimpeded. It is only when artificial obstacles to the free interchange of currents of air are imposed that means must be devised to overcome the difficulty. It is of importance that the chimney of a room should "draw" well, else the up-draught will not be sufficient to carry off the fire-smoke; hence it will cause a smoky room. Indeed, smoky fireplaces are not infrequently due to insufficient supply of air to the fire. How much more important, then, is the question when the

processes of combustion within the body require attention. To sustain life we must breathe. An average adult male person inspires 30·5 cubic inches of air at each breath, and he inspires about seventeen times per minute. A simple calculation will, therefore, enable us to arrive at the total amount of air used in twenty-four hours, viz. $30{\cdot}5 \times 17 \times 60 \times 24 = 746{,}640$ cubic inches of air, or 432 cubic feet. Women and children inspire less than the adult male. Hence, however insignificant in percentage amount any given impurity in the air may appear, in the light of the total daily requirement it assumes considerable importance.

In an inhabited room the chief causes of impurification of its atmosphere are (1) its human occupants, and (2) artificial lights. Both need oxygen for their sustenance. The impurities from the human being proceed from the mouth, body, and skin, and from artificial lights, from the combustion of the lighting medium, gas or oil. As has been shown, the amount of carbonic acid gas given off from the lungs is 101 times greater than that found in the same volume of pure air, and, in addition, expired air contains organic débris from the mouth in a state of incipient putrefaction. Both are hurtful to health, the latter probably more so than the former, but riddance of both is at the same time desirable and necessary for health. The odour imparted to an impure atmosphere is solely due to this organic matter, and not to the carbonic acid gas, but the amount of the latter in any atmosphere is approximately a measure of that of the former.

A very simple experiment will demonstrate the need for a supply of fresh air to support combustion. Place a lighted candle on a soup plate, partly filled with water, and cover the candle with a thin glass bell-jar. The candle

will burn only as long as there is air present in the jar, and will go out in a few seconds. In imagination, substitute for the candle a mouse or a man, and for the bell-jar a sealed glass case or an air-tight room, and the result will be extinction of the light of life. The Black Hole of Calcutta and the steamer *Londonderry* afford the requisite proof. Between the condition of no ventilation and one where it is free and faultless we must place our living-rooms and public buildings. Bearing in mind that the problem of ventilation consists of supplying in a given space to a given number of persons in a given time an adequate supply of fresh air, without draught, the difficulty of solution begins here. Physiological requirements indicate 3000 cubic feet of pure air per hour as the supply to be aimed at, and the rate of movement of the supplied air must not exceed, for delicate persons, $1\frac{1}{2}$ to 2 feet, and for average persons $2\frac{1}{2}$ to 3 feet per second, unless the air be warmed, in which case the velocity may be raised from 5 to 8 feet per second. This is the crux of the problem, and hence it is that the cubic space per person assumes great importance. Suppose two rooms, each of 1000 cubic feet capacity, be occupied by one and by four adults respectively, a little calculation upon the foregoing data would show that, means of ventilation being provided, the necessary amount of air could be for the one person supplied at a velocity of less than one foot (·8) per second, but that for the four persons the needed supply of air would require to have a velocity of $3\frac{1}{3}$ feet per second; in the former case, therefore, the air would enter without draught, but in the latter it would be perceived as a draught, and would be, therefore, harmful.

The average adult gives off, in ordinary circumstances, at least ·6 of a cubic foot of carbonic acid gas (CO_2) per

hour, or 14·4 cubic feet per twenty-four hours. It is an odourless gas. As has been shown, CO_2 amounts to ·04 per cent, or four parts per 10,000 of pure air. This is called original or "initial" impurity, because this percentage is found in the purest air. The disagreeable odour imparted to an imperfectly ventilated room is due to the organic matter from the bodies of the occupants. The proportion of CO_2 in a room given off by respiration is called the "respiratory" impurity, and is that amount in excess of ·04 per cent. (When artificial lights are burning, as at night, they also contribute their share of this gas.) The total impurity in the air of a room is therefore made up of the CO_2 found in the air normally, and of the CO_2 from the bodies of the occupants and from artificial lighting; or, in other words, the "initial" plus the "respiratory" impurity equal the total impurity. When the proportion of CO_2 from the lungs is less than ·02 per cent no disagreeable odour is perceived; above that proportion odours become perceptible; thus ·04 per cent gives a "stuffy" odour, ·06 per cent an offensive odour, and ·08 per cent a foul, sickening odour. Beyond this the sense of smell fails to distinguish. In the presence of the latter proportions flushings, faintness, headache, or even sickness affect the occupants. We, therefore, aim to have in our rooms not more than ·06 per cent of this gas (CO_2), of which ·04 per cent is "initial," and ·02 per cent "respiratory" CO_2.

DETECTION OF IMPURITIES IN AIR.

The best ordinary test for these is the sense of smell, exercised on entering the room from the open air. In so far, then, as the odour of a room is in some measure an

approximate test of the amount of CO_2 present, the test is valuable. To estimate the amount by chemically accurate methods is beyond our present object. But there are two comparatively easy and approximately correct modes of doing so, called the methods of Angus Smith and of Lunge-Zeckendorff. The former consists of a series of stoppered bottles, measuring respectively $20\frac{1}{2}$, $10\frac{1}{2}$, 8, and $6\frac{1}{2}$ ounces. The chemical substance to be used is a table-spoonful ($\frac{1}{2}$ ounce) of clear lime-water. The test is used as follows: Into the $10\frac{1}{2}$ ounce bottle put $\frac{1}{2}$ ounce of lime-water, stopper, and shake contents vigorously for a minute. Should the clear liquid have become turbid, the sample of air contains more than ·06 per cent of CO_2; if no turbidity results, it does not contain more than this proportion. The following figures will guide to the use of the other bottles :—

Size of bottle in ounces.	No precipitate. CO_2 per cent.
$20\frac{1}{2}$	·03
$10\frac{1}{2}$	·06
8	·08
$6\frac{1}{2}$	·10

The Lunge-Zeckendorff method requires certain chemical knowledge, but is, in practice, owing to a table of instructions which is provided by the makers with the apparatus, almost mechanical. The apparatus consists (1) of a bottle of certain cubic capacity, stoppered by an india-rubber cork perforated in two holes through which pass two glass tubes, one of which is connected with a rubber-ball of definite capacity by means of rubber-tubing; and (2) a "standard" solution of carbonate of soda, coloured pink, with an "indicator" called "phenolphthalein." To use the apparatus, a definite quantity of the prepared

solution is put into the bottle, its attachments are fixed, and the rubber-ball is compressed and released alternately so as to slowly force the air through the solution in the bottle, shaking the contents after each ballful, until the pink colour practically disappears. Reference to a given table shows from the number of ballfuls used the percentage amount of CO_2 in the air examined. Our experience of the apparatus warrants us in saying that it is a fairly reliable approximate guide to the atmospheric CO_2 present. This apparatus, composed of the foregoing constituent parts, may be purchased, along with the necessary chemical solutions, and with it a table of instructions is given.

CHAPTER VIII.

METHODS OF VENTILATION APPLIED TO ROOMS, LARGE BUILDINGS, AND HOSPITAL WARDS.

ALL schemes of ventilation that have yet been, or may yet be advanced are separable into two main divisions, depending on the motive power which originates them. The one division has its motive power in the ordinary forces of nature, the other depends on some form of artificial mechanical aid. The former is known as *natural* ventilation, the latter as *artificial* or mechanical ventilation. Natural ventilation is effected (1) by the law of the diffusion of gases, and (2) by the motion which is set up between two columns or bodies of air of different temperatures and pressure. By the former law, we find that gases of different densities (or weight) will eventually mix uniformly, even against the law of gravity; hence the uniformity of composition of the atmosphere; and practical evidence of the latter is afforded by the motion of the atmosphere which we call wind, or by the ascension of smoke in the chimney. Gases expand by heat and contract by cold, and the amount of expansion of a gas for every degree of increase of temperature is at once definite and determinable. For every increase of temperature of 1 deg. Cent. a gas expands $\frac{1}{273}$ part of its volume, and for 1 deg. Fahr. above 32 deg. $\frac{1}{491}$ part; or, expressed in decimal fractions,

for every degree Cent. the volume of a gas will become 1 + ·00366, and for every degree Fahr. 1 + ·002. As a gas expands, its increase of bulk demands more space, and it causes the air which surrounds it to move. Varying degrees of pressure, too, cause air movements. When the wind blows across a chimney-top it causes a partial vacuum in the chimney shaft, and a consequent upward movement in the air of the lower part of the shaft. This action is well illustrated in the ordinary spray apparatus. The steam which issues from the horizontal tube creates a partial vacuum in the perpendicular tube, and causes the medicated or other fluid to rise and become mixed with the steam.

MECHANICAL VENTILATION.

All schemes of this class are divisible into two subdivisions, viz. (1) those where the fresh or pure air is forced into a building under pressure—hence called the propulsion or *plenum* method, and (2) those where the foul air is drawn out—known as the extraction or *vacuum* method. Fig. 3 exemplifies natural ventilation, and air motion induced by unequal temperatures.

As the plenum and vacuum methods will be discussed later, the problem of ventilation of a sick-room may now be considered.

In the average ordinary room the only available means of ventilation are (1) the door, (2) window, and (3) fireplace. With a fire in the room, the two former act as inlets, the last as outlet, extracting the foul air, as in the following figure. Through a small grate, from three to five cubic feet of air per second will pass, while through the ordinary grate, from five to eight cubic feet; that is to say, in the former from

10,800 to 18,000 cubic feet per hour, and in the latter from 18,000 to 28,800 cubic feet in the same time. To

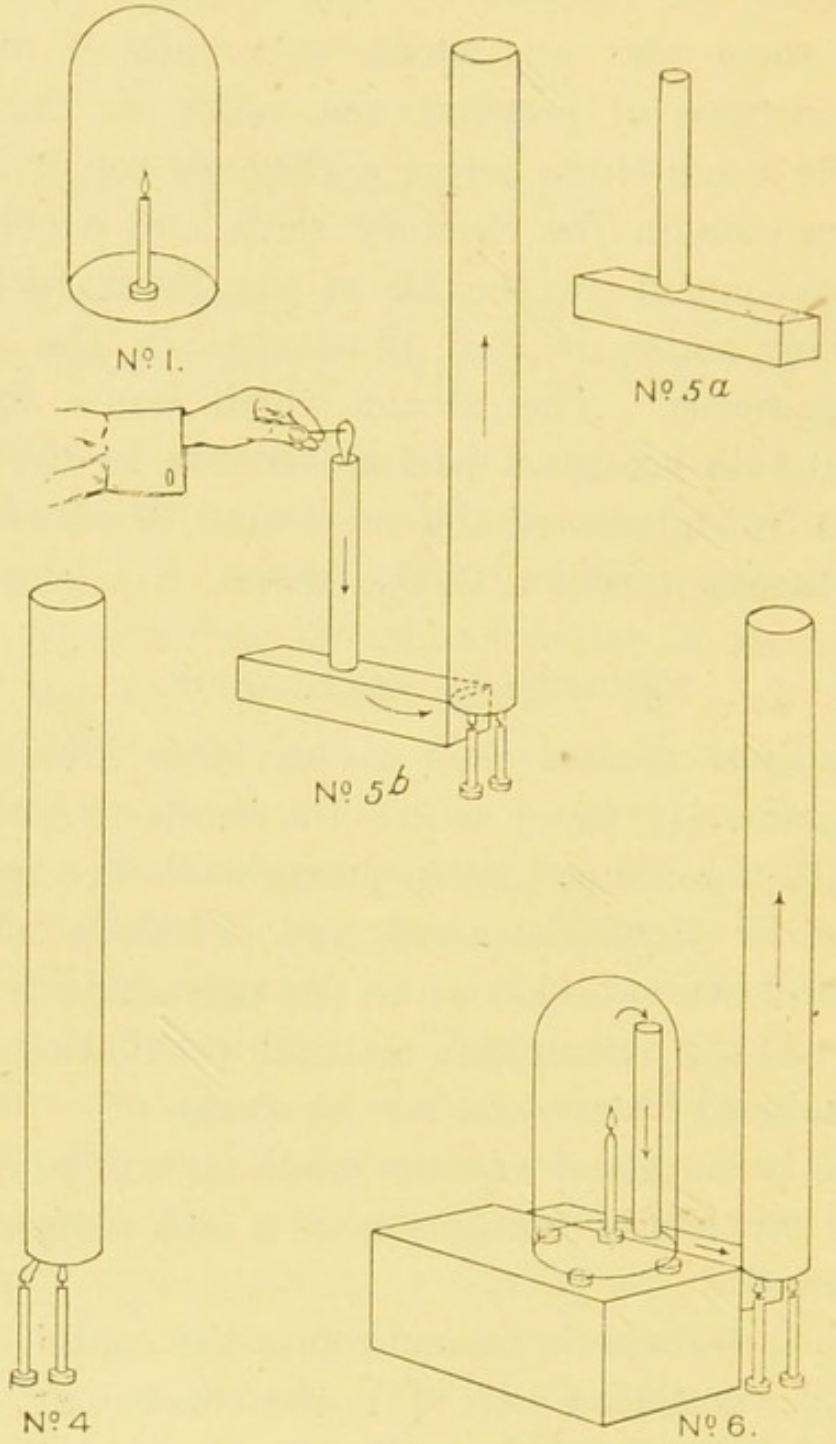


FIG. 3.—Represents simple apparatus by which the student may experiment to prove the principles of ventilation by extraction or vacuum at very small cost.

The whole apparatus consists of a bell-jar, cardboard funnels varnished, and an air-tight cardboard box into which is fitted a small funnel as at No. 5 A, and out of the top of one end of which a crescent opening is cut. *First Experiment.*—To prove that combustion or respiration ceases when fresh-air supply is cut off. Under a bell-jar (No. 1), placed in a shallow vessel containing a little water, place a lighted candle. The candle goes out as soon as the oxygen

of the contained air is used up. *Second Experiment.*—Place the bell-jar on a flat surface and raise it by placing three pennies under it, at equidistant points. The re-lighted candle again quickly goes out, for the reason that no current of air is established. *Third Experiment.*—Make a cardboard funnel about two feet long as at No. 4. Varnish it to make it air-tight. Place one candle, lighted, under the funnel; the heated air rises, and a current of air is set up round the bottom of the tube, which may be demonstrated by placing a second lighted candle just outside the edge of the funnel, when the flame will be drawn into the lumen of the tube without burning the funnel. *Fourth Experiment.*—Place No. 4 and No. 5 A together, as at No. 5 B, the long funnel just covering the crescentic opening in the box. Place the candles as in No. 4. A current of air will immediately be set up from the small funnel through the box and up the large funnel. This current may be visibly demonstrated by holding a lighted taper or smoking brown paper over the mouth of the small funnel. *Fifth Experiment.*—Place the bell-jar and other parts of the apparatus together as in No. 6. Light one or more candles under bell-jar, when they will be found to burn as long as they will last, showing that the products of combustion are carried away by the current set up in the direction of the arrows, the motive power being the heated air in the long funnel. This roughly demonstrates the mode of ventilation of the House of Commons, if for the members of Parliament you substitute candles, for the House itself the bell-jar, for the foul-air shaft the cardboard box and small funnel, and for the clock tower and furnace the long funnel and the lighted candles at its base.

meet this, air rushes in from crevices around windows and doors and through flooring-joints. The atmosphere of a room is practically divisible into two different layers, the lower reaching from the floor to the level of the artificial lights, and the upper from the lights to the ceiling. By reason of the door and window currents, the coldest parts of a room are in lines drawn in straight paths between these points and the fire-place. The lower stratum is, therefore, some degrees colder than the upper, and is often too well ventilated—draughty—while the upper is practically unventilated unless by the diffusion of gases. In a room without a fire the body-heat of the occupants determines the same currents, but at a less rate of motion; and upon occasion, in summer, in basement flats, the chimney-flue, with no fire in the grate, may even act as an inlet of air. The general principle always to be kept in mind is, that a colder body of air always moves in the direction of a warmer, and with a degree of velocity corresponding to the relative difference of temperature; the greater the difference in temperature the higher the velocity.

Ventilation of the sick-room is one of the most important duties of the nurse, and she ought to be able to exercise some ingenuity to effect this object. The first point to consider is the position of the bed of the patient relative to the window, door, and fireplace. If the plan of the room permit, the bed ought not to be placed in a direct line between door, or window, and fireplace. It ought to be in the leeway of both, outside of direct air-currents. If this, however, cannot be avoided, direct

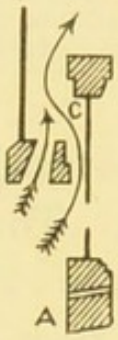


FIG. 4.

FIG. 5.

Section Plan of Window Frames.

A is block of wood at bottom of window; C is the upper part of lower sash; the long arrow shows the direction of air current, and the small arrow passes through a conical hole in lower part of upper sash—an addition sometimes made, but not suitable for town houses where air contains "blacks." By varying the size of block A, the size of interspace is regulated.

Fig. 5 shows another method of producing a like result. B is a metal plate affixed to upper part of window frame, which enables upper sash to be pulled down without top draught, and creates interspaces as in Fig. 4.

draughts must be prevented by the interposition of a screen or curtain. The ventilation of the room may be effected either fitfully, *i.e.* for brief periods every hour, or steadily and continuously throughout the day and night. Under the former plan, probably the simplest and safest way is to half open the door, pull down the upper window-sash for a distance the extent of which must be regulated by outside weather conditions, and cover this space by the blind drawn a few inches below the level of the opened sash, in order to break any

direct draught. Protect the bed by a screen. Leave the sash open for about five minutes at a time, and repeat from two to four times per hour. Any plan,

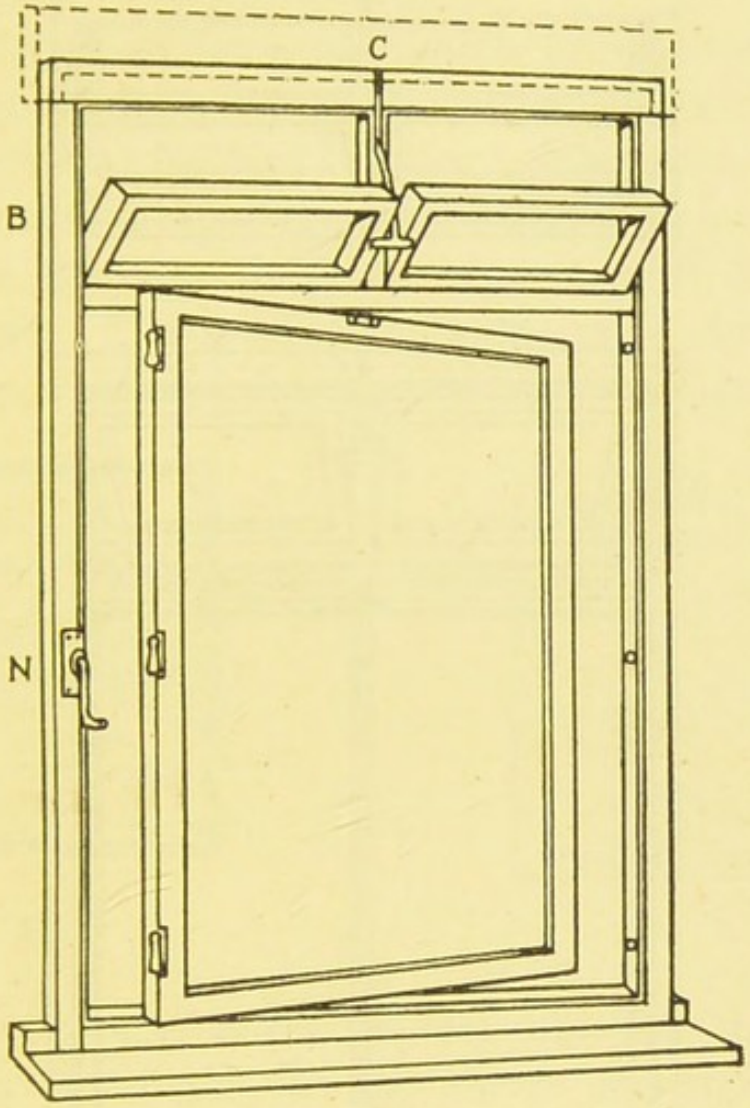


FIG. 6.—The Chaddock Window.

By turning the handle of the lever N, the louvre or hopper sash at top of window, B, A, is opened by the action of the rod C to any angle desired, and is fixed in position. The sash may be fitted as a hopper, as in A, Fig. 7, or as a louvre, as in B, B. By turning the lever handle still further, the lower sash of the window may be swung open, as in Fig. 6, when the room may be flushed with air; and by still further turning the lever, this sash may be swung into a position at right angles to the window-frame. The whole window may be closed weather-tight by reversing the movement of the lever-handle.

however, which would enable ventilation to go on continuously is obviously better. To this end various expedients have been suggested, which are usable in

ordinary sash windows. The plan of Hinckes-Bird is very simple and easily applied. It consists in placing

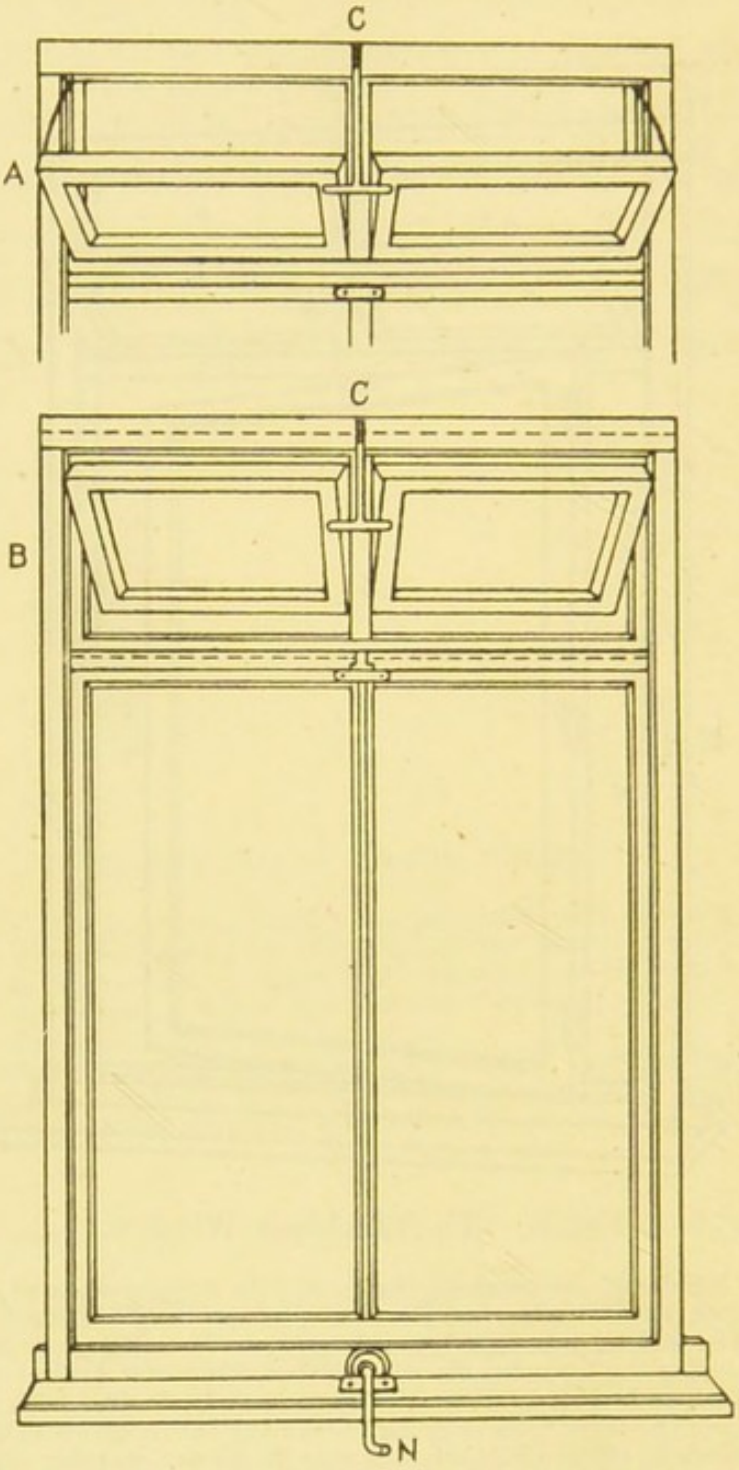


FIG. 7 (*see* FIG. 6 *for description*).

a block of wood, varying in thickness, on which the lower sash will rest, at the bottom of the window. This has the effect of separating the sashes at their junction,

and enables air to pass inwards between the sashes; the thicker or thinner the block of wood, the greater or smaller the interspace between the sashes. Figs. 4 and 5 illustrate the effect produced.

One of the best forms of window for institutions, such as hospitals, unions, hotels, etc., which has been devised recently, is the Chaddock window. The principle of the window is that all its parts are controlled under one single action, and, therefore, the degree of ventilation desired may be regulated. The opening and shutting of its sashes are worked by a wheel-lever, as seen at N in Figs. 6 and 7.

FIG. 8.

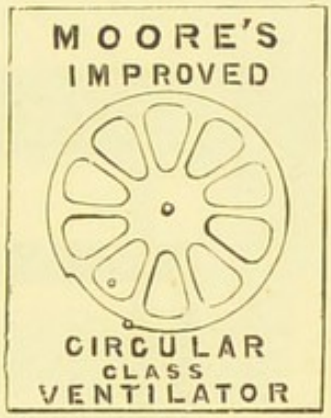


FIG. 9.

When this lever is turned in one direction, the effect is, first, to open gradually the top louvre or hopper sash to any degree required, and, by continuing the lever movement, second, to cause the larger lower sash to swing open on a central pivot. By the one movement, therefore, the amount of ventilating space opened is completely under control. From a careful examination of the window, its advantages would seem to be the following:—(*a*), the lever-controlling movement is easy to work; (*b*), all the opening-movements of sashes are regulated and controlled by the lever action; (*c*), the ventilation of any room can, therefore, be adjusted to suit different conditions of weather; (*d*),

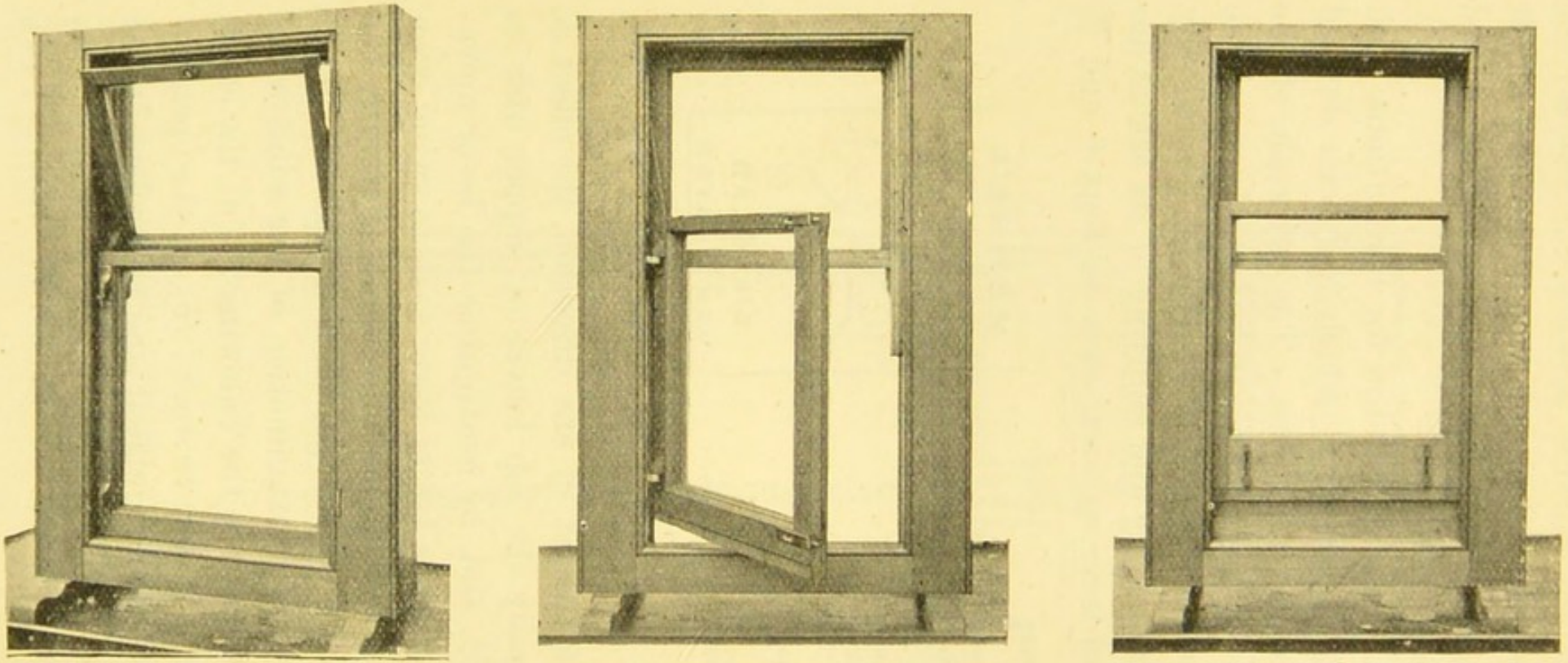


FIG. 10.—To show new methods of window ventilation suggested by the author.

The above are photos of four feet long working models for teaching purposes. Fig. A may be made to act as an ordinary sash window, with up-and-down movement; or the upper sash to act as a hopper, as shown in A; or the lower sash to act as a hinged window, as in B. This is effected by means of sunk movable hinges in side of window frame, the sockets of which are screwed into side of sash. By means of these two movements, therefore, differing degrees of room ventilation, according to weather, may be obtained, and besides the whole window may be cleaned by a servant from the interior of the apartment. C shows the author's modification of the Hinckes-Bird arrangement. In the latter system a series of blocks of different thickness is required to regulate the amount of inter-sash ventilation on account of weather. In the author's plan one block, which is always at hand, serves for all weathers. This is effected by counter-sinking into the lower frame of the lower sash a movable teak block, which may be lengthened or shortened by means of two screws working in brass slots. When this block is pushed "home" it is "flush" with the level of frame.

cleaning of the window is accomplished from the interior of the room without risk; and (*e*), the window parts are weather tight. Figs. 6 and 7 show the different positions of the sashes.

Very little expense and trouble may upon emergency simplify window ventilation. If, for example, Moore's louvre or circular glass ventilator were fitted into a

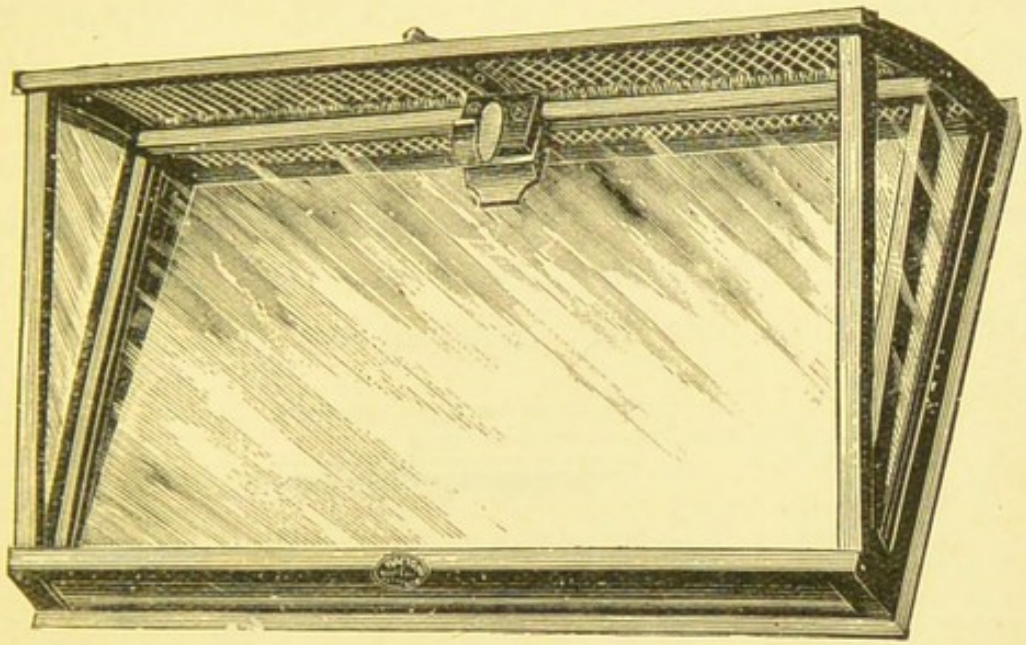


Fig. 11.—Hatton's Hopper Window Ventilator.

By means of the hinge, shown in upper part of diagram, the hopper may be pulled room-wards at will, thus regulating the amount of air that will pass inwards. The incoming air is screened of sooty particles, by the fine-meshed copper gauze, which by the action of a brush along the whole upper length of the hopper, as the hopper is moved, are brushed off. In this way the smoky air of a town is freed of "smuts."

window frame, draughtless ventilation may be effected (Figs. 8 and 9). The louvre ventilator may be opened according to necessity, and in like manner the circular, which in Fig. 9 is shown closed.

Another excellent plan is to substitute for the upper half of the window Hatton's hopper window ventilator, which not only prevents direct draught, but at the same time screens the air of particles—a desideratum in smoky cities (Fig. 11).

Various other modes have been suggested, such as double windows, perforated panes, and double-glazed panes, where the outer pane has a bottom gap and the inner an upper gap; but in smoky places the last two named are decidedly objectionable, because of the "smuts" accumulating in the interspaces, which cannot easily be cleaned.

CHAPTER IX.

VENTILATION—MODES APPLICABLE TO LIVING-ROOMS, LARGE BUILDINGS, AND HOSPITALS.

In addition to means of ventilation applicable to ordinary window fittings, we ought to be acquainted with special modes, so that we may intelligently know how to use them, when they are present. Of the special forms of

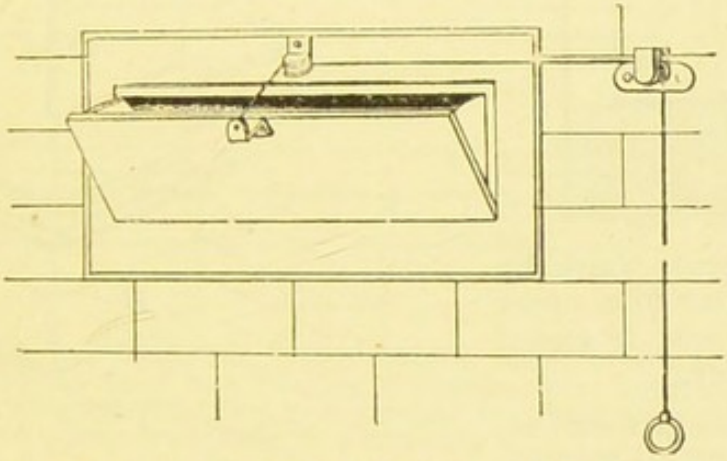


Fig. 12.—Sheringham Valve in position in wall.

ventilators, Sheringham's valve (Fig. 12), Hatton's screen valve, and Tobin's tube (Fig. 14), deserve some notice.

They are inserted into the outer wall of a room, so that one end communicates with the outer air and the other with the apartment. In the two first the admission of air may be regulated by closing or opening the valvular opening, and in the last by a screen in the throat of the tube. These serve as inlets of fresh air.

Ventilation is also effected into the chimney by valve openings which open into it close to the ceiling of the room. Arnott's, Boyle's, and Buchan's valve are some of these. The valves, made of mica, or silk, are so laid that

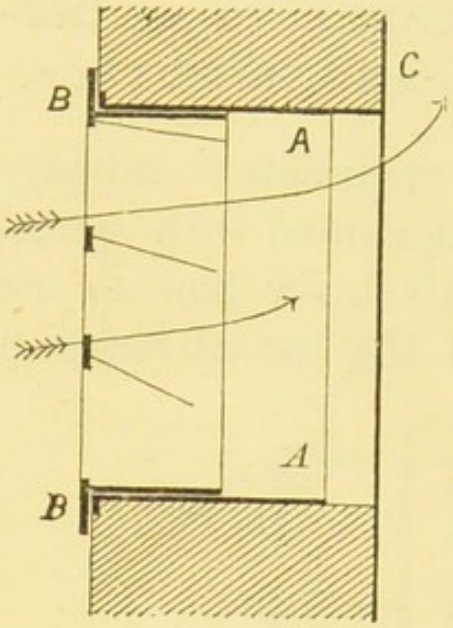


FIG. 13.—Chimney Valve, by which foul air from upper level of room is passed into chimney.

B B, inner surface of room-wall. A A, valve box; C, chimney. Arrows indicate direction of air current.

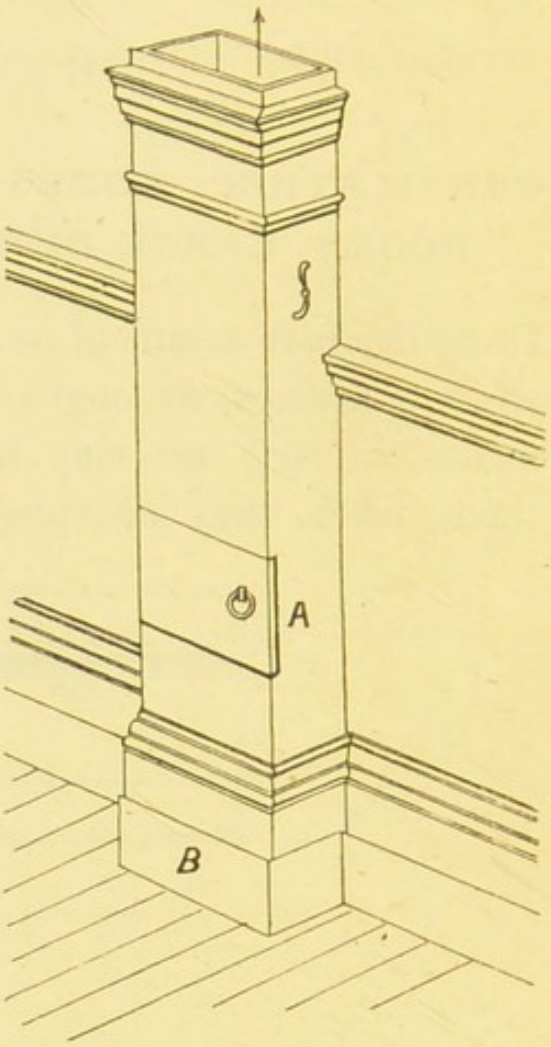


FIG. 14.—Tobin's Tube in position.

A represents a sliding door to permit air to enter at that level if wanted; *f*, handle for regulating amount of incoming air.

they only permit of the air passing from room to chimney. These act as outlets of foul air.

LARGE BUILDINGS AND HOSPITALS.

Until recent years most of the large buildings and the older hospitals of this and other countries were

singularly defective in means of ventilation. Nowadays, ventilation is rightly put in the forefront of the constructor's design. It may be said of any large scheme of ventilation that none is in the least likely to be successful which does not unite the problems of heating and ventilation. This combination enables larger quantities of air to be sent into a building in the same time, and with greater safety, since the air is warmed.

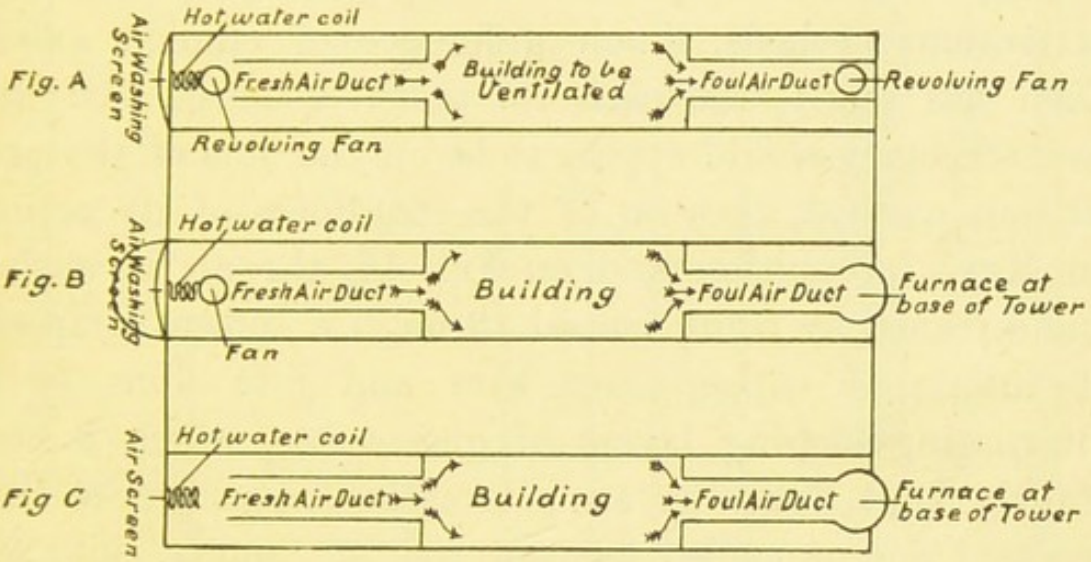


FIG. 15.

A, the air-propelling and extracting forces are fans, acting in direction of arrows; B, the air-propelling force is a fan, the extracting force a furnace at base of tower; C, the air-extracting force is a furnace, by which air is drawn through whole circuit, or it may be replaced by a revolving fan.

In towns and cities it is essential that such air should be screened of its sooty particles. Hence, to effect this, it is necessary to employ mechanical aids to ventilation — so-called artificial ventilation — whether it be by revolving fans, jets of water, or the expanding force of compressed air suddenly liberated.

Mechanically-aided ventilation schemes are (1) those where fresh air, washed and warmed, or warmed without washing, is propelled into buildings and the foul air driven out by special channels; or (2) those in which

the foul air is extracted, the fresh air entering to fill its place. In the former the motive power acts at the beginning of the air circuit, and in the latter at the end; and in the former the motive power must be some form of mechanical force, whereas in the latter it may be mechanical force—as a fan—or the extracting power of a fire or furnace. The diagrammatic figure on opposite page will assist the student.

Regarding the respective merits of the propulsion and extraction methods, much difference of opinion exists. Each has merit, and each its probable defect. Of the two, efficiency would appear to be on the side of the propulsion method, because of the steadiness of its action. In Key's propulsion system, Fig. 16, the air is washed and screened by being passed through a screen composed of interlaced copper-mesh wire and jute fibre, or of alternating sloping layers of glass-tubes, which is constantly kept damp by an automatic dripper; it is then warmed and propelled forward, free of "smuts," into the building. Our observations of this system, as carried out in the Victoria Infirmary and in various other large buildings, as Board Schools, in Glasgow, enable us to say that it provides (1) clean air, (2) evenly warmed air, and (3) a steady supply. The air is warmed in passing over and through steam coils of sufficient radiating surface to give all the heat required, and which may be regulated according to necessity. The same system can provide cooled air in hot weather by placing blocks of ice in the main fresh-air ducts. Closed windows—double if necessary—and double, or, if single, tight-fitting, doors, or swinging floor-to-ceiling wicket-doors, are requisite in this system, so that the circuit of air may be subjected to the minimum disturbance in its course. Indeed it may be said of both

systems, in order that they should work efficiently, that the nearer the building to be ventilated conforms to the conditions of a tight-fitting box with suitable openings,

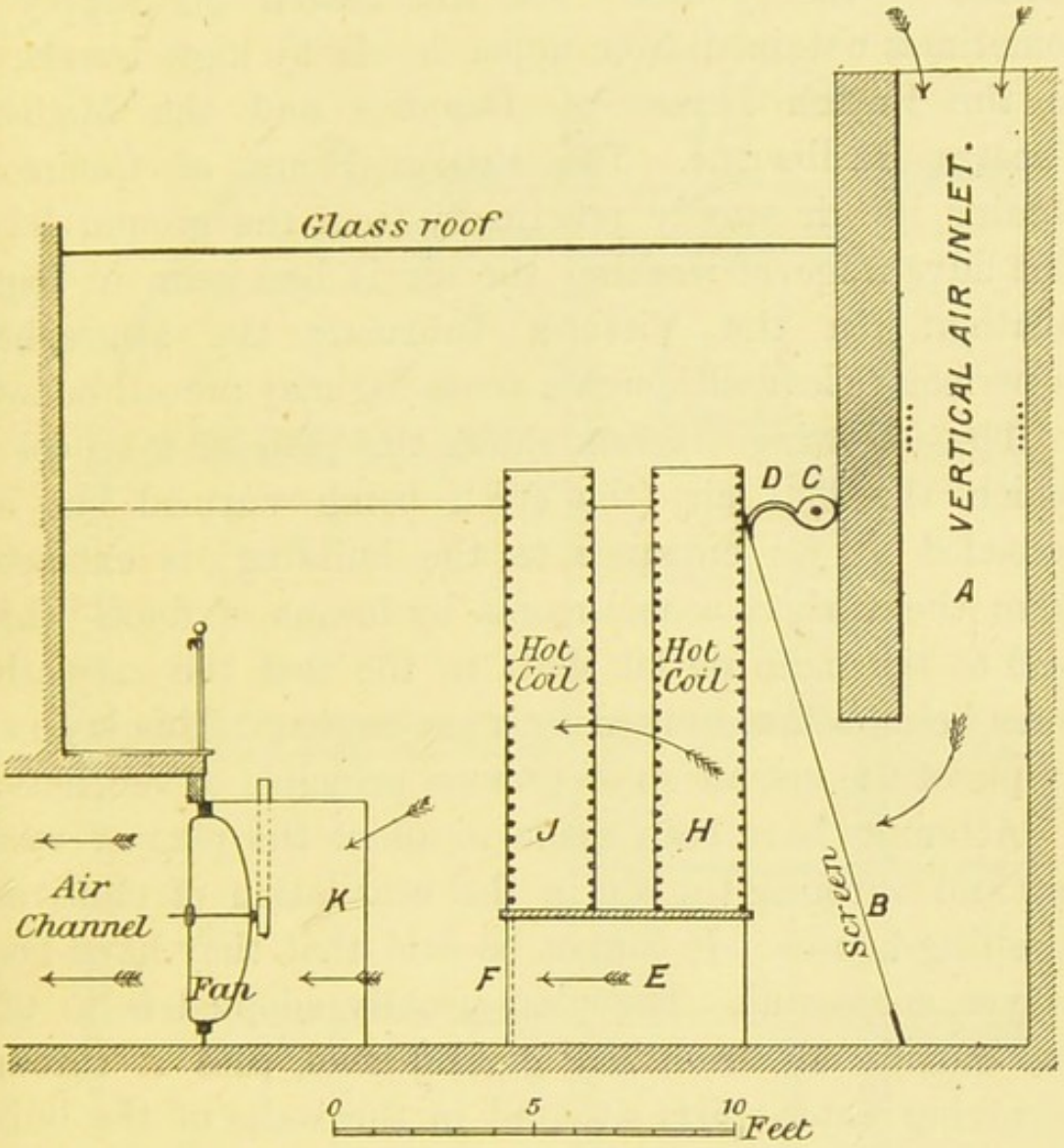


FIG. 16.—Arrangement for Washing and Warming Air in Plenum System.

A, air-inlet, into which a steam-coil is introduced to warm in-coming air and thus prevent freezing of water on screen; B, screen; C, D, section of water-trough and feed-pipe to wet fibres of screen; E, F, passage for air in warm weather; J, H, steam-coils, seen in section; K, fan channel. The arrows point the course of the air current.

the more thorough is the ventilation. Open windows and doors destroy, in great measure, the continuity of air current, and are the prime causes of failure and inefficiency.

The source of air supply in populous places is always a matter of importance where the air is not washed and screened. Air is always more foul the nearer to the surface of the ground. For this reason the supply is sometimes obtained from upper levels by high towers, as in the French House of Deputies and the Madison Theatre, Melbourne. The British House of Commons obtains its air supply practically from the ground-level. The advantage of washing the air is best seen in foggy weather. In the Victoria Infirmary the atmosphere is perfectly clear, although a dense fog may prevail outside.

The following diagram shows the plan of a school in which the foul air (the fresh being warmed but not screened at its entrance to the building) is extracted from the various school-rooms by means of ducts which lead to the main outlet shaft in the roof, the extracting force being a fan, worked by a gas-engine. This is an example of the *extraction* or *vacuum* principle of ventilation.

Attempts have been made to adopt the plan of washing and warming the air in the ventilation of clubs and dwelling-houses. It cannot be said that they have been, as yet, successful. The plan usually adopted is to take the outside air from the ground-level, pass it through revolving water-spirts situated in the walls of the building, then through and over hot-water coils, until it reaches the apartment through a grated opening at the top of an artificial dado. Such a plan is exposed to the attendant risks of frost.

Means have also been devised to supply living-rooms with warmed air by utilising the spent heat of the fire or stove. By means of a special duct either surrounding or in close proximity to the source of heat, the entering fresh air is warmed, and is passed into the room either

at the ceiling-level or close to the fireplace. Of these, Galton's stove, George's calorigen, Bond's thermohydric stove, and the Canadian school-stove may be taken as types.

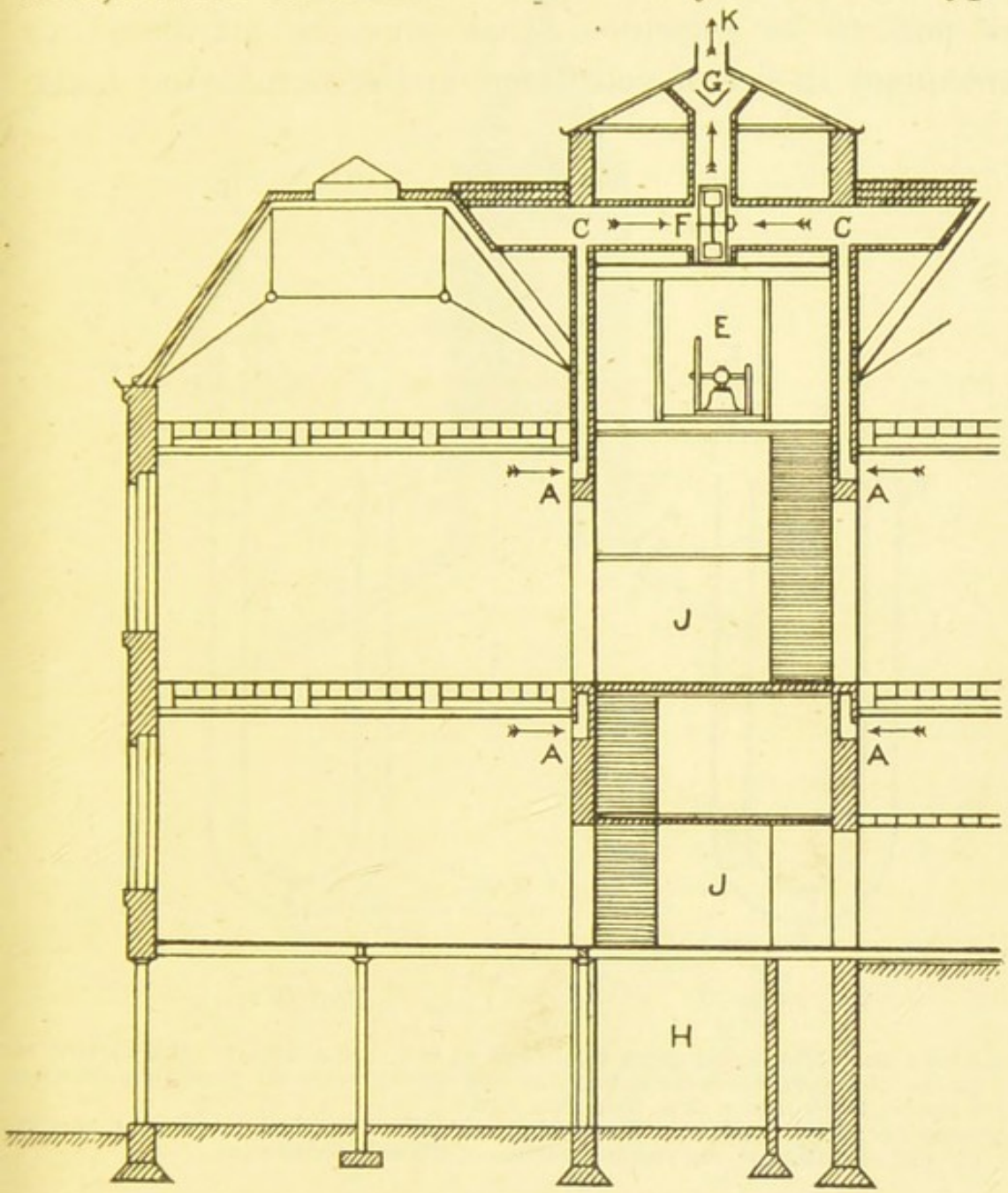


FIG. 17.—Ventilation by Vacuum Method of Hillhead School, Glasgow.

A, A, A, A, outlet ducts for foul air; C, C, passages to the fan; F, fan-propeller; G, K, main outlet shaft from fan; J, J, staircase; H, air-warming chamber in basement, from which shafts communicate with each room opening at floor-level.

Churches, schools, halls, and similar large buildings are often ventilated by roof-ridge ventilators, which are either fixed, or are movable by the wind. The movable

ventilators either act in weather-cock fashion or in a rotatory manner. Much has been written for and against this plan of ventilation, but, in our opinion, where failure has had to be registered, that must be attributed to inadequacy in size of ventilators and accompanying ducts.

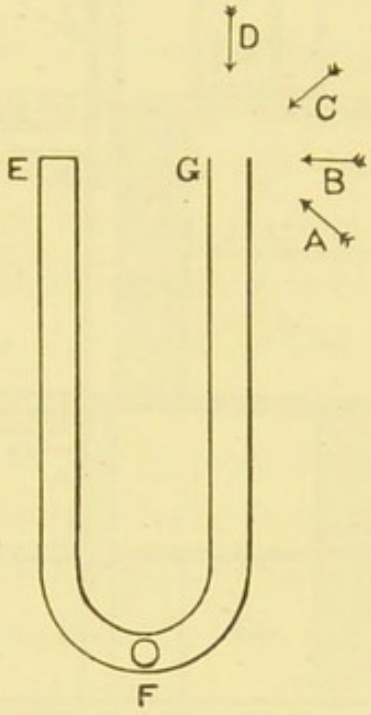


FIG. 18 A.

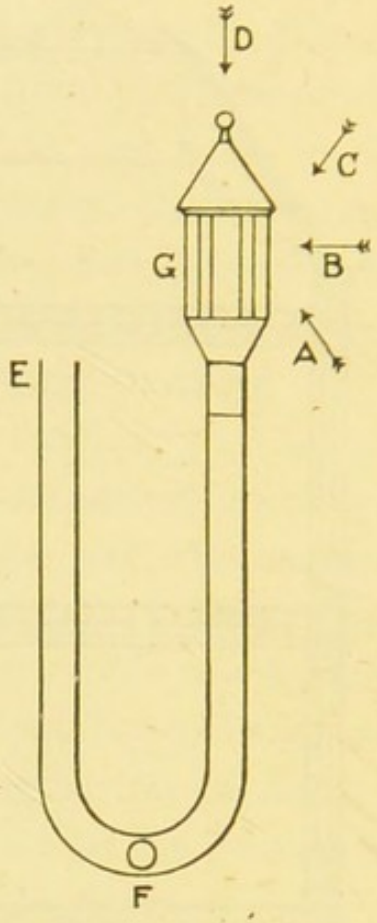


FIG. 18 B.

A is a bent glass tube containing a small ball of fine cotton-wool, F. If a current of air be blown over G from A or B, the ball will traverse the glass tube between F and G; but if from C or D, then from F to E.

B represents experimental tube fitted with fixed cowl. If air be blown from A, B, or C, the ball of cotton, F, will rise in direction of arrow to G, the cowl.

All roof-ridge ventilators act by the perflating action of atmospheric air currents, which, in our climate, seldom move with a less velocity than 15 to 20 miles an hour. Action by perflation is illustrated by Fig. 18 A and B. The main objections to this system are (1) irregularity of action, and (2) back-draughts. The latter, however, may

be prevented by suitable valvular arrangements and periodic inspection of apparatus.

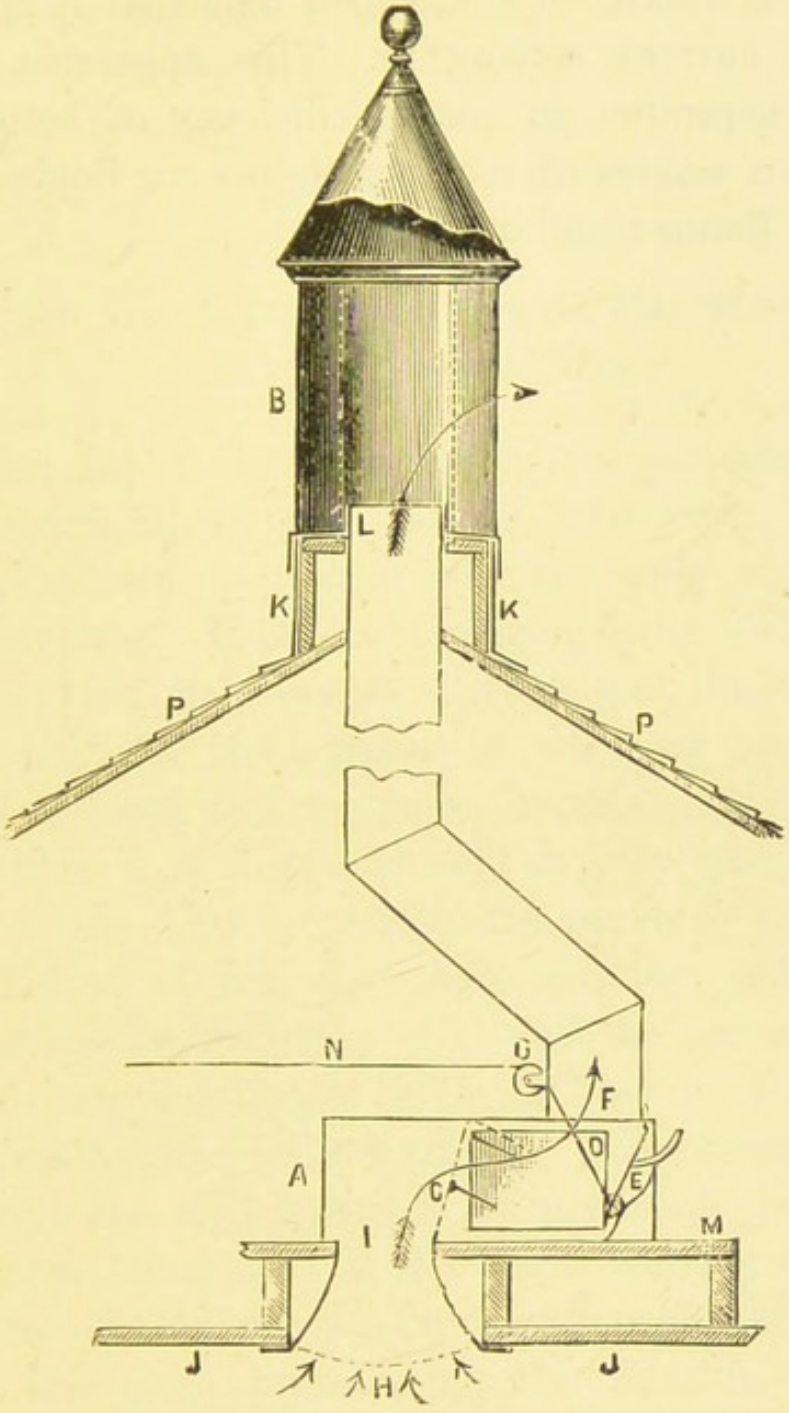


Fig. 19.—Buchan's Induced Current Fixed Ventilator.

A, valve box by which air may ascend, but cannot descend; B, fixed ventilator; C, silk valve; L, shaft; H, grated opening in ceiling. J, J, ceiling.

The above figure (Fig. 19) also shows the mechanism by means of which foul air is extracted from the interior of a building by the perflating action of the wind. The

apparatus is so arranged that foul air can pass outward, but back-draughts are prevented by the action of the valve, made usually of silk, which immediately shuts on a backward current setting in. This apparatus requires periodic inspection to ensure efficiency of action. The best-known makers of roof ventilators are Boyle, Buchan, Howorth, Banner, and others.

CHAPTER X.

HEAT IN RELATION TO HEALTH—MODES OF HEAT PROPAGATION.

HUMBOLDT, the famous naturalist, in summing up the characteristics which differentiate man from the lower animals, declared that man was the only animal that cooked his food. If he had broadened the statement by saying also that man was the only animal that generated artificial heat for the purpose of warming his body, he would have made it even more forcible. On our planet the distribution of heat and cold is very unequal. The warmth of the Equator meets the converse of frigidity at the Poles. Obviously, therefore, the incidence of man's position on the globe will affect the necessity which arises for the generation of artificial heat for the purpose of maintaining the body warmth. The conservation of the heat of the body by artificial means at the Equator is less urgent than it is at the Poles; and between these two points—the extremes—the necessity of artificial heat becomes the more acute as is the distance from the warmer point, and as is the season of the year.

Apart from his food, man conserves the heat of his body in three ways, viz. (1) by the erection of a shelter wherein to protect himself from the rudeness of the elements; (2) by some form of bodily covering; and (3) by the artificial generation of fire. These apply to man

at any point of the earth's surface. The condition and character of the two former are determined by the local clemency or inclemency of weather, and he utilises the fire which cooks his food to warm his body.

The sum-total of energy in the universe is always the same, varying nothing—never more, never less. Heat is not matter, but a form of energy. It therefore cannot be weighed. A vessel containing water at 60° Fahr. will weigh precisely the same when the temperature is raised to 180°. Heat is generated simply by the commotion of the intimate particles of matter, which commotion may be set up in various ways—by rubbing a metal button on one's sleeve, or two pieces of dried wood together, or in water in a vessel over a flame, or in a vessel of water exposed to the direct rays of the sun. The human body is a machine in which heat is generated by the combustion of the food swallowed, and by the different chemical processes which go on within it, much in the same way as in a steam-engine heat is generated in the water in its boiler by the combustion of coal. The temperature of the body in health is 98·6° Fahr., and of the blood 100° Fahr. These temperatures vary but within the slightest limits, whether at the Equator or the Poles. Man is, therefore, called a warm-blooded animal, since he retains his normal heat in the most varying environment. Other animals—as fishes and reptiles—are called cold-blooded, because their bodily temperatures accommodate themselves to the temperature of their environment, although, even for them, there are limits of heat and cold which are incompatible with life. In temperatures below the normal body-heat, the human body parts with its heat, and it becomes essential, therefore, that artificial means must be adopted to prevent undue loss. The terms *amount*

and *intensity* of heat are often used, but they do not mean the same thing. In a cupful and a kettleful of water, each at 212° Fahr., the intensity of heat will be identical, but the amount of heat in the latter will be proportionately larger, as is the relatively larger quantity of water present in it. Temperature is the condition in which a body is in respect of hotness at any given time. The term temperature implies certain fixed points of heat and cold—some standard of heat measurement; for, after all, bodily sensations are but delusive guides. There are two fixed points of cold and heat with which all are acquainted, viz. when water freezes and when water boils. Based upon these well-known phenomena, an instrument has been made whereby we may gauge heat amounts or temperatures, called a thermometer or heat-measurer. Of this instrument something will be said in another chapter.

MODES OF HEAT PROPAGATION.

Whatever the source of heat, the heat so liberated flows towards the colder body, which it warms. If we could imagine a certain fixed amount of heat set free in an air-tight room, the effect would be that the colder bodies in the room would be warmed until each attained the same uniform temperature. This is what happens in nature.

But we distinguish as to the mode by which heat is propagated through different bodies or media. There are three such modes, viz. *radiation, convection,* and *conduction.* Radiation is most common in aerial or gaseous bodies, convection in liquids, and conduction in solids. Radiation occurs in a vacuum as well as in air, and if air contained no particles the heat would

pass through without warming it. The presence of particulate matter, however, causes a slight rise of temperature. Radiant heat rays are like light rays. They are propagated in all directions equally, and in right lines, and like light rays may be intercepted by a screen. (Fig. 20.) Radiant heat is usually associated with luminosity. A lady shades her face from the sun by a parasol, or her furniture from the effects of heat by a screen. The intensity of radiant heat is in direct proportion to the temperature of its source, and inversely as the square of

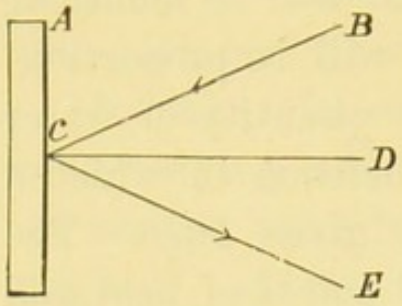


FIG. 20.—Illustrates reflection of radiant heat.

A, body on which ray D strikes; C is point of absorption; B and E are angles of reflection.

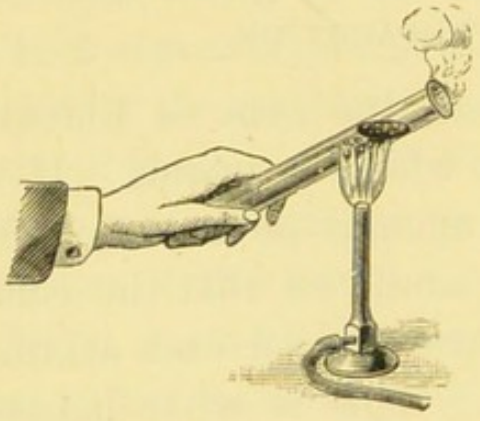


FIG. 21.

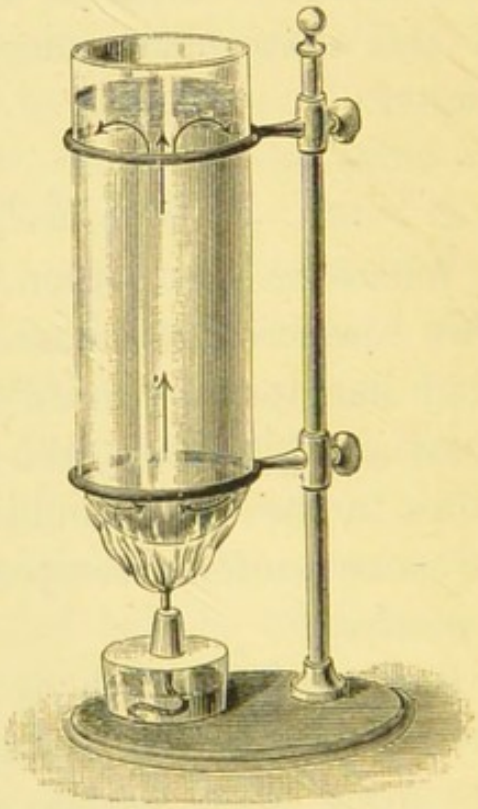


FIG. 22.

the distance from the source—that is, a body two feet distant from the source will only receive one-fourth, and

one four feet distant one-sixteenth, the heat of one a foot from the source. When radiant heat falls upon an object, part is absorbed, part reflected, the respective amounts of each depending on (1) the material composing the body, (2) its surface-character, and (3) its colour.

Rough bodies absorb more heat than smooth, dark-coloured more than shining bodies. For this reason, outsides of kettles are rough and black, and engine fittings which require to be handled are kept clean and shining. Black clothes absorb more heat than they reflect; white clothes the reverse.

Convection is peculiar to liquids. A kettle boils best when placed on the fire, not when the fire is placed on the kettle. Fig. 21 illustrates this point. The water in a test-tube may be made to boil in its upper part, while its lower part will remain quite cold. In a kettle placed on the fire what happens is this: The layer of water next the fire first becomes heated; it therefore becomes lighter than the superposed layers, and rises to the top of the vessel; the layer which takes its place next becomes warmed and rises; and so on, till the whole column of water becomes of uniform temperature, *i.e.* till it boils, as in Fig. 22.

CHAPTER XI.

HEAT IN RELATION TO HEALTH (*Continued*).

COMPARATIVE VALUES OF HEAT-GIVING SOURCES.

CONDUCTION is the mode by which heat is propagated in solid bodies. If one end of a long knitting-needle be held in a flame, sooner or later the heat will travel along the wire to the other end. Here the heat is transmitted from one metallic particle to those contiguous, until the whole length is traversed. Bodies differ as to their capacity of conducting heat. This property of solids is called *conductivity*. Some are good, some bad, conductors. A good conductor is one which robs a body warmer than itself quickly of its heat; a bad conductor, slowly; the former parts with its heat readily, the latter grudgingly. The sensations, as has been said, are but poor guides to temperature. For example, if the hands be put, in succession, on the fire-irons, the stone hearth, the wooden floor, and a carpet respectively, we are apt to conclude that they vary in coolness in the order named. But a thermometer registers the same temperature for each. Whence, then, the fallacy of the senses? The conductivity of the substances named varies in the order given, the first being the best, and the last the worst, heat conductor. The sensation of cold, when the hand is upon the iron, is due to the rapid absorption of the heat

of the hand by the metal. What the hand loses the metal receives; and a thermometer will now register a higher temperature in the iron than before the experiment. It is for this reason that door handles are made of wood or porcelain, in preference to metal, and that hot-water pipes or engine fittings are sometimes covered by felt, or the teapot is wrapped in a "cosy," or, as in our ice-making or freezing apparatus, the outer vessel is of wood, and the inner of metal.

SOURCES OF HEAT IN HOUSES.

These are (1) open coal or wood fires; (2) closed stoves (coal or oil); (3) gas fires; (4) hot-water pipes (at ordinary pressure); (5) hot-water pipes (at high pressure); and (6) steam pipes.

The open coal fire still holds, as it is likely to maintain, the premier position as the source of heat in our rooms. It sends out radiant heat which is stimulating and exhilarating. To some extent, doubtless, sentiment prejudices mankind in favour of the open fire. But, apart from this, there is much to be said in its favour. It least of all directly warms the room atmosphere; its radiant heat warms the objects which it strikes—the bodies of the occupants, the furniture, the walls—and the whole room is thereby warmed. The chief objection to our present mode of utilising the heat is that of needless waste. In an ordinary fireplace, from five-eighths to three-fourths of the total heat generated is of no value to the apartment. It is usually considered lost, but this is not so, as it warms the walls of the house—thereby keeping them dry—and it raises the temperature of those rooms nearest the flue in the upper flats.

This so-called waste of heat is produced in two ways:

viz. by (1) faulty construction of fireplace and grate, and (2) the mode of consumption of fuel. The air supply of the fire comes from the outside by doors and windows or ventilators. In ordinary combustion, probably one-third of the coal passes off in smoke, thereby producing no heat, to contaminate the outside atmosphere. This may be called "active" or "quick" combustion in contra-distinction to another mode of fuel consumption called "slow" combustion. In active combustion the air supply passes through and from beneath the fire-seat; in slow, it only passes through the fire, and not from below the fire. By reason of the reduced air-supply in the latter mode, the combustion of fuel is slower, and the chimney-ward movement of air is less rapid; hence for a smaller amount of fuel, a larger amount of heat is generated and conserved for the uses of the apartment, the fuel lasts a longer time, and the total cost of firing is less. From a long series of practical experiments made by us with different forms of grates, the slow combustion grate has proved the most economical; and the simpler the grate, the better the results. The following form, which has never been patented, has been evolved from these experiments, as it gives the best results. It consists of a plain metal frame, which is "flush" with the wall. The floor is composed of one large thick fire-brick, as are also its sides and back. The outer lining of the fireplace, behind these side and back bricks, is composed of ordinary fire-clay bricks built in cement. The "throat" of the chimney is contracted, and is rounded by cement. In such a grate it is difficult to start the fire. To overcome this, a sheet of iron, which may be pulled down from a sliding socket in the upper part of the grate frame, acts efficiently as a "blower." When the fire is well started, the blower is

pushed back into its resting-place. Such a fire requires to be replenished but twice daily to thoroughly warm a room of about 6000 cubic feet capacity. Another advantage of the slow combustion grate is that it does not produce the objectionable draughts between doors and windows and fireplace which are more apt to prevail with an ordinary grate. Next to petroleum, coal gives off more heat than any other form of fuel. It gives more than twice that of wood; when either is properly burned,

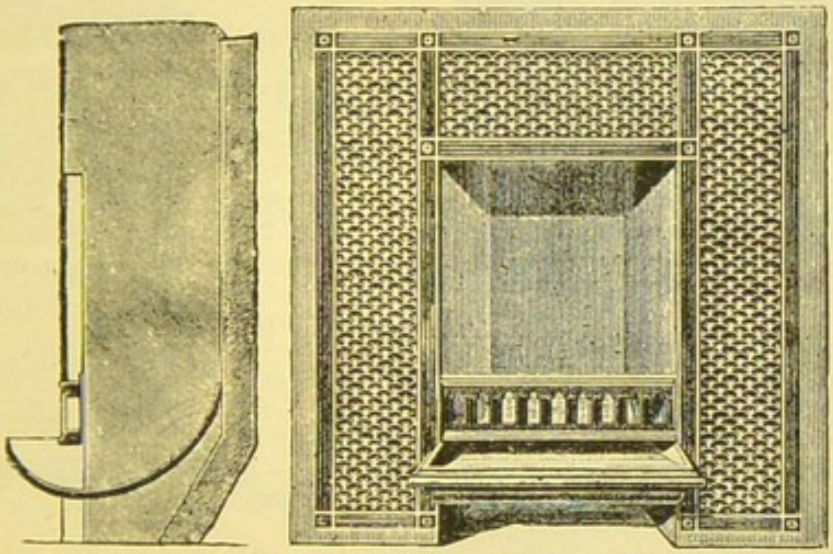


FIG. 23.—Brown and Green's Grate for smoke prevention.

the carbon unites with the oxygen of air to form carbonic acid gas, thus $C + O_2 = CO_2$.

Improper combustion causes smoke, and a smoky atmosphere is the cause of fogs. Domestic fires are one of the chief causes of the smoky atmosphere of populous cities, and such atmospheres are prejudicial to the public health. The remedy is to be looked for in smoke-consuming grates.

Fig. 23 represents Brown and Green's smoke-prevention grate. The coal is put into the fire below the incandescent coal, on the curved ledge shown in the section, by means of a specially constructed shovel.

CLOSED STOVES.

These are very commonly used in countries which experience rigorous winters. They economise fuel. They do not, however, warm the objects in the room so much as the air of the room, neither do they form such efficient

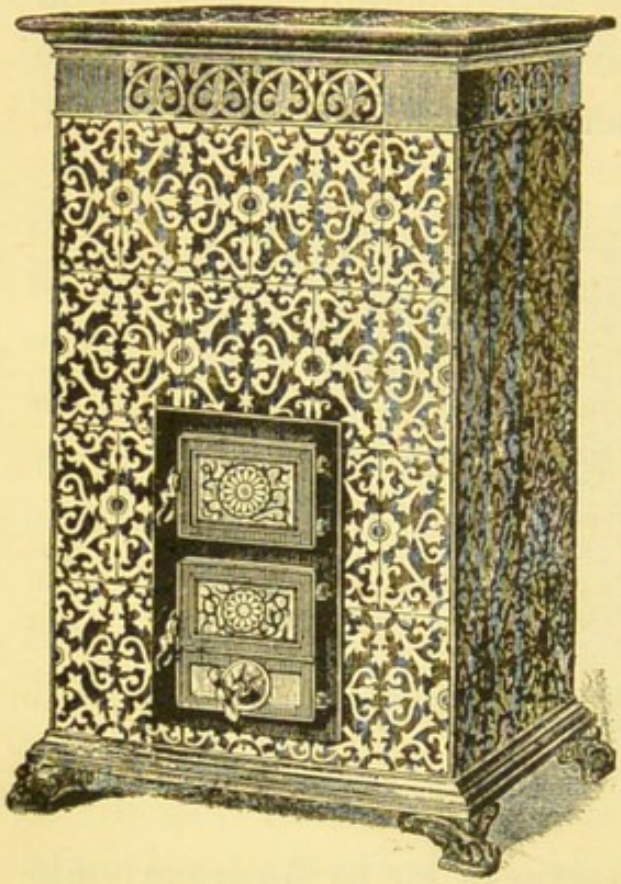


FIG. 24.—Doulton's German Stove by which fresh air is warmed before admission into a building.

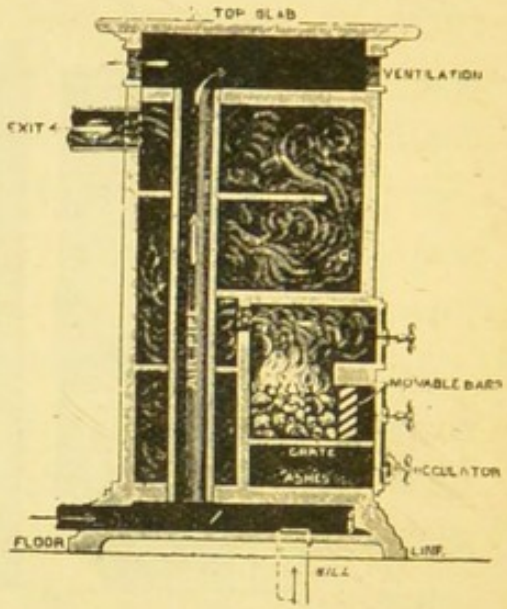


FIG. 24.—Section of Doulton's Stove.

outlets for foul air as open fires. They are chiefly made of iron, either solely or with an exterior covering of porcelain slabs or tiles. Cast-iron stoves are by no means impervious to the gases of combustion, as alternate heating and cooling cause expansion and contraction of the metal, and besides, the seams or joints are loosened. The chief objection to closed stoves consists in the fact that they "dry" the air of the room: that is, they

produce the sensation of dried air upon the occupants. This effect is by no means imaginary, and is produced in this way. Watery vapour, in gaseous form, is always an atmospheric constituent. As is the temperature of the air at any given time, so is the total possible amount of watery vapour which it can sustain. This is called the maximum amount, *or amount of saturation.* Most usually, however, the air only holds some percentage proportion of this total amount. Most comfort is experienced when the air holds 70 to 80 per cent of the possible total amount it can hold at that temperature. Suppose, then, when a stove is lighted, that the temperature of the air of the room is 40° Fahr., and it holds 75 per cent of the total possible watery vapour, or humidity as it is often termed. When the room temperature has risen to 65° Fahr., the percentage of humidity *for that temperature* will be less than 75 per cent of its possible total amount; consequently the air feels dry to the occupants. What happens, then, is this. The air robs everything and everybody in the room of moisture to satisfy its requirements; hence the skin begins to feel dry, the hair becomes crisp, and a general sense of uneasiness ensues. To avoid this, it is advisable to place shallow vessels containing water near the stove to supply the needed humidity. But saturation of the air is thus apt to be quickly produced, and when the room air cools down this excess of humidity becomes condensed upon the walls, and is apt to show itself thereupon as tiny streamlets. This is most likely to happen, moreover, when the number of persons in a room is relatively larger than it ought to be.

CHAPTER XII.

HEAT IN RELATION TO HEALTH: GAS STOVES, OIL STOVES, HOT-WATER PIPES, STEAM-PIPES.

GAS STOVES.

THESE are the outcome of a public demand for a form of heating which is at once handy, cleanly, and comparatively cheap. We have tried practically every form, but have discarded them all. All the objections urged against coal stoves have greater force against gas stoves, not only from the point of view of efficiency, but mainly from that of health. That they are handy, cleanly, and relatively cost less than other heat-sources, and that they have a limited field of usefulness, cannot be gainsaid. When, for instance, gas fires are fitted into grate-places which are filled with asbestos or fire-clay lumps, they constitute the least objectionable form, since they combine, to some extent, to give the radiant heat of the coal fire with the handiness and cleanliness of the gas fire. The same, however, cannot be said of those gas heaters which are only provided with a flue-pipe of a half to one inch diameter. Such are worse than useless, for they give to those who use them a false sense of security; and by them the products of combustion are inefficiently carried away, and ventilation is practically non-existent. Flueless gas or oil stoves are absolutely harmful, unless adequate provision be made to

neutralise by absorption the resultant gases of combustion. The former, which purport to do this, are still on their trial; and until some special provision be made for the absorption of carbon monoxide gas (CO), which is exceedingly poisonous and, at the same time, odourless, they cannot be deemed healthy. Acetylene, a gas of very pungent and penetrating odour, is liable to be given off from gas fires when the Bunsen flames chance to become choked with soot by "striking back," thereby preventing the necessary admixture of air and coal gas. Acetylene is very irritating to the throat and lungs. Cleaning of the burners will put matters right at once. It appears to us that the special field of usefulness of the gas fire is that for cooking purposes. Where expedition, at any time, is necessary, and in summer especially, when kitchen fires are likely to be low, a gas fire or grill, which can be lighted in a moment, is not only handy, but exceedingly useful.

Oil stoves share the same general condemnation. There is no practical difference between burning several wicks under cover of coloured glass and burning several single lamps equivalent to the same number of wicks. They equally consume the air of the room, and for equal quantities of heat, consume more oxygen than coal-gas. Besides, the products of combustion pass off into the general room atmosphere, and are harmful. Another objection to their use is the disagreeable odour due to acrolein, which an imperfectly-cleaned oil stove is apt to create.

Whereas, then, the open grate, whether with quick or slow combustion, acts not only to warm the room and its occupants—and the walls equally with any other part—by radiant heat, and also acts as an excellent "outlet" ventilator, the same cannot be said of the ordinary closed

stove, gas fire, or oil stove, which directly warms the air of the room, and the objects of the room unequally, and which does not act as an efficient ventilator. Besides, imperfect combustion of coal-gas or oil is liable to cause the production of certain malodorous gases, which are as harmful as they are disagreeable.

HOT-WATER PIPES.

Heating by pipes containing hot water at ordinary pressure is much more common in large public buildings, such as halls, churches, schools, hospitals, barracks, and the like, than in private dwellings. It is, however, now becoming more general in the latter. The hot pipes, which are made of cast iron, warm the air of the apartment by conduction, or rather, by convection as applied to gases. At different points in corridors and rooms are placed radiators as in Fig. 25. Little objection can be offered to their use (except the absence of the stimulating rays of radiant heat), provided special means are adopted for the ventilation of the apartment. When this mode of heating obtains, great care must be exercised during severe frost to prevent the colder water in the return-pipes from freezing. This is by no means unknown; and where no other provision for heating is made much discomfort results. In view, also, of possible disturbances of the water-supply, it is always advisable to have a reservoir upon which to fall back when the public supply is likely to be cut off for a period of time.

The high-pressure system of heating by water in pipes —under a pressure of three or four atmospheres, *i.e.* 45 to 60 lbs. per square inch of surface—is also used in large buildings. The pipes which compose the system, and which form a continuous whole, are made of wrought iron.

They are much smaller in calibre than those of the ordinary system, because of the greater amount of heat

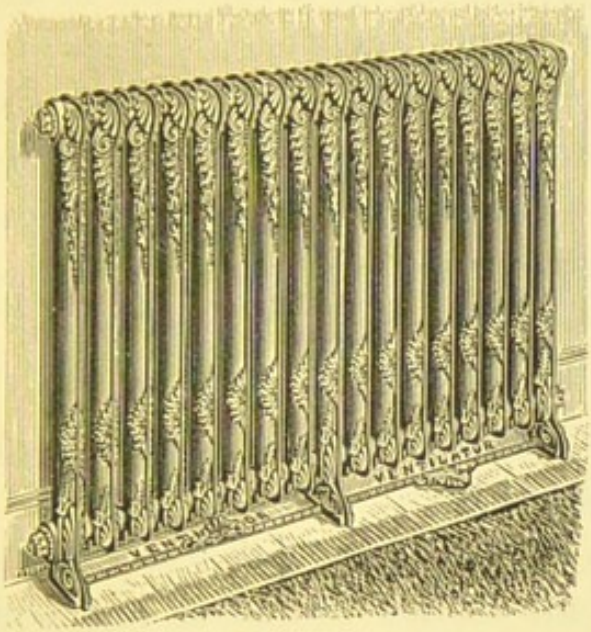


Fig. 25.—Hot-water Radiator, for warming rooms and corridors.

which is given off from a smaller area, and, consequently, they occupy less space. The water is heated by one end of the pipe-system being placed in the furnace fire, and at

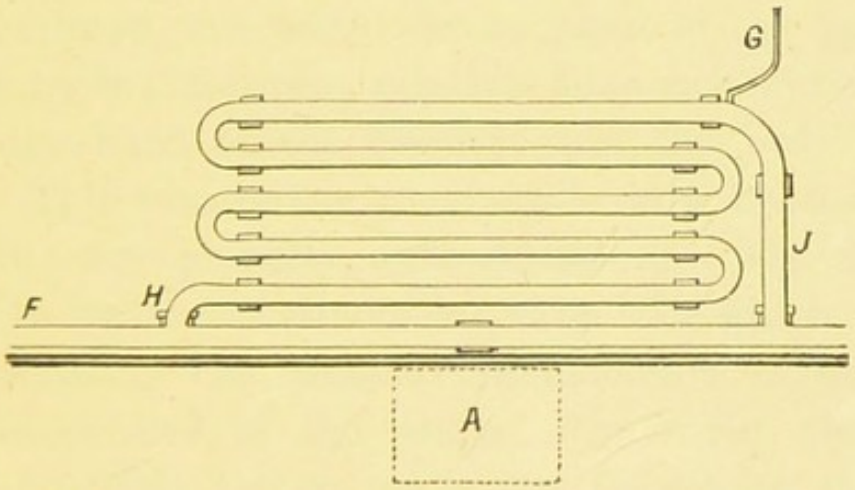


Fig. 26.—High-pressure Hot-water Coil for heating incoming cold air of a room.

A, entrance of cold air ducts; F, main pipe; H, J, branch pipe; G, expansion pipe.

the highest point of the system an expansion branch is formed to prevent explosions. The heat is distributed

throughout the building by placing "coils" at different points. Fig. 26 shows such a coil.

STEAM PIPES are rarely used, even in large buildings, for heating purposes. Spent steam may be used for heating conservatories which are situated close to steam-generating apparatus. Probably the only large experiment of heating the houses of a community by this method is that which was carried out in the town of Lockport in America. The steam can be turned on or off at will in each house in the circuit, and may be used for heating or cooking, or as a motive power. The prime cost of the system, however, is high.

Any system of heating by hot water or steam conveyed by pipes demands skilled attention, and this is more true of the high-pressure water and steam systems than of the low-pressure system. When they are installed in a building, arrangements of a valvular kind, which can be operated upon by a screw or wheel, usually exist, whereby the amount of heat required may be regulated.

CHAPTER XIII.

MODES OF HEAT MEASUREMENT—THERMOMETERS—TEMPERATURE SCALES.

As many diseases which come under the care of a nurse exhibit febrile disturbance, and as it is necessary for the information of the physician that periodic temperatures should be recorded, it is of the utmost importance that the nurse should be familiar with the instrument by which such temperatures are registered. There are two ways of estimating the temperature of a patient—one of which is entirely wrong and fallacious and the other scientific and correct. Before the thermometer came to be so much used, the habit was to judge of the patient's condition by the apparent relative difference of temperature of the hand of the observer and the body of the patient. This was but a rough-and-ready method, and has fallen, very properly, into desuetude. The modern method is by the thermometer, Fig. 27, which is the heat-measurer. The clinical thermometer is probably the principal tool of the nurse. She ought, therefore, to know not only how to use it, but its merits also, and how it is made. What is a thermometer? It consists of a glass tube of uniform capillary bore terminating at one end in a bulb. Part of the tube and the whole of the bulb contain mercury; both ends of the thermometer being sealed. The space between the upper

level of mercury and the sealed end is a partial vacuum. A scale, divided into equal parts, called degrees, and into subdivisions of a degree, either engraved on the glass of the tube, or on paper enclosed within an outer glass tube, or on the wooden frame-work of the instrument, is an essential part of the thermometer. Clinical thermometers usually have the scale engraved on the glass, thermometers for chemical purposes on paper, and ordinary thermometers for varied use on a wood or metal frame. The temperature-range of the instrument varies, depending upon the purpose for which it is to be used. For example, the range of a clinical thermometer is usually from 92° to 112° Fahr., these extremes being beyond the temperatures, which, if existent for any lengthy period, are compatible with life; the chemical thermometer may either range between 0° and 100° Cent., or 0° and 360° Cent., or even higher, depending upon its destined use.

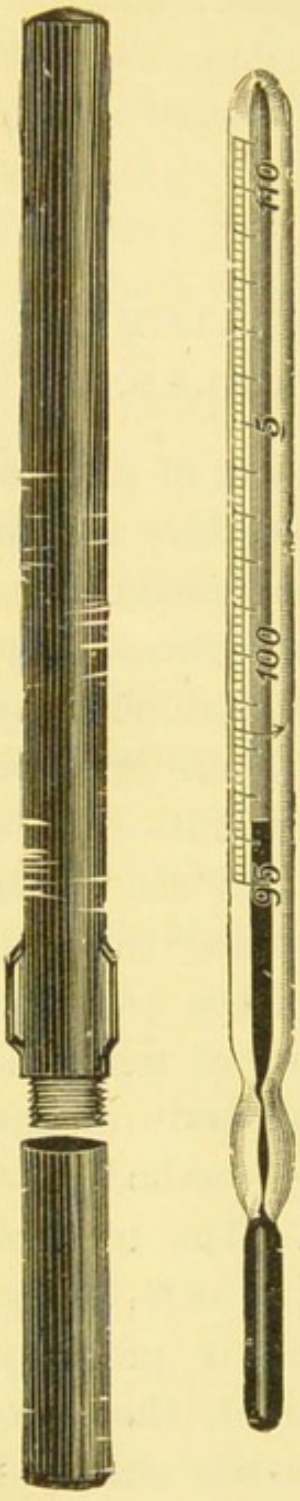


Fig. 27.

The glass portion of the thermometer having been made, it becomes necessary to "calibrate" the instrument as a heat-measurer. *Calibration* means the graduation of the instrument with reference to the uniformity of its bore. Mercury, which it contains, expands like other liquid substances, definitely in proportion to definite amounts of heat, and thus is solely used for the

clinical thermometer because it enables a compact instrument to be made. Alcohol, coloured, is used by preference, however, for thermometers which are used in some other fields of observation. *Graduation* of the thermometer is a very important matter. In making an ordinary instrument the workman has two fixed points from which to operate, viz. the freezing-point, and the boiling-point, of water. To get the former he places the bulb of the ungraduated instrument in melting ice, and when the mercury remains stationary he marks that level on the glass. To obtain the latter he suspends the bulb in the steam of boiling water, and when the mercury rises to its highest point he makes a second mark. If the glass tube of the instrument be of equal bore between these two points, he may "graduate" the stem by putting equidistant marks upon it. The number of degrees or "grades" (Latin, *gradus*, a step) on a scale may be of any number, according to the choice of the user, so long as they have equal and known value. In effect, however, the instruments now in use in the world are graded according to one or other of three different scales, and are called respectively the thermometers of Fahrenheit, Celsius or Centigrade, and Réaumur. The first is in common use in our own country; the second in most Continental countries, and for all scientific work; and the last mainly in Russia. Fahrenheit—a native of Dantzig—was the first, in 1720, to use mercury in thermometers; before that time alcohol was the registering fluid. He took as the limit of coldness the temperature of Dantzig in the winter of 1709, which was the same as that produced when the mercury was plunged into a mixture of snow and ammonium chloride, and he called that point zero, or freezing-point. But in so doing he

made a considerable mistake, whereby much confusion in the student mind has since resulted, for the point which he called zero was 32° below the actual freezing-point of water; therefore, freezing-point on his instrument is not synonymous with the zero-points of the other scales, but is 32° above them.

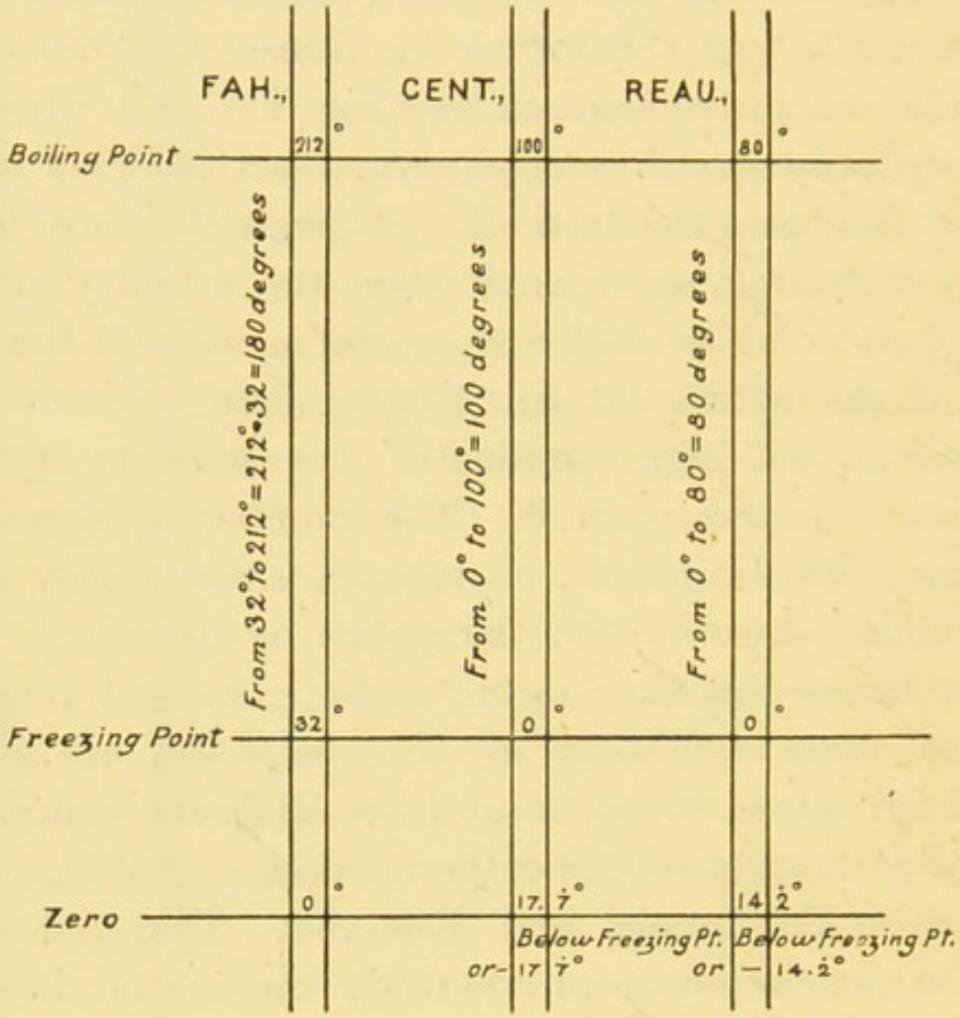


FIG. 28.

Celsius—a Swede—twenty-one years after, rectified this mistake by graduating his instrument from the melting-point of ice, which he called zero, and which has been the standard to this day. Between zero and boiling-point he made 100°, therefore his instrument and scale have come to be called Centigrade (Latin, *centum*, one hundred; *gradus*, a step or grade).

Réaumur—a Frenchman—based the zero of his instrument in the same way as Celsius. Fahrenheit divided his scale from his supposed zero to boiling-point into 212°, Celsius into 100°, and Réaumur into 80°, or grades. The foregoing diagrammatic figure (Fig. 28) will assist the student to comprehend the relation of the scale of each thermometer to the others.

The relative value of one degree of one instrument to one degree of the others ought to be known. In view of the possible establishment in this country of the metric system, and for other reasons, a nurse should be able to interpret these values. The first point to remember is that the freezing- and boiling-points of water at the sea-level are fixed. If all instruments had been so graduated, no difficulty would have emerged, and the determination of the relative ratios of the different scales would have been simple. Suppose, for example, the number of degrees in the Fahrenheit scale to have been 180°; that is, 212° − 32° = 180°; that in the Centigrade to be 100°, and that in Réaumur 80°, the ratios would have been as follows, viz. 180 : 100 : 80, or ÷ 20 = 9 : 5 : 4; in other words, 9° Fahr. would equal 5° Cent. and 4° Réau., and conversely. But the freezing-point of each scale is, unfortunately, not the same; in Fahr. it is 32°, in Cent. 0°, and in Réaumur 0°. Since we work with the entire scale of each instrument, however, the factor of difference between the zero and freezing-point of the Fahr. scale must always be reckoned with.

The following table shows how to transpose correctly the scale of one instrument to that of the others :—

1. To convert degrees Fahr. into degrees Cent.—subtract 32°, then multiply by 5 and divide by 9.

2. Fahr.° into Réau.°—subtract 32, multiply by 4, and divide by 9.
3. Cent.° into Réau.°—multiply by 4 and divide by 5.
4. Cent.° into Fahr.°—multiply by 9, divide by 5, add 32.
5. Réau.° into Fahr.°—multiply by 9, divide by 4, add 32.
6. Réau.° into Cent.°—multiply by 5 and divide by 4.

CHAPTER XIV.

SICK-ROOM TEMPERATURES—REGULATION OF HEAT OF SICK-ROOMS—BATH TEMPERATURES.

The temperature scale of the clinical thermometer usually ranges from 92° to 112° Fahr. The extreme points are obtained by placing the instrument in liquids in which a standard instrument records these temperatures. It is then graduated between these points in the manner already indicated. It must not be assumed that every instrument which may be bought is accurate. Most of them, indeed, have errors of calibration, or graduation, or both. It is important to have an accurate instrument, although an instrument which is not precisely accurate will register variations of temperature in a relatively accurate manner. If, however, its initial accuracy be at fault, any given single temperature will either be too high or too low. To secure an accurate thermometer, it ought to be corrected against standard instruments, as is done at Kew Observatory. The modern instrument is self-registering; that is to say, when the mercury has attained the highest point of the reading, the index column remains in this position, while the rest of the mercurial column recedes into the bulb. This is accomplished by intervening a minute bubble of air between the main and the index column. Before another reading can be taken, the index column must be shaken

below the level of the normal temperature reading, this being done by holding the non-bulbous end of the instrument in the hand, and giving it one or more shakes in the air. This design of instrument enables the observer to remove it from the body of the patient before the reading is taken; whereas, with the non-registering form, the reading has to be taken with the instrument in position. Quick temperature-registration instruments are made by having the bulb thinned and elongated so as to present a larger mercurial surface to the heat-giving source. Spirally-coiled instruments, for taking mouth-temperatures, are sometimes used, but they have no merit over the elongated form.

The normal temperature of the human body in health, taken in the armpit, is 98·6° Fahr., or 37° Cent., or 29·6° Réau.; taken in the rectum or mouth it is 99·2° Fahr., or 37·3° Cent., or 29·9° Réau. A temperature registered above these points is called a hypernormal temperature (Greek, *hyper* = above); and one below, a subnormal temperature (Latin, *sub* = below).

TABLE OF TEMPERATURES.

Temperature of collapse	= 95° to 97° Fahr.
Subnormal temperature	= 97·6° Fahr.
Normal temperature	= 98·6° Fahr.
Subfebrile or slightly hyper-normal temperature	= 99° to 101° Fahr.
Febrile temperature	= 101·5° to 103° Fahr.
Highly febrile temperature	= 103·5° to 104·5° Fahr.
Hyperpyrexial temperature	= 105° to 106·5° Fahr. and upwards.

TEMPERATURE OF SICK-ROOM.

The temperature of the sick-room ought entirely to be regulated by the comfort of the patient. A routine temperature which fulfils this condition for convalescents, elderly persons, and young children is one from 60-65° Fahr. Patients who suffer from fever generally, or from one of the specific fevers particularly, experience more comfort when the room is about 55° Fahr. than when it is higher. In addition to temperature, comfort is materially added to certain patients if the humidity of the air receive special attention. This is true of pulmonary diseases generally, but especially of "throat" and "croupy" cases. It is practically impossible to reduce the amount of watery vapour in any atmosphere, but it is possible, and often advantageous, to increase it. This is the reason for the croup kettle and other steam-generating apparatus for the sick-room. The thermometer, therefore, ought to have a prominent place in every sick-room and to receive the careful periodic attention of the nurse. (Fig. 29.)

Fig. 30 is the wet and dry bulb thermometer, by means of which, on reference to a table of instructions, the amount of moisture in the atmosphere may be determined, in addition to the temperature. The little vessel at the bottom of the thermometer on the right contains water, which, by capillary action, passes up the strands of wick from the vessel to the bulb of the instrument, and so keeps it wet; hence the name wet bulb, which instrument, unless the atmosphere be saturated with watery vapour, always gives a lower reading than the dry bulb instrument, by reason of the evaporation from the bulb. The other thermometer has no such arrange-

ment; hence the name dry bulb. The temperature of the sick-room requires careful attention, especially about midnight and the early hours after midnight, and about 4 A.M., for at these times the bodily temperature falls lowest.

The regulation of heating of ordinary sick-rooms,

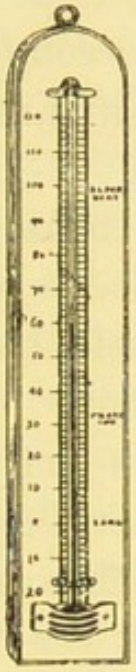


FIG. 29.
Thermometer.

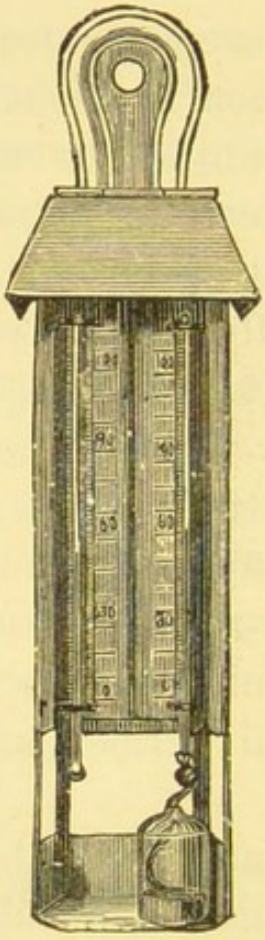


FIG. 30.
Wet and dry bulb Thermometer.

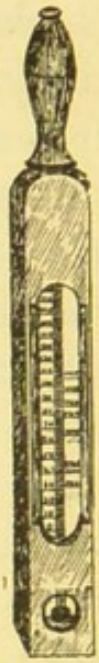


FIG. 31.
Bath Thermometer.

especially at night, is a somewhat difficult task. To lower the temperature, beyond the ordinary method of opening the window and door, as already described, there is little to suggest. Careful attention to firing, especially when lights are burning, will make the task easier. Direct heat from the fire may be prevented reaching the patient by the simple interposition of a screen.

BATHS AND BATH TEMPERATURES.

Both in hospital and private nursing the bathing and sponging of patients are important items of the nurse's duty. Here, also, the thermometer is all-important. Fig. 31 shows a bath thermometer. It is important, alike for the physician who orders the bath, and for the nurse who is to carry out his instructions, to understand clearly what is meant when a particular bath is called for. We speak, for instance, of a cold, a tepid, a warm, and a hot bath. What is meant by these respective terms? They are all relative terms; for example, a patient with a temperature of 104° Fahr. will feel less cold on being put into a bath at 65° Fahr. than will a person whose temperature is normal; and tepid water will feel warm, and warm water hot to a cold body. It is for this reason that the rule-of-thumb method of testing a bath temperature by passing the hand through the water should, once and for all, be discarded as untrustworthy and unsafe, for the amount of hotness or coldness which is perceived by the testing hand will depend entirely upon the temperature of the hand at the moment of testing. Again, patients have been scalded by having been put into baths by careless attendants who had not previously used the thermometer. For these reasons, therefore, the bath thermometer should always be used before the immersion of the patient. To return, however, to bath temperatures. While a cold bath may mean anything between the melting-point of ice and 65° Fahr., it is necessary when a cold bath is ordered, as is now not infrequently done in certain febrile diseases, that the physician should signify the temperature of the water to be used. If this be omitted, the nurse ought to have

some knowledge of ordinary bath temperatures and to be able to apply it.

The following table may serve as a useful guide in this matter:—

Cold Bath	60° to 65° Fahr.
Tepid	86° „
Warm	95° „
Hot	104° „

Routine bath temperature for infants and young children, 85° to 90°.

Bath thermometer always to be used before immersion of patient.

It is always safer for convalescents, elderly people, and persons generally who cannot afford to part with heat freely, to wash in the winter season in tepid or warm water. Much nonsense has been written regarding the innervating effect of cold water and the enervating effect of warm. The former may and does so act for the vigorous and healthy, but it does not for a large number of persons, particularly those whose heart's action is slow and feeble, or who are below par generally. Sponging of the body at intervals with a damp sponge wrung out of tepid water is very grateful and soothing to the feverish patient, and it will often be the means of inducing sleep, and certainly restfulness in delirium, in feverish patients. As a general principle, the temperature of the water used ought to be regulated by the amount of fever present, viz. the higher the fever the cooler the water. The accompanying comfort will not only be more marked at the time, but will also be more lasting.

CHAPTER XV.

WATER IN RELATION TO HEALTH—SOURCES OF SUPPLY—MODES OF SUPPLY.

WATER, like air and food, is one of the prime necessities of life, animal or vegetable. It enters into the composition of nearly everything in nature. Every one knows about the disastrous effects of unsatisfied bodily thirst. The human body is made up of 75 per cent of water; hence the daily need is not inconsiderable. Water is a potent factor also in personal, domestic, and public hygiene; hence the need for a plentiful supply to populous places which can be easily tapped by every consumer. The physical appearances of water are matters of common knowledge, but with its chemical composition most persons are less familiar. It is a chemical compound which results from the union of two gases, viz. hydrogen and oxygen. When two volumes of the former and one of the latter are mixed, and are exploded by an electric spark, a new liquid substance—water—is the result; therefore the chemical symbols for water are H_2O. Chemically pure water does not exist in nature, although it is found approximately pure. It exhibits interesting physical conditions upon occasion. It freezes from the effect of cold, and it boils from the effect of applied heat. Water may thus exist in one of three forms, viz. as a solid, below 32° Fahr., or 0° Cent.; as a liquid, between

32° and 212° Fahr., or 0° and 100° Cent.; and as a gas, above 212° Fahr., or 100° Cent. When water in the gaseous form is reduced to the liquid form by cold the process is called *condensation*. This is a very important, and, for us, an absolutely essential operation of nature. When, again, water is cooled to the solid state of ice, a very interesting phenomenon is to be noted in the process of cooling. When the temperature falls to 39·2° Fahr., or 4° Cent., the process of contraction which the water has undergone between 212° and 39·2° is suddenly changed. From 39·2° it begins to expand, until the freezing-point—32° Fahr.—is reached. Were it not for this fact, intense frost would convert our rivers and lakes into solid masses of ice, instead of a top layer of ice and a lower layer of water, as the foregoing condition demands. When water passes from the liquid to the solid state it expands—that is to say, the volume of ice formed is greater than the volume of water from which it was formed in the proportion of eleven volumes of ice to ten volumes of water. It is erroneously believed by many that frozen pipes burst when the thaw comes. The fact, however, is that the pipe is burst during freezing by the expansion of the ice, but the fracture is not apparent till water can once more flow in the pipe; then the leak shows the fracture.

The boiling of water is also an interesting phenomenon. Water contains in solution the gases of the atmosphere, much in the same way as in aerated waters. The noisy, bubbling process, known as boiling, is simply the disengagement of these gases by the heat. After they have been driven off a noiseless boiling will ensue, if the heating be continued. The temperature at which water boils is always the same under the same conditions.

The boiling-point of water is always reckoned at a pressure of one atmosphere—that is to say, the pressure which a column of atmosphere, of assumed equal density and five miles in height, exercises on a body at sea-level. If this pressure be increased or diminished the boiling-point will rise or fall correspondingly. For example, water boils at the level of the Dead Sea at 214° Fahr., because that is about 1300 feet below the ordinary sea-level; on the other hand, at the top of Mont Blanc, it boils at 186° Fahr., because that mountain is about 15,000 feet above sea-level. The period of time required for cooking any article of food which demands boiling is reckoned by our experience of the fact at or near the sea-level. But potatoes, rice, or eggs, for instance, are less quickly cooked at the top of Mont Blanc than in London or Glasgow. Fitzgerald, in his book on *The Highest Andes*, tells us that "cooking at these altitudes—19,000 feet—is a problem. Water boils at 180° Fahr., and it required twelve minutes to boil an egg! Still, with patience, even tea can be brewed by letting it steep in boiling water for twenty minutes";[1] and Sven Hedin, in his book *Through Asia*, speaking of cooking food on the spurs of the Arka-Tagh in Thibet, at a height of 16,300 feet above sea-level, informs us that "meat never became properly tender, no matter how long it was boiled. Even the rice-pudding was not palatable: the grains of rice refused to soften and swell."[2] Cooking under increased or diminished pressure is now frequently carried out on the large scale. Papin's digester—an apparatus largely used in Continental hospitals for making beef-tea—is worked on the principle of increasing the pressure within the apparatus by placing weights on the air-tight lid,

[1] P. 101.

[1] Vol. ii. p. 977.

which is provided with a safety-valve. On the other hand, in public works where food-stuffs and condiments are made, the cooking takes place in vacuum pans, in which the atmospheric pressure is diminished.

The public health largely depends upon the abundant supply and free use of wholesome water. A water famine is disastrous to the health of a city, as it also is to public economics. Where the carriage of sewage depends on the water supply, reduced consumption of water means impurity of sewage channels, and the risks to health which are consequent. But however ample a public water supply may be, experience has shown that unless it be easily accessible to every householder, it is not so freely used as it ought to be for cleansing purposes. The effect of this in poorer districts is certain to be harmful sooner or later.

SOURCES OF SUPPLY.

The original source of all the water used by man at any point on the earth's surface is the ocean of water which encircles the land. Whether the proximate source of supply be lake or river, reservoir, rainfall, well, or spring, the original source is the same. Our planet is at once a huge evaporating and condensing apparatus. Just as the sea is the storehouse of summer heat, which it gives back to us in the winter, so is it the source of the watery vapour which is driven from it by the sun into the atmosphere, which is condensed in the form of clouds, and which returns to us as water, either in a liquid or solid form. Fig. 32 is a diagrammatic representation of the process of evaporation and condensation. In the centre is the source of heat; at the bottom, the source of watery vapour; the ascending arrows indicate the ascent

of this vapour, as mists, fogs, and on the top of all, as clouds; the descending arrows, the descent of the vapour, as snow, hail, rain, dew, to form springs, rivers, lakes, and wells. Water, in one form or other, having fallen upon the surface of the earth, it depends upon the configuration of the land upon which it falls, and upon its geological structure, whether it will sink mainly into the earth or collect upon its surface. There is thus formed an under-

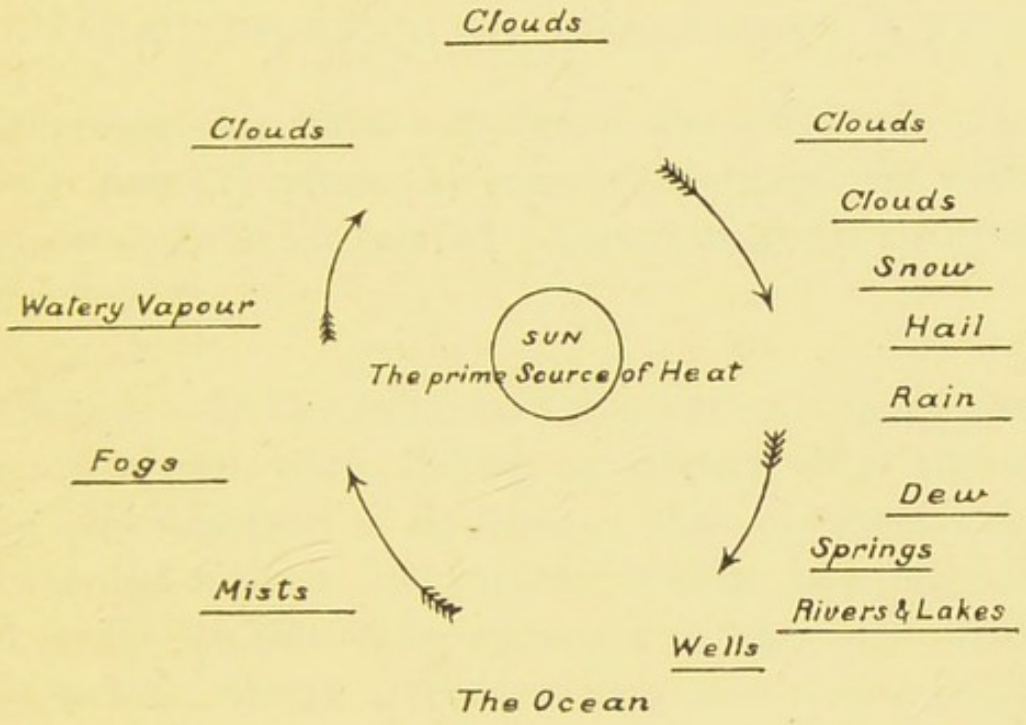


FIG. 32.

ground or subsoil collection of water, and an overground or surface collection; and the level of each at any given time depends upon the antecedent rainfall. A well taps this underground supply, and the depth of the well before water is reached depends upon the distance from the ground surface the level of the underground water is. In some parts it is near, and in others far, from the earth's surface. That part of the rainfall which does not percolate into the soil forms lakes and rivers, the incidence and position of which depend upon the topography of the

land and its geological formation. Springs arise from the underground water, which in the course of percolation downwards encounters an impervious rock stratum. This stratum dips out on the land surface, and the water travelling along it thus eventually appears as a spring.

CHAPTER XVI.

WATER SUPPLY (*Continued*)—MODES OF SUPPLY—CHARACTERISTICS OF WHOLESOME WATER.

THE present-day water supplies of the world are obtained either from (1) rivers, (2) lakes, (3) springs, (4) wells, or (5) directly from the rainfall. These demand some detailed consideration.

RIVERS.—In its virgin condition a river is but a moving column of rain water, having in solution what the water may have dissolved in its passage through the air on its way to the river, in the various rivulets, or in the river-bed itself. In this state, the water of a river is usually a good water. Hence rivers are tapped as water supplies; less, however, now than formerly. London, to some extent, is still supplied from the Thames and its tributaries, Aberdeen from the Dee, Perth from the Tay, and other towns from other rivers. At the same time, by reason of the risks of pollution, rivers are suspicious sources of supply; as a rule, they are positively dangerous. Before the best of them can be used, efficient filtration must precede distribution. It were better, indeed, if they could be done without, by reason of actual pollution.

LAKES are natural upland collections of water, and constitute the source of our purest supplies. Occurring in sparsely inhabited areas, they are little liable to contamina-

tion; formed on rock strata, difficult of solution, they contain but little mineral matter; and, constituted only of water from the clouds, they are "soft," and, therefore, excellent for washing purposes. The chief objection against them is that they are rich in vegetable organic matter chiefly of peaty origin, in which by microbic action certain organic acids are generated, which sometimes act as a solvent of the lead of the pipes which contain and convey the water.

Reservoirs are but artificial lakes, formed in similar districts and for similar reasons. They form the focussing point of the water which falls over a given portion of land, called the *gathering ground* or *collecting area*.

Springs usually supply but limited amounts of water—enough, however, in many cases, for small collections of houses.

Wells constitute the chief source of water supply of rural districts, and of isolated houses, including farms. The purity of the water supply of farms, in relation to milk supplies, becomes of prime importance. There are three kinds of wells, viz. (1) *shallow or surface*, (2) *deep*, and (3) *artesian*; and their designation does not so much depend upon their actual depth as upon their relation to the earth strata through which they are driven. A shallow or surface well is one which, sunk into pervious soil, taps the underground water which has percolated from the surface of the ground within the immediate vicinity of the well-shaft. A deep well is one which, sunk through the pervious surface-layer of soil and an underlying impervious stratum of rock, taps the underground water which has percolated from the land surface at some distance from the well-shaft. An artesian well (so called from Artois, a province in France, where they were first

used on a large scale) is one in which the shaft is sunk through (1) a pervious layer, (2) an impervious layer, and which taps a collection of water lying on the top of (3) an impervious layer, the two impervious strata "outcropping" on the surface of the land, it may be, several miles away. The water which is tapped, falling on the area of land between the two outcropping layers, sinks into this basin-like formation, and lies there under considerable pressure. When the bore tube, in the process of sinking, reaches this

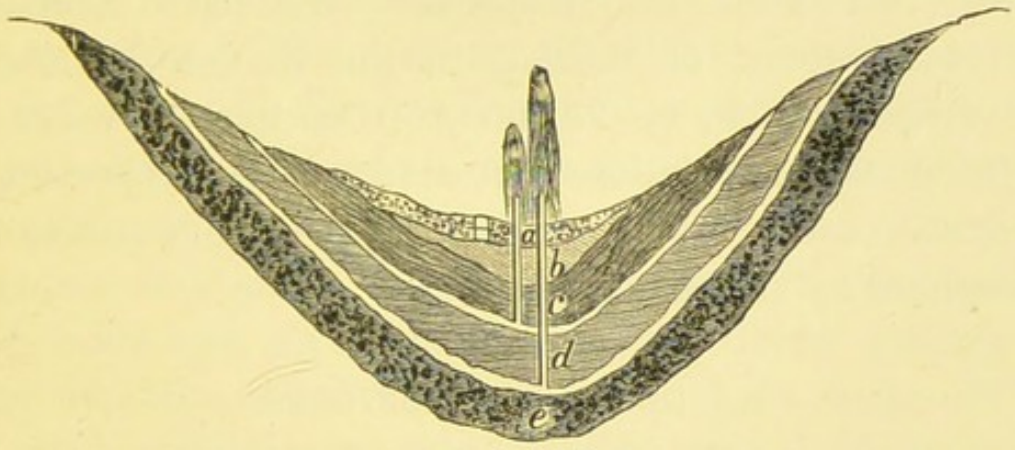


FIG. 33 (from Fessenden's *Physics*).—Figure represents a vertical section of geological strata of basin.

A, loose sand or gravel layer; B, clay bed; C, stratum of slate; D, stratum of limestone; E, a bed of granite. Upright lines show spouting bore tubes.

collection of water, the pressure on the mass of water lying between the two impervious layers forces the water up the tube, and occasionally for many feet into the air. Fig. 33 illustrates the conditions requisite for this kind of well.

Artesian wells are usually of considerable depth; that of Grenelle, in Paris, is 1800 feet; of Passy, 1900 feet; and of Rochefort, 2765 feet. Their waters are high in temperature, depending on the depth; that of Grenelle is 82° Fahr., and that of Rochefort 106° Fahr. They provide large quantities of water; that of Grenelle, for example, 500,000 gallons per 24 hours. The water from the well of Grenelle drains a district 100 miles from Paris.

They supply waters free from organic pollution, but frequently containing much mineral matter in solution.

In respect of purity, waters from upland lakes or reservoirs, springs, and deep wells are the best, while surface water and stored rain water are suspicious sources, and rivers and shallow wells are dangerous sources.

Rain water is sometimes collected for potable uses, but only rarely; whereas for washing purposes it is eagerly stored in districts where the other supplies are "hard," because of its "softness." We have computed the total amount of rainfall in the British Islands in an average year to be 232,000,000,000 tons of water, or 52,000,000,000,000 gallons, but a very large proportion of this finds its way back to the sea by the rivers, and to the atmosphere by surface evaporation.

HARDNESS AND SOFTNESS.

These are terms employed to express the difficulty or ease with which water unites with soap to form a lather; or, in other words, the soap-destroying power of a water, which is estimated as "degrees" of hardness. Thus, a water of 5 degrees of hardness means a water which contains per gallon 5 grains of soap-destroying substances, which are usually expressed as lime. Economically, this is a matter of importance in a manufacturing community, and for domestic purposes. As a hard water requires much more soap than a soft one, the increased expenditure in soap alone forms a formidable money bill in London, or in any other community supplied with a hard water. Waters differ much as to hardness or softness; for example, the water of Glasgow has about 1° of hardness, those of London from 12° to 21°, and that of Sunderland 30°. This difference depends on the source of supply. Rain

water is the softest, and from the following sources in progressive order waters become harder, viz. lakes, rivers, deep wells, artesian wells. Hardness is due chiefly to the salts of lime and magnesia which are dissolved in the water from strata containing these substances, through the agency of CO_2 which the rain takes up from the atmosphere in falling. The other principal factor of hardness is iron, which is dissolved in the water in the same way. Lime and magnesia, as carbonates or sulphates, or both, and iron are, therefore, the chief causes of hardness in any water. Any one can determine between a hard and soft water by the simple act of personal ablution, but the rationale of it is not so well understood. The following facts will explain: Hard soap is a compound of a fatty substance and soda. The fatty substance is composed of fatty acids and glycerine—in union. These fatty acids unite with the alkali—soda—to form hard soap—chiefly the oleate and stearate of soda, which are soluble in water. When soap is dissolved in a water which contains lime or magnesia, or both, the lime splits up the soap and unites with the oleic and stearic acids to form these salts of lime, which are insoluble in water. Hence, so long as lime is present ununited with these fatty acids, no lather will form. For this reason, therefore, a hard water uses up more soap than a soft one. We distinguish between kinds of hardness, based solely upon the chemical nature of the lime and magnesian salts present in the water. There are "*total*," "*temporary*," and "*permanent*" hardness. Total hardness means the natural soap-destroying powers of a water; permanent, the hardness which remains after the water has been boiled; and temporary, that which disappears on boiling. Temporary hardness is due to the carbonates of lime, magnesia, and iron; permanent, to the

sulphates of these metals. Hard waters usually contain both. The carbonates are kept in solution by excess of CO_2 in the water. By boiling, this gas is driven off, and these salts, no longer able to exist in solution, fall as a white powder, which adheres to the sides of the vessel, and accumulates to form a crust. This crust, or "fur" as it is sometimes called, prevents a kettle or a boiler from being so easily heated, therefore more coal has to be used to make the water boil or to generate steam, hence increased expenditure of money. Besides, the crust acts chemically on the boiler plates, gradually makes them thinner, and, therefore, less able to withstand the internal pressure, and this, together with the extra firing necessary to keep up steam, forms a not infrequent cause of boiler explosions; hence a danger to life. In "limy" districts the knowing housewife prevents the encrusting of her kettle by placing in it a large playing-marble, around which the crust forms. Thus, after boiling, water containing lime, etc., as carbonates, is rendered softer. This, therefore, is designated *temporary* or *removable* hardness. Lime and magnesian sulphates are unaffected by boiling, hence the hardness remains persistent, and is therefore called *permanent* hardness. Total hardness is the sum of both. To remove the hardness due to sulphates the washerwoman adds carbonate of soda, which, reacting on the lime and magnesian salts, forms sulphate of soda and carbonate of lime, which latter becomes precipitated in boiling.

So much discomfort and increased expense arise from hardness in water, that methods on the large scale have been invented to overcome it, and with some degree of success. All of these methods are based upon Clark's original process, which consisted in adding to the hard water in a reservoir or tank, definite amounts of freshly-

burned lime—the amount to be added in the case of a particular water being determined by the hardness of the water. Clark's rule was to mix with every 100,000 gallons of the water 6 lbs. of the freshly-burned lime for each degree of hardness found. The rationale of the process depends upon the fact that the lime and magnesian salts which constitute the hardness being kept in solution in the water by excess CO_2, the added lime oxide unites with the CO_2 to form fresh carbonate of lime; and thus the newly-formed carbonates, along with the carbonates which are now thrown out of solution, which at first cause the water treated as above to assume a milky appearance, are allowed to settle to the bottom of the tank. The clear, supernatant water, after passing over an artificial weir or water-fall, by which it is re-aerated by the gases of the atmosphere, now passes into the service-reservoir, and thence is distributed to the consumers. But for necessity, therefore, no populous place would choose a hard water if a wholesome soft water could be obtained.

CHAPTER XVII.

WATER SUPPLY (*Continued*)—CHARACTERISTICS OF POTABLE WATERS—EFFECTS OF IMPURE WATER ON HEALTH.

A PURE and wholesome water ought to be (1) colourless; (2) tasteless; (3) odourless; (4) bright, sparkling, and clear; (5) to have little mineral substance in solution; and (6) to be without organic contamination.

Except the purest rain water, an absolutely colourless water does not exist in nature. Most potable waters have a certain degree of colour when viewed *en masse*. The tints of colour usually vary from bluish to yellowish; the former in chalky waters, the latter in peaty waters from upland lakes. Upon rare occasions a greenish hue is observed in water taken from rivers, reservoirs, or lakes infested with pond-weed, which is due to the dissolved green colouring matter of the plants. Water of a reddish tint betokens iron. Good water is palatable, does not possess any distinct taste. But palatability may be found in an impure water. This characteristic depends upon the presence of the atmospheric gases in the water; when water is boiled, and these gases are driven off, the water becomes insipid to the average palate. Actual taste in a water can only be imparted either (1) by contamination, or (2) by an unusual amount of mineral substances—as in mineral waters. We have examined a

water which tasted of petroleum, due to accidental contamination of the reservoir with the refuse from a paraffin work. The substance which, in smallest amount, imparts taste to a water, is iron, the amount being one-fifth grain per gallon. Lime salts do not impart a taste to water till they exist in amounts from 10 to 25 grains per gallon. Before common salt can be tasted, it must be present to the extent of 75 grains per gallon. Certain water plants impart a bitter taste.

Good water has no smell. Certain mineral waters have a disagreeable odour owing to free sulphur gases. Water, however, may be accidentally contaminated by fæcal matters, or by coal gas, which are revealed by the odour. We once examined a water which smelled of coal gas. The best way to detect an odour is to heat the water in a wide-mouthed, glass-stoppered bottle two-thirds full of the sample, and then quickly to remove the stopper. No water is usable which has a perceptible odour.

A water which has no colour, taste, or smell is usually also bright, sparkling, and clear. But this last feature is often found in contaminated waters; hence not much reliance must be placed on this single characteristic, as gases of decomposition may simulate the appearance of atmospheric gases. The presence of lime and magnesia may be predicated by the hardness or softness. The "usability" of a water does not so much depend upon the amount of the mineral and other substances present—although to some extent it is a determining factor—as upon their nature. Certain of them are considered as indicative of animal contamination; and the amounts found which are sufficient to condemn a water are, comparatively speaking, infinitesimal. They act as the danger

signal. Such are the chlorides, the nitrates, the salts of ammonia, and organic matter. They are not hurtful *per se*, but they often point to organic impurity, to sewage contamination, and to likely accompanying hurtful elements. All waters which contain organic matter are suspicious until it be determined whether the source of it is animal or vegetable; the latter, except when considerable, being comparatively innocuous. Animal organic impurity is dangerous.

All the foregoing considerations point to the need for continuous and careful examination of water supplies, both chemical and biological; and also, for prudent deliberation in the introduction of a new supply, both in respect of (1) purity, and (2) adequacy and continuity of supply.

EFFECTS OF IMPURE WATER ON HEALTH.

Impurities in water apt to affect health are divisible into two classes, viz. (1) those which have their source in filth or sewage contamination, and (2) those due to the nature and amount of mineral constituents. The second class is usually of lesser vital importance than the first. From the former may arise dysentery, cholera, enteric fever, and diarrhœal diseases. Not many years ago, about 20,000 inhabitants of Hull were more or less affected by reason of ditch water finding its way into the supply reservoir, and about 1000 cases of enteric fever occurred in Kidderminster from the accidental leakage of a sewer into the public water supply. From a newly manured field, the surface drainage entering a water supply, 400 cases of the same disease resulted; and a like outbreak, although not so extensive, attributed to Glasgow manure, occurred near Irvine, in the West of Scotland. Water

contaminated with the specific microbe of enteric fever and mixed with milk has been the provocative cause of several epidemics of this disease in Glasgow and elsewhere. In fact, the farmyard well has done more to propagate this disease in cities than any other single cause, if not indeed than all causes put together. Hitherto, too little attention has been paid to the sanitation of farmyards, either in respect of milk storage or of risks of milk pollution. Cisterns for fresh water are apt, through careless or ignorant plumbing, to become contaminated. We have seen cases to which illness from this cause was clearly traceable, and at Caius College, Cambridge, where an outbreak of enteric fever among the students occurred, the same cause obtained. From the foregoing, therefore, it will be observed that a water supply is apt to become polluted (1) at the source of supply; (2) during conveyance; or (3) at the point of distribution. To avoid contamination it is necessary to select a "gathering ground" for the water supply removed as far as possible from the haunts of men, and to safeguard it against sources of pollution.

Cholera is most usually a water-borne disease. The recent outbreaks at Hamburg and elsewhere demonstrate the relation between this disease and a water contaminated by the specific microbe. A pure water supply, therefore, is the first and best line of defence against cholera.

Certain parasitical diseases which affect man are so traceable to water which contains the ova of certain parasites. Intestinal worms have, not infrequently, this origin, and are found both in man and in the lower animals. During the tunnelling of Mount Gothard many of the workmen were seized with intestinal

hæmorrhages, which, after investigation, were found to have been caused by a microscopic leechlike parasite, named *Ankylostomum duodenale,* in the drinking water.

The mineral constituents of water, when abundant, are apt to create not only discomfort but actual disease. It is sometimes difficult to believe that alterations in diet or physical surroundings affect health, and it is equally so to think that the mere change of water supply may be the cause of actual illness. Persons who, for nine or ten months of the year, use soft water for drinking purposes and in the preparation of food, are very liable at first to gastro-intestinal disturbance when they remove for a summer holiday to a district where the water is hard. This is a common experience. Constipation alternating with diarrhœa, or continuous diarrhœa is a common effect until acclimatisation is effected. Certain diseases have been for ages attributed to the constant use of hard water. "Derbyshire neck," or goître, is one of these, and cretinism—chiefly found in Switzerland—is another; they are not infrequently found associated. By some observers they are said to be due to the sulphates of lime and magnesia, and by others to certain metallic sulphides, notably that of iron. In Switzerland, the Himalayas, Cochin China, and the Pyrenees, cretinism, which consists of a certain rickety condition of the bones of the body associated with mental imbecility, is by no means uncommon. A French Commission appointed to inquire into this subject obtained some striking evidence on the matter, as, for instance, the following: In 1848, in a town called Bozel, of a population of 1472 persons, 900 had gôitre and 109 were cretins, while the population of a village, St. Bon, situated about 1100 yards higher than Bozel, was absolutely free from both diseases. Each place

had a different water supply, that of the former being a "hard" water containing magnesium and lime sulphate, that of the latter a "soft" water. A pipe was laid from St. Bon to Bozel conveying this soft supply. Sixteen years after—1864—Bozel only contained 39 gôitrous persons and 58 cretins. While the connection between hard water and gôitre is so close, it has not yet been absolutely determined that lime and magnesium salts are alone the causative agents. But they have this connection, although their physiological operation in the body is still obscure. Recent researches, however, go to indicate the origin of gôitre in a blood parasite. Vegetable matter —principally from peat—when present in amount may give rise to gastro-intestinal catarrh, but more serious mischief is not likely to follow. The most dangerous accidental constituent of a water of the mineral type is lead, soluble salts of which are not infrequently found in natural peaty waters of acid reaction. The acidity arises, it is believed, from the action of microbes upon the peaty organic matter. The organic acids thus formed attack lead pipes. This plumbo-solvent action, as it is called, may be overcome by adding to the water in the reservoir sufficient lime or carbonate of soda to neutralise the acidity.

CHAPTER XVIII.

DETECTION OF IMPURITIES IN WATER—MODES OF PURIFICATION OF WATER.

THE impurities of a water may consist of (1) particulate matters in suspension, (2) organic matter, or (3) mineral substances in solution, derived from organic and inorganic sources. Suspended matters may entirely, and organic matter partially, be removed by adequate filtration. Let us meanwhile deal with the impurities dissolved in the water. Their detection falls within the domain of the chemist; but without trenching unduly in his field, it may be pardonable if intelligent persons should desire a little knowledge of the subject—sufficient, at least, to enable them to sound a note of alarm. As chemical solutions nowadays can be purchased ready made for testing, the mere operation of testing becomes mechanical; the difficulty emerging at interpretation of the results of the tests. The impurities to be looked for are those which are animal in origin, and may be taken, when found in amount, as evidence of sewage contamination. They are liable to be present in waters from surface wells, owing to soakage thereinto of excrementitious fluids. There are three substances which are not difficult to detect, which, too, when found in notable quantity, in waters from certain sources, point indubitably to animal pollution. These are *chlorides, ammonia,* and *organic matter.* Urine is their common source. Sodium chloride

—common salt—is always abundant in healthy urine. So is urea, which, when acted upon by a microbe, is decomposed into salts of ammonia. Of themselves they are not harmful, but owing to their common association with more potent factors for ill they may be taken as danger signals.

Chlorides may be detected by adding to a test tube, half full of the water to be examined, a few drops of a dilute solution of nitrate of silver (lunar caustic) and a like amount of dilute nitric acid. A white haze, or turbidity, or precipitate indicates chlorides, and the denser the haze the larger the amount of chlorides. A marked haze indicates a suspicious amount.

Ammonia is detected by adding in a similar tube a few drops of Nessler's solution. If ammonia be present a yellowish or yellowish-red colour will develop, the colour deepening in intensity with the amount of ammonia present. A marked yellow colour indicates danger. Each of these reactions is best seen by looking down through the column of water in the test tube; in the first against a dark ground, and in the second against a white surface: and by placing alongside a second test tube, filled with water to the same level, but to which the chemicals have not been added, the slightest difference in colour may then be detected.

The presence of organic matter points to contamination from animal sources if the chlorides and ammonia are present in notable quantities. Organic matter is detected by a weak solution of Condy's fluid, made by adding two drops of Condy to half a teacupful of pure water. Of this add four drops to a test tube containing water, with one drop of dilute sulphuric acid, and warm contents of tube. The pink colour disappears if organic matter, either vegetable or animal in origin, is present.

TABLE III.

TABLE SHOWING TESTS FOR QUALITATIVE ANALYSIS OF ORDINARY DRINKING WATER.

Physical appearances: 1. Colour, 2. Taste, 3. Odour, 4. Suspended matter, } to be tested against equal quantities of distilled water.

Substances Tested for.	Reagents.	Effects Produced.	Remarks.
Chemical reaction.	Methyl-orange.	Yellow colour, if alkaline; reddish-pink, if acid.	Compare with distilled water.
Lime.	Strong solution, or powdered crystals } of ammonium oxalate, + NH_3.	White haze, turbidity, or ppt.	Five grains per gallon give decided turbidity.
Magnesia.	Add excess of NH_3 and strong solution of sodium phosphate, with NH_4Cl.	Slowly-forming crystalline ppt. of ammon. magnes. phosphate, hastened by stirring.	
Chlorine (as chlorides).	$AgNO_3$ + dilute HNO_3.	White haze, turbidity, or ppt. of AgCl.	One grain per gallon gives decided haze; four grains, marked turbidity.

TABLE SHOWING TESTS FOR QUALITATIVE ANALYSIS OF ORDINARY DRINKING WATER—*continued.*

Substances Tested for.	Reagents.	Effects Produced.	Remarks.
Sulphuric acid (as sulphates).	$BaCl$ + dilute HCl.	White haze, turbidity, or ppt. of $BaSO_4$.	Two grains per gallon give slowly-forming haze; three grains, immediate haze.
Sulphides, or Hydrogen Sulphide.	1. Acetate of lead. 2. Copper sulphate.	Dark discoloration due to PbS, or CuS.	Observable when sulphides or H_2S are markedly present, and in long columns of water.
	3. $NaHO$ + Nitro-prusside of sodium.	Violet coloration.	Traces discovered by this test.
Ammonia (NH_3).	Nessler's solution.	Yellowish, or yellowish-brown coloration.	Detects minute quantities.
Nitrites (in combination).	1. Zinc iodide and starch solution + dilute H_2SO_4.	Blue coloration due to formation of starch-iodide. $ZnI_2 + 2KNO_2 + 2H_2SO_4 = I_2 + ZnSO_4 + K_2SO_4 + 2NO + 2H_2O$.	One part in fifty millions of water may thus be detected.
	2. Weak acid solution of metaphenylamine diamine + dilute H_2SO_4.	Yellowish-brown, or dark-brown colour.	Reaction appears slowly.
	3. Sulphanilic acid (solution in acetic acid) + naphylamine acetate.	Beautiful pink or rose-pink colour.	Reaction appears slowly.

TABLE SHOWING TESTS FOR QUALITATIVE ANALYSIS OF ORDINARY DRINKING WATER—*continued.*

Substances Tested for.	Reagents.	Effects Produced.	Remarks.
Nitric acid (as nitrates).	1. Evaporate to dryness small quantity of sample; add two drops H_2SO_4 and a granule of brucine. 2. Solution of diphenylamine in H_2SO_4 + strong H_2SO_4. 3. Evaporate water to dryness. Add five drops of phenol-sulphonic acid, a little distilled water, and solution of KHO in excess.	Rose colour, which afterwards becomes rainbow like. Blue colour. Yellow colour.	Detects one part in a million of water. The nitric acid is converted into picric acid, which forms with KHO the yellow salt of picrate of potash.
Phosphoric acid (as phosphates).	1. Add a little dilute HNO_3 to sample of water and evaporate to dryness. Heat residue cautiously, then dissolve in dilute HNO_3, and filter. To clear filtrate add twice the volume of warmed, strong molybdic solution. 2. Heisch's Test.—Add to water small quantity of sugar in a clear glass stoppered flask. Place flask in strong light, in a temperature of about 80° F. The phosphatic fungus develops, after some days, as minute bunches of grapes.	Yellow colour of ammonium phosphomolybdate.	Phosphoric acid is usually absent, except in sewage-contaminated waters. Coloration appears slowly.
Oxidisable organic matter.	Very weak solution of $KMnO_4$, acidified with H_2SO_4. Add a couple of drops to the water.	Pink colour disappears.	This reaction is due to the reduction of permanganic to manganic acid.

TABLE SHOWING TESTS FOR QUALITATIVE ANALYSIS OF ORDINARY DRINKING WATER—*continued.*

Substances Tested for.	Reagents.	Effects Produced.	Remarks.
Iron. Lead. Copper.	Differential detection— Add to sample NH_4HS = black coloration. Divide sample into two parts. To No. 1 add dilute HCl. Coloration disappears = iron. If coloration remains— To No. 2 add strong solution of potass. cyanide. Coloration disappears = copper. If coloration still remains = lead. Confirmatory tests :— Iron.—Acidify sample of water with HNO_3 and concentrate by boiling ; cool. Add a few drops of solution of potass. sulphocyanide (KCyS) = blood-red colour. Lead.—Concentrate water by evaporation. Add solution of potass. bichromate = yellow turbidity. Copper.—Concentrate as above and add solution of potass. ferrocyanide = mahogany-red colour.		
Zinc.	Add HNO_3 to water sample ; boil ; filter. To clear filtrate add potass. ferrocyanide.	White haze, turbidity, or ppt.	This test discovers the merest trace.
Arsenic.	Add to water large pinch of pure Na_2CO_3. Evaporate to dryness. Dissolve residue in small quantity of distilled water ; then add a few drops of pure HCl and two small pieces of pure copper foil. Boil.	Copper is stained with steel-grey deposit.	Considerable amounts of water must be evaporated and concentrated to obtain this reaction, even when arsenic is present.

GENERAL REMARKS :—

(1) When making comparisons between sample of water to which reagents have been added, and one without reagents, use columns of water of equal length in similar test tubes.

(2) When making observations of reactions, where the result is a white haze of turbidity, look down *through* the test tube against a *black* ground ; where the result is a darkened discoloration, or a yellow, blue, or pink colour, against a *white* ground.

PURIFICATION OF WATER.

Those impurities of water due to sewage contamination which are most dangerous to health are rendered innocuous by the simple operation of boiling the water before it is used. To make it palatable for drinking it should, after cooling, be re-aerated as follows: Pour the water forcibly from one vessel to another, in the open air, or by means of the rose of a watering-can, which by dividing the liquid into fine streams causes it more easily to reabsorb atmospheric gases. It should then be kept covered in a cool place, and, in summer, preferably in a porous earthenware jar.

Suspended matters, such as mineral matters, particles of floating substances, or even animate beings such as water insects, or, upon rare occasions, small fishes, or even small frogs, may find their way into the main supply pipes unless the water be strained or filtered at its source. The water of Loch Katrine is not filtered before distribution, and curious tenants are sometimes found in the water-pipes. Our neighbour experienced one a few years ago. The supply to the kitchen tap was suddenly and completely cut off, although it was as usual in the other parts of the house. On opening the pipe it was found that the cause of the obstruction was a small trout measuring about four and a half inches in length. It is difficult to say whether this fish made a subterranean voyage of thirty or seven miles, the respective distances of Loch Katrine and the reservoir.

Where suspended matters are present, filtration must be resorted to by the water companies. Filters are constructed on the grand scale, and the filtering materials commonly used are sand, small gravel, large gravel, shells,

and small boulders, in that order from above downwards, the respective thicknesses of the layers of each varying according to the opinion of the engineer. These filter-beds, in addition to straining suspended matter, remove to a considerable extent both organic matter and microbes, owing to biological action which takes place in the scum or jelly which forms on the surface of the filter-bed. This is purification on the large scale.

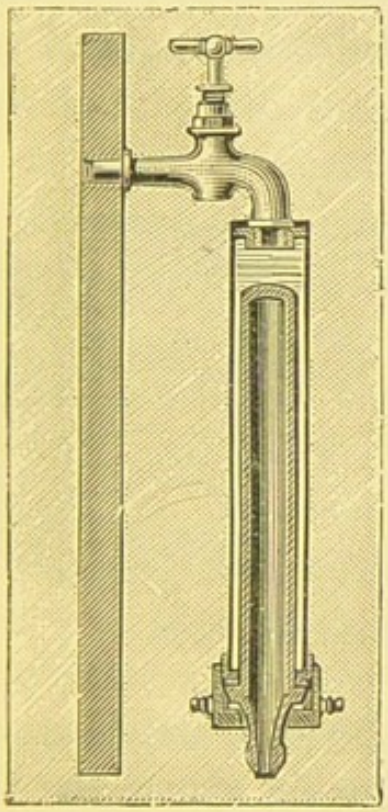


Fig. 34.—Chamberland Filter.

Fig. 35.—Porous "Bougies."

Household filters are the means adopted to purify on the small scale. Much has been written lately condemnatory of these filters in respect of their failure to achieve what is expected of them. They fail chiefly in not arresting microbes, and in respect that the filtering media are not cleansed often enough, they permit of the multiplication of such microbes—in short, become breeding grounds for these organisms. On the other hand,

if the filtering media be repurified at regular short intervals their action is quite safe. The media employed are: (1) Carbon, animal or vegetable, sand in powder or in block, iron, in some form, and asbestos. To purify the first and last named it is only necessary to subject them to the influence of fire, to a red heat, and the others by washing several times with boiling water. The only filters which do not permit the passage of microbes are the Pasteur-Chamberland and Berkefeldt filters, the former of which is made of tubes of unglazed porcelain,

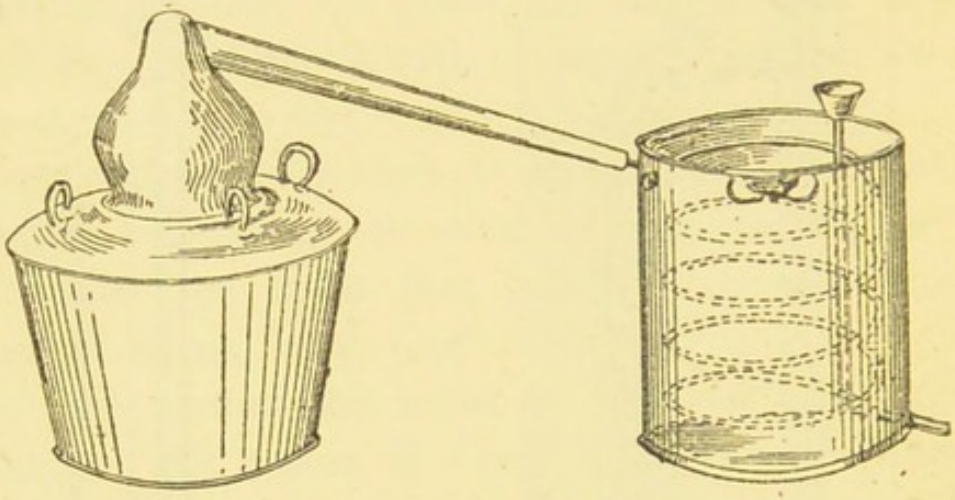


Fig. 36.—The Still and the Worm.

and the latter of tubes of compressed diatomaceous earth, spoken of as "bougies." Fig. 34 shows the Chamberland filter fixed in position on the water-tap, and Fig. 35 shows the porous "bougies" through which the water filters.

Distillation is another mode of purifying water, and is now commonly adopted in ocean-going steamers for the supply of potable water from sea water. This process ensures purity, and, after re-aeration, no better water can be had. It is nature's mode of supplying the earth with water.

Fig. 36 illustrates an apparatus for distilling. On the

left of the figure is the vessel containing the heat, on top of which is the retort containing the fluid to be distilled; this opens into the condensing apparatus, a tube or "worm" lying in a vessel containing cold water. The circular dotted parallel lines indicate the "worm," which presents, by its spiral form, a larger condensing surface. The distilled fluid escapes by the small tube at the bottom of the condenser.

To rid water of hardness-producing mineral substances —chiefly lime and magnesia—is of importance where it is necessary that a soft water only should be used, as in certain commercial operations. This may also be deemed a form of purification, inasmuch as materials are got rid of which, for the purpose intended, would be objectionable. Various processes, however, are now in use to effect the softening of water. Of these may be named the Porter-Clark, Howatson, Atkin, Stanhope, Lawrence, and the Desrumaux, the rationale of which is based upon that of the original Clark process, which has already been described. Of the processes named, that of Desrumaux aims to deprive water not only of temporary, but to some extent, also, of permanent hardness. But this purification is one of expediency more than of necessity.

CHAPTER XIX.

HOW WATER REACHES OUR HOMES—THE PUMP—GRAVITATION—THE SIPHON—THE HYDROMETER.

THE source of a water supply largely determines the mode by which water reaches the homes of the users. In wells, for example, there is a collection of water lying at the bottom of a shaft more or less deep, which, before it can be used, must be lifted. This is usually accomplished either by a windlass, or a hand-rope and bucket, or by a pump. Of the former not a word more need be said, but of the latter some explanation must be offered.

THE PUMP.

Every one is acquainted with the fact that, if an ordinary glass syringe is dipped into water and the piston pulled out, water will rise in the barrel. This is due to the difference of atmospheric pressure within the barrel at the moment of drawing the piston, and that on the surface of the water in the vessel from which it is drawn. The pressure being greater on the latter than in the former, the water is forced into the barrel, following the piston. In this simple experiment several of the points in the action of a pump are demonstrated. To Galileo and Torricelli we are indebted for our knowledge of pump-action. The ordinary pump is called the lifting

pump, or the suction pump. Figs. 37 and 38 will assist in the comprehension of the following explanation of the action of a pump. A pump consists of these essential parts, viz. (1) The piston, which runs in the pump-barrel; (2) the pump-barrel, within which the accurately fitting piston is moved up and down by the pump-handle, and from which the spout opens; (3) the pump-tube, which extends from the bottom of the pump-barrel to

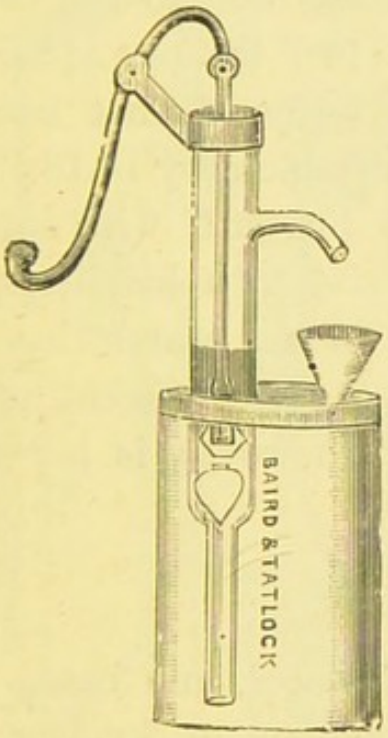


FIG. 37.

The Lifting Pump.

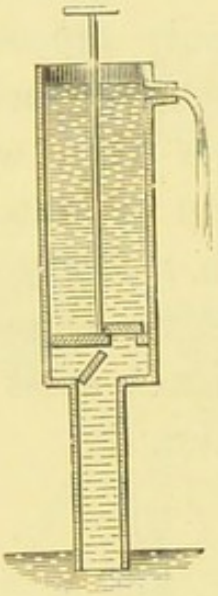


FIG. 38.

some depth in the water of the well; (4) the pump-handle, which moves the piston; and (5) certain valves, one in the piston, and one in the pump-tube. When the piston is raised the piston-valve is closed, because of the pressure of water above it, and water is forced out of the spout; at the same time the pump-tube valve is opened and water is forced into the barrel, as in the syringe, and for the same reason. When the piston has reached the highest point of the up-stroke, it is now made to descend

in the barrel, when the piston-tube valve opens and the pump-tube valve closes. By this alternate up and down movement of the piston by the pump-handle, therefore, the water is raised from the well into the pump, and from the pump-spout, vessels may be filled. Indeed, the operation is accomplished in less time than it takes to describe it. But the lifting pump can only raise water from a limited depth, which, in theory, is about 34 feet, but in practice, from 25 to 30 feet. This limit is due to the fact that ordinary atmospheric pressure (14·7 lbs. per square inch) can only support a column of water of that height, or 30 inches of mercury. And since mercury is 13·59 times heavier than water, the same pressure will support a column of water of the same size to a height equal to 30 in. × 13·59, viz. 34 feet. When water has to be raised from greater depths than this, different pumping apparatus must be used, which, however, is beyond our purview.

THE SIPHON.

Connected with the flow of water, and based on the same physical facts, is the instrument known as the siphon, which in its simplest form consists of a tube of glass or other material bent upon itself, one limb of the bend being longer than the other. This is of considerable use in ward work, where fluids consisting of layers of different densities require to be separated, or a fluid from a deposit, or in transferring antiseptic fluids from reservoirs to the operating table. Besides, it is used in the treatment of certain gastric diseases, and in emptying the contents of the stomach in cases of poisoning. To set the ordinary siphon in operation all that is necessary, provided the nature of the fluid permits, is to suck, or by

the use of a syringe to exhaust, the air out of the long limb of the siphon after placing the shorter limb in the vessel which contains the liquid, when the fluid will run out in a continuous stream until the level of the liquid

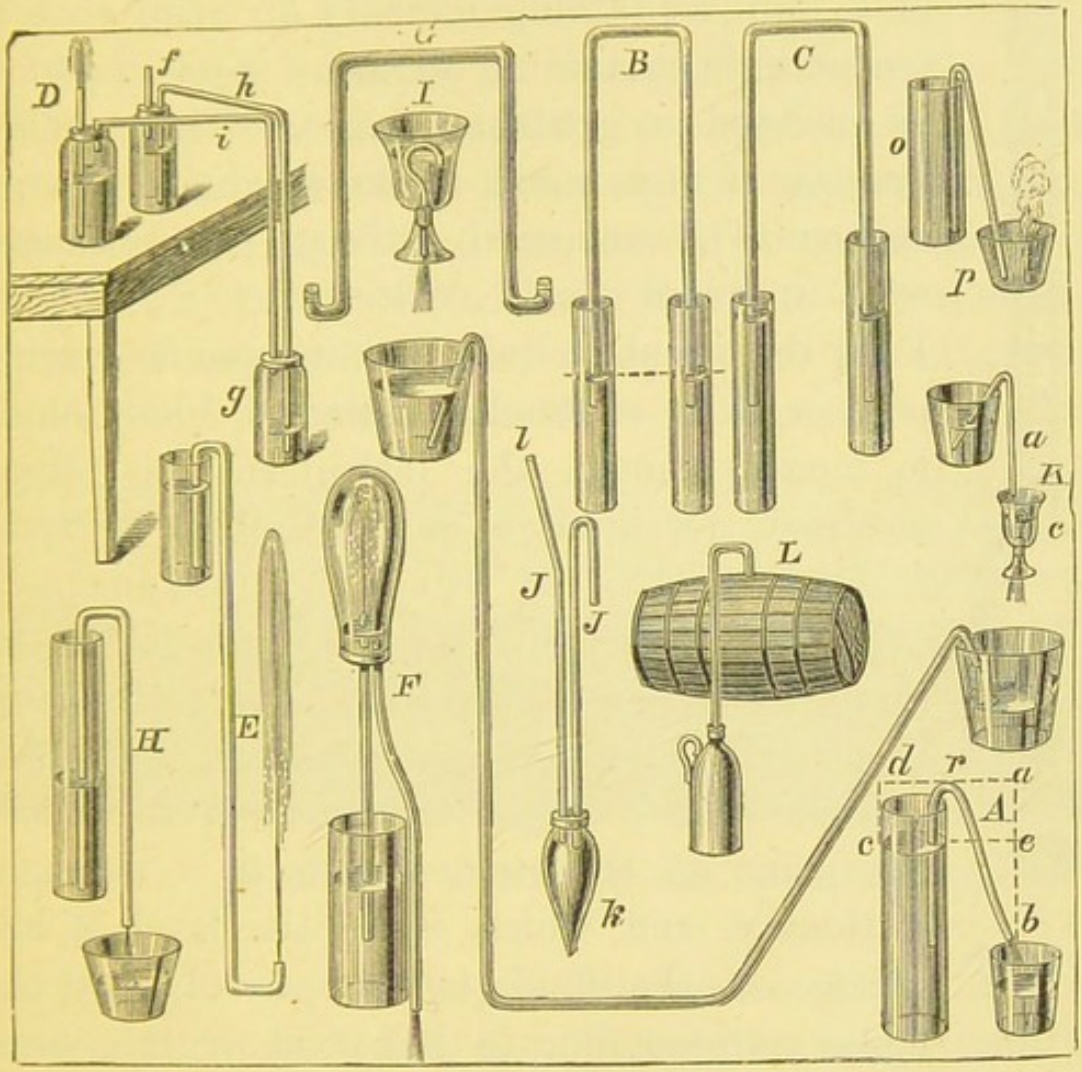


FIG. 39.—Different Forms and Uses of Siphons (from Fessenden's *Physics*).

A demonstrates the physical laws of the siphon; B, C, H, P and K, siphons for ordinary uses; G from its shape is always ready for use; J, for corrosive liquids; I, Tantalus cup; D and E, siphon fountains: L, action of siphon on contents of barrel.

in the vessel reaches the extremity of the tube. Fig. 39 shows the practical application of the instrument in various ways.

THE HYDROMETER.

Another instrument of use in hospital and private

nursing is the hydrometer, which is intended to show the specific gravity of fluids. Fig. 40 shows one form of the instrument. The ordinary urinometer—or hydrometer graduated for this fluid—is composed of a bulb containing mercury or small shot, a second bulb containing air, and a stem, in which is enclosed a graduated scale. The specific gravity of any liquid is the weight of a unit volume of it compared with an equal volume of a standard fluid. Water at 4° C., or 39·2° F., is the standard fluid, and its specific gravity is 1, or, as it is usually expressed, 1000; or, as is more common, the instrument is "standardised" for fluids at a temperature of 15·5° C., or 60° F. In using the instrument, a cylindrical vessel is filled two-thirds full of the liquid to be tested, into which the hydrometer is placed. The depth at which it will float depends on the weight or density of the fluid; the point on the stem at which it becomes stationary, and which is at the level of the surface of the fluid, is then noted, and the figure corresponding to that point written down. This registers the specific gravity of the fluid tested. Special instruments are made for special fluids, viz. the urinometer for urine, the lactometer for milk, the saccharometer for sugary liquids, and the oleometer for oils; and they are graduated within the limits of gravity or density known to be possessed by these different classes of fluid substances. In addition to being used for testing the specific gravity of urine, it is likewise used for fluids from tumours or from the natural cavities of the body. The lactometer, used for taking the specific gravity of milk,

FIG. 40.—Twaddell's Hydrometer.

is worse than useless as indicative of the purity of the sample, for reasons which space forbids us to enter upon.

SUPPLY BY GRAVITATION.

To return, however, to water supply to the house. When populous places are to be supplied from natural or artificial collections of water, the relative heights of the source of supply and the area of distribution become of importance. Water will run down hill whether in an open channel or in a pipe, owing to the law of gravity; hence such supplies are often designated *gravitation*

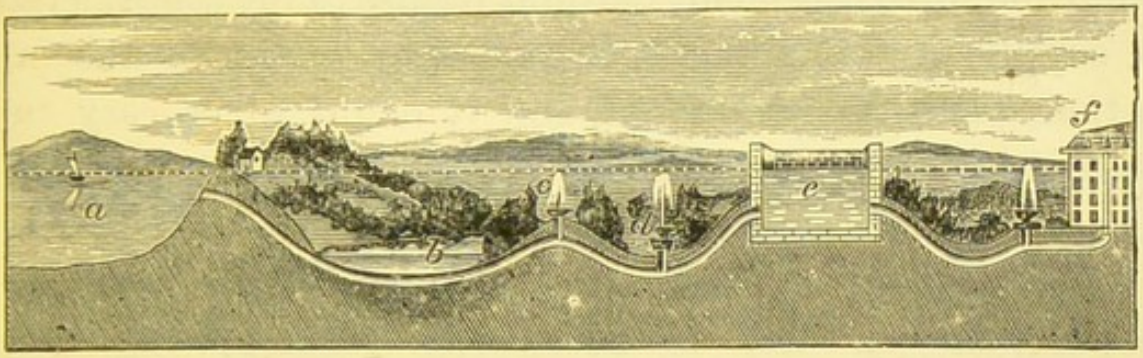


FIG. 41.—A Gravitation Water Supply (from Fessenden's *Physics*).

supplies. To be of the greatest service the level of the source must be some feet higher, at least, than the highest point of distribution, else the water will not rise to houses on this level. Sometimes, however, this cannot be avoided, and in such cases auxiliary pumping-stations must be erected to supply the higher levels. Fig. 41 illustrates in section a gravitation supply. From the lake, A, the dotted line being the level, the water flows under the river, B, into a reservoir, E, and from thence to the houses, F. Should, for any reason, the level of the water in the lake fall much, the top flats of the houses, F, would not be supplied because the pressure would be

insufficient, since the fall would be equally experienced in the reservoir, E.

From such gravitation supplies the supply to houses within the area of distribution is either continuous or constant, or intermittent, *i.e.* either on a tap at any time of the night or day, or for periodic intervals only in the course of the day. Adequacy of supply is the chief determining cause of this. Where water is abundant the constant supply prevails, where barely adequate, the intermittent. In the latter case it is necessary to erect house cisterns wherein to store water against the time when the main supply is cut off. This entails risks of pollution, with attendant harmful results to the consumers. A supply of water ought, therefore, to be continuous in action, plentiful in amount, and it ought to be easy to obtain by every householder, in order to contribute to cleanliness, both public and domestic.

The amount of water to be supplied per head of population per day is necessarily regulated by the abundance of supply. But there is a certain minimum which is necessary. The average adult needs for nutrition from 70 to 100 oz. daily. Each soldier in barracks is allowed 15 gallons daily. From 12 to 15 gallons per day may, therefore, be considered a fair minimum. The supply per individual may be apportioned as follows, viz. Dietetic: (1) cooking; (2) drink; Sanitary: (3) personal ablution; (4) cleansing of clothing; (5) as a vehicle for sewage.

In towns the amount per head per day ranges from 20 to 300 gallons, many towns in England giving the former, and New York the latter amount. These amounts cover a variety of purposes, viz. personal and domestic cleanliness, including baths and closets, animal

nutrition and cleansing, municipal and manufacturing uses. The citizen of London receives, on the average, 28 gallons daily; of Liverpool, 30; of Paris, 31; of Edinburgh, 35; of Glasgow, 50; and of Rome, 100. These are typical city supplies.

CHAPTER XX.

PERSONAL HABITS IN RELATION TO HEALTH—HEREDITARY AND ACQUIRED.

It may be said that the personal habits of a people find their reflex in the standard of national health. These habits, if objectionable, may be minimised or intensified, however, by the geographical position which the particular country occupies, and by other factors. This becomes still more true of the inhabitants of certain districts of populous places which are the habitats and resorts of the vicious, the thriftless, the lazy, and the dirty. Such places are deplorable blots on the social landscape, and no scheme of amelioration has as yet solved the problem of successfully overcoming the evils caused by them.

The cardinal point around which personal and public health revolves is cleanliness—of the person, of food, and of the home. Probably the oldest sanitary code in existence is that which was enacted during the Mosaic Dispensation, and which is carried out to this day by all faithful Jews in whatever part of the world they are situated. It would be well for hygiene if the injunctions laid down in that code could be carried out, if not in their entirety, at least in large measure, as part of the religion of all peoples. In the forefront of it stands cleanliness—individual, dietetic, and domestic; and there is no doubt that the longevity and general excellent standard of health

of Jews are to be attributed to the observance of the laws laid down in the Bible and the Talmud. The plentiful use of water, the frequent bathing of the person, the cleansing and disinfection of the home, and many like important rules, are prominent injunctions of the Mosaic code.

Personal cleanliness ought not, at this time of day, to be a doctrine which needs to be inculcated; unfortunately, however, it is one which still requires to be taught and enforced. The bulk of persons have much to learn regarding the physiology of the skin; when the fact is considered that millions of sweat and oil glands open on the surface of the body, it will be at once apparent that cleanliness is essential to the proper performance of their function. If it be unattended to, a greater share of work than ought to be is thrown upon certain of the internal organs—notably, the kidneys—from which disease is apt to arise. The proverbial saying of John Wesley that "cleanliness is next to godliness" would read better if it were put that "cleanliness is part of godliness." Dust and "dirt" are two things against which every cleanly housewife wages constant warfare. When the former is examined microscopically, it is found to consist of a large variety of particulate substances which are the products of the tear and wear of our bodies, and of objects around us. Dust always contains micro-organisms, and every dark, dusty corner harbours a large number. The prevalent mode of dry dusting is simply a farce, and consists only in dislocating the dust from the place on which it lies, into the atmosphere of the room, again to settle in a new place after the atmospheric disturbance has subsided. It is time that this method should give place to moist dusting by a damp cloth. It may mean more trouble, but

it is worth it. Another old-fashioned method of sweeping a carpet, previously sprinkled over with moist spent tea leaves, is infinitely preferable to the more modern sweeping-made-easy machines of American origin. There is an old Scottish proverb, which must have descended from prehistoric times, which says, "The clartier" (*i.e.* the dirtier) "the cosier." The followers of this precept have long since realised its falsity, for the Nemesis of insanitation has overtaken them. Fifty years ago, all over this kingdom, typhus fever raged as a plague. Even then it was pointed out that the plague raged worst in the dirtiest places. Now, owing to the forward march of sanitation, it is a comparatively rare disease.

A dirty person is usually a careless, a thriftless, and very often a vicious person who is regardless of his responsibility to his relatives and to his neighbour. In a population composed of such persons sickness is more prevalent, and death-rates are always high.

Cleanliness in feeding is not only conducive to personal comfort, but it tends to prolong life. Good cooking of the humblest fare will nourish, while imperfect uncleanly cooking of even the best will but provoke mischief. Flesh meat is probably the most common vehicle of parasitic disease. To avoid this, the Mosaic code laid down the strictest injunctions, and in the Talmud no fewer than 86 chapters, divided into 642 paragraphs, are devoted to this subject. So long as the present imperfect system of meat inspection obtains in this country, all flesh meat should be thoroughly cooked, that is, till the fire has acted on every part of it. Thorough cooking renders parasitic germs innocuous. Cold pies of all sorts, brawn, corned beef, sausages, and "tinned" meats, have, at times, occasioned serious and sometimes fatal illnesses. Pies which are

intended to be eaten cold should have two good-sized vent-holes in the crust. This lessens the chances of putrefaction. Putrefactive micro-organisms, which find the "jelly" of the meat an excellent feeding ground, are prevented from thriving, by reason of the plentiful admission of air. Tinned meats only become dangerous when air has been admitted by a pin-hole opening some time prior to the time of using, and for the above reasons also. Care, therefore, should be exercised in the purchase of "canned" goods. A wholesome "can" should have its top and bottom tending inwards towards the centre of the "can," and should not emit a "crackling" sound when pressed by the finger. Any "can" which evidences the opposite of these characteristics ought to be rejected. These are, apparently, trifling facts, but they are very important, nevertheless.

CLEANLINESS OF THE HOME.

The cleanly person has a cleanly home, and the reverse is equally true. In addition, the dirty person and the dirty home menace, to some extent, the health and life of the neighbour. All the sanitary Acts are aimed against the careless and negligent, which terms are often synonymous with the dirty person. This is especially true of the spread of infectious disease from the home and school. Cleanliness of the home necessarily includes particular attention to the bath-room and water-closet.

VICIOUS HABITS not only operate prejudicially on the health of the individual practisers, but, in the mass, they produce fruits in high mortality of offspring, in shortened lives generally, and in high death-rates. If we were to particularise regarding those habits which are most harmful, we should name (1) abuse of alcohol; (2) of tobacco;

(3) of tea; and (4) immorality, as among the chief. Alcohol, in some form, has been manufactured by every nation of the earth, and from aboriginal times.

OCCUPATIONAL HABITS.

It may fairly be said that there is hardly any occupation which is unattended by some objectional habit on the part of those employed. Such habits may be divided into two classes, viz. (1) those which are postural or attitudinal, owing to the position assumed by the worker, and which, too, are difficult to avoid; and (2) those which are only incidental to the occupation, and which might be avoided. Of the former class are those where the employment compels the worker to assume a cramped or constrained attitude. Clerks, handloom weavers, authors, glovers, lacemakers, and shoemakers are instances; the stooping posture of the clerk or author at his desk, the pressure on the chest of the weaver or the shoemaker, by the loom and the "last" respectively, sooner or later provoke illness. Of the latter class are enervating occupations, such as are carried on in chemical or iron works, where heat is intense, or in badly ventilated workshops; these invite the use of alcoholic stimulants and tend to cause habits of intemperance. This is especially true of persons engaged in the manufacture, transport, or sale of alcohol. The mere negligence to clean the hands in such occupations as plumbing, type-setting, glazing, pottery-dipping, etc., accounts for much lead-poisoning.

HEREDITY AND ITS INFLUENCE ON HEALTH.

Each of us is the product of his or her ancestors. Each has had handed down as the legacy of his birth some

of the physical, mental, and moral characteristics not only of the parents, but also of the grandparents, and of the ancestral line backwards. Regarding the transmission of the two former characteristics all are agreed. That moral defects are also hereditary, although doubted by some, is also now generally acknowledged. The children of depraved parents, who themselves were of similar stock, are likely to betray tendencies to kindred depravities; hence our dipsomaniacs from a drunken stock, and our moral delinquents from a theftuous ancestry. It is a difficult question, however, to determine in such cases how much of the delinquency is due to example, and how much to transmitted tendency. When we come to the possibility of transmission of disease from parent to child, it will be seen how hereditary conditions may affect the health of a population. In most of the diseases commonly believed to be transmissible, it ought to be remembered that it is not always the disease itself, but the tendency or vulnerability which is transmitted. All that is transmitted is the predisposition or cell-impression, and this makes the individual more liable to contract the disease when exposed to it under certain conditions. For example, the child of gouty ancestors may avoid the disease by a careful and constant attention to diet and regimen. Intermarriage with kindred blood, with and between weakly persons, and more so between diseased persons, is the cause of much transmitted tendency to disease. The marriage laws of the Australian aborigines, or of the American Indians, might well be copied by the civilised peoples of to-day, as they entirely prevented such contingencies. The physical aspects of marriage have not received the consideration they deserve, and if but a tithe of the care expended in the breeding of healthy stock were shown in our marriage

relations, there would be much less disease resulting. State control can have no part or lot, however, in the attainment of this. Education, only, regarding the attendant evils of improper marriages may effect a change, but such will be achieved but slowly, since so many other considerations enter into the choice of a life-partner.

CHAPTER XXI.

EXERCISE—REST—RELAXATION—IN RELATION TO MAINTENANCE OF HEALTH.

THE animal body is a machine built and fitted for the generation, storage, and expenditure of energy. Like other machines of a complicated kind, the various parts do not only perform their work in their own special way, but they have a correlation with one another, and with the entire machine. Linking together the mind and the body is the nervous system, by which the will may send from the brain to muscle messages with lightning speed. When, for instance, it is desired to bend the elbow, a message is sent to the biceps muscle by means of the nerves which cause this muscle to contract, and the necessary action is produced. During contraction the muscles become harder and thicker, whereas during relaxation, they become softer. In this simple movement there is expenditure of energy, because work has been done. Regular use of muscles produces an increase in their bulk and strength. For this reason, the arm of the blacksmith becomes "brawny," and his muscles "strong as iron bands." This condition of a muscle—when increased in size proportionally to the general muscular standard of the body—is called hypertrophy (Greek, *hyper* — over, and *trophē* — nutrition). During the process of enlargement of the muscle the supply of nutriment is greater than the waste, hence

there is growth; and when the maximum growth has been attained this supply must be equal to the waste, hence there is maintenance of condition. On the other hand, if the expenditure of energy be continuously greater than the muscle can bear, another condition may come on called atrophy (Greek, *a*—under; *trophē*—nutrition). Here the waste is greater than the supply of nutriment. Complete inaction of a muscle induces the same state, as in a limb which has been "up" in splints for a length of time.

From these facts, then, we may gather two principles for our guidance, viz. first, that over-exercise is harmful, and, second, that under-exercise is equally baneful; and as a natural corollary follows the additional principle that adequate exercise is necessary for the maintenance of bodily health. It is approximately true that in health the excretory products are equal to the waste of the body, due to the expenditure of energy, and to the excess of food taken. If an amount of food be taken which enables a healthy man to sustain hard labour over a period of time, the supply will probably just equal the demand; but if an enforced period of inactivity follow with the same supply of nutriment, the supply will become greater than the demand, the elimination of effete products less complete, and, sooner or later, discomfort or illness will follow. Exercise increases the functional activity of every organ of the body. The number of respirations per minute is increased, consequently the amounts of CO_2, watery vapour, and organic matter from the lungs are also increased; and, in like manner, the functions of the skin, kidneys, liver, and stomach become more active. This usually leads to development of appetite, by the amount of which the food supply required by the body is, or ought to be, regulated.

The practical aspects of exercise and work are of great importance. From the physiological point of view it matters little whether the energy expended be in pleasure or business. The two main evils of to-day are over-training on the one hand, and insufficient exercise on the other. Successful training ought to consist in the attainment of maximum muscular development compatible with health. This is not the same for all men, but is relative to the individual. We cannot all be Samsons; at the same time, the man of small physique may be stronger muscularly than he of larger bulk. Over-training involves great risks to health. It involves undue strain on the heart and large blood-vessels; hence athletes of all classes, whether of the field, of the ring, or of the river, are most liable to break down from diseases of these organs. But under-exercise is probably the more prevailing evil. Temptations are all in this direction. The railway-train, the omnibus, the tramcar, and penny steamer have all been invented to save time, which, to-day, in the race for wealth, has a money value. It is difficult to convince the eager business man that walking to business will pay him better in the end than any of the aforementioned modes of progression. The leisurely business man in the end accomplishes more than his colleague who rushes through his business day at high pressure. The increasing nervous diseases, the flow of insanity, the sudden deaths from heart diseases, and many crippled lives from other causes are the costs of this unceasing restlessness.

Exercise for the young is all-important. Out-of-door games of all kinds, suitable to the physique and temperament, ought to be encouraged. Usually children adapt themselves to the kind of exercise most suited to them.

Sex is not now the barrier it formerly was in the prevention of girls and women taking part in athletic exercises. Tennis, cricket, croquet, golf, fishing, cycling, and even shooting, now form the pastime of both sexes. Walking is the only general form of exercise which threatens to become a lost art in our city populations; and yet there is no more healthful form of exercise. A walking tour, to a person in training, amid picturesque scenery, is one of the most invigorating of holidays. A day on the river, rod in hand, is a stimulant of the most bracing character; and the like is true of the round of golf on the upland links, or the game on the bowling green. Persons who work in confined positions, those of sedentary occupation, can maintain good health by walking, by moderate gymnastic exercises, or by any of the aforementioned modes. All work and no play makes Jack not only a dull, but also an unhealthy boy. The healthy mind in the healthy body can only be attained and maintained by consideration being paid to the needs of both brain and muscle respectively, and in ratio to the relative calls upon each.

REST.

After labour comes rest. Exertion brings with it the sense of fatigue, which is nature's signal for rest, and for the need of nutrition. Every machine has a natural term of life, and this is as true of a locomotive as of a man. The tear and wear, which eventually cannot be repaired, render the machine useless. In a man, expenditure of energy of brain, or body, or both, calls for rest. The close inter-association of brain and body means that fatigue of the one involves, to a certain extent, fatigue of the other. In unskilled labour there is greater expenditure of muscular

than mental energy; in skilled, there is expenditure of both. In the mental worker the energy expended is principally nervous, and little or none of it muscular.

Rest, therefore, for these classes of workers, is but a relative term. The manual worker needs bodily rest; the mental, brain rest. In the former, moderate mental action, as in reading, would be beneficial, and in the latter, moderate muscular action is required. Change of mental labour is a form of rest, for there is a certain sense of relief experienced in changing the field of study. But this is only temporary; for, after all, while the current of thought is changed, it is but switching the current into a new channel, and the thought-generating machine is working all the while. Rest of any organ depends largely upon its function, both as to amount and kind. In walking we do not hop upon both legs at once, as does the kangaroo, and in the alternate use of the limbs, nutrition and alternation of energy-expenditure take place. Even the heart, though constantly in action, has its periods of rest in the momentary pauses between each beat; and special provision has been made for rest of the brain in sleep.

Rest is the animal expression of relief from the sense of fatigue. The tired animal, like the tired man, lies down to rest its weary limbs.

Relaxation, however, is only possible to the thinking animal, man. During relaxation there is a certain amount of expenditure of mental or bodily energy, or both, but it partakes of a form which is only calculated to divert the mind or titillate the senses. We look at pictures, we converse, listen to lectures or music, or attend the theatre, from the sense of pleasure these things produce. Rest and relaxation, therefore, are

inseparably linked together when one dissociates himself from the business of his life, but they may not be present in equal degree at the same time. The object of both, however, is *re-creation.* The fitful daily periods of rest and relaxation from daily toil doubtless serve a useful purpose, but they are unsuited entirely to sustain the body healthfully over long periods of continuous work. Holidays ought to form part of the scheme of life of every man, and they ought to be for him holy-days, set apart as religiously for the duty of physical recreation as his Sabbaths are for spiritual recreation. Especially is this true for the denizens of populous places, but periods of respite from work are equally necessary for all. A holiday conduces to better health and longer life, and if it be devoted to the regeneration of the mind and body in the contemplation of nature or art, the works of God or those of man, accompanied the while by agreeable physical exercise, it will achieve this purpose. "Hobbies" and "fads," of whatever kind, are most healthful and helpful. They exercise a beneficial reactive influence in taking the individual out of the rut of routine, and they make the wheels of life go more smoothly. Whatever the form, be it carpentering, model making, photography, book or stamp collecting, autograph hunting, chemistry, or any other kindred science, such as botany or geology, let the hobby be pursued leisurely, profitably, and consecutively, and let it contrast as much as possible with the serious business of life. For the mental worker, let it be an occupation of the hands, which will cultivate skill, and which can best be carried out in the open air. His object ought to be to allow the brain to lie fallow for a season, and to reasonably develop his bodily physique against the time he returns to his pen and his books.

CHAPTER XXII.

SLEEP—HYPNOTISM—IDIOSYNCRASIES—IN RELATION TO HEALTH.

THE state of sleep is characteristic of all animated nature, and a kindred phenomenon is observable in many plants. During this state the expenditure of nervous and muscular energy in animals is repaired against a new period of work. With the ordinary phenomena of sleep all are practically acquainted, and they need not now be discussed. But there are certain attendant physiological conditions which are not generally understood. The predisposing causes of sleep may be summed up in the following, viz. (1) muscular or mental fatigue, or both; (2) a condition of quietness and rest; and (3) an attitude of muscular inactivity. Generally speaking, muscular fatigue can be repaired during the waking condition by resting the muscles. But the brain is in activity during the whole waking period. It therefore must be considered in two aspects, viz. (1) simply as one of the organs of the body, the waste of which requires to be repaired; and (2) as an organ having special and peculiar functions to perform, and which demands a special and peculiar mode of repair. Obviously, sleep has to do with the nutrition of the brain as a thinking and perceptive organ. During the whole period of wakefulness, whether in ideation, by emotions, sensations,

impressions, or voluntary acts, through the channels of the sense organs, the brain is in constant activity. Hence in courting sleep we assume, as far as is possible, an attitude of body which is least liable to disturb the fading consciousness; thus we lie down, shut our eyes, and choose a quiet place that our sense of hearing may not be kept active. Habit may modify these conditions, and man is able to adapt himself to conditions quite dissimilar from those mentioned. In going to sleep, all of the senses do not go to sleep at the same time. Sight goes first in shutting our eyes, taste next, then smelling, then hearing, and last of all, the sense of touch. Neither does the body, as a whole, go to sleep at once. It begins at the points furthest from the centres of nerve control. It is for this reason that cold feet operate as a grievous hindrance to sleep. Certain physiological changes occur in the action of the heart, in the respiration, and in the bodily temperature. The number of heart-beats per minute is diminished; in like manner the respiratory action is less frequent; and a fall takes place in the bodily temperature usually about 1° Fahr.

CAUSATION OF SLEEP.

Many theories have been propounded regarding the proximate cause of sleep. We will briefly consider one or two of these. Since all theorists are agreed that the object of sleep is the recuperation of brain and nerve energy, an important factor is the condition of the blood circulation of that organ. Round this several theories cluster. One of the very oldest and one of the most recent of these, consider that venous congestion of the brain is the cause. Another, which is supported by many

observers, and by not a little experimental research, teaches that anæmia or comparative bloodlessness of the brain is the proximate factor. It is fairly certain the condition of the brain circulation during sleep is one of anæmia, and from this and other facts, certain conclusions have been come to regarding the conditions of the brain blood-current which are most favourable to the onset of sleep. These are as follows: (1) A lessened flow of blood; (2) in consequence, a lessened supply of blood; and (3) an exhausted condition of brain-tissue. The first condition results from causes of a positional and functional kind; the second, from the physiological law of nutrition, that a resting organ demands less blood than one active; and the third is a periodic fact. Some years ago, Sir James Paget propounded the law of rhythmic nutrition, which, simply, is this, viz. that the nutrition of an organ, which has a rhythmic action, is accomplished in a special way to suit the special needs of the organ. Hence the heart is nourished in the "pauses" between the contractions. So with the brain. If we take a period of twenty-four hours, and call it a cycle, the brain rhythm would alternate between a condition of wakefulness and one of sleep—a condition of action and one of rest. During wakefulness the brain is the organ of mind, and of nerve energy; during sleep it becomes merely an organ of the body, composed of so many nerve cells and fibres, having automatic control, however, over several bodily functions. During the period of active abeyance of function, the waste of the previous wakeful period is being repaired, until a moment of time arrives when some external stimulus reaches the brain through one of the organs of sense, and consciousness results.

AMOUNT OF SLEEP REQUISITE FOR HEALTH.

King Alfred's division of the day—"eight hours' work, eight hours' sleep, and eight hours' play"—so far as sleep is concerned, is an excellent average arrangement. One general principle may be laid down, viz. that the younger the person is, the more sleep is required. Infants sleep, in health, from eighteen to twenty of the twenty-four hours. Young children, up to the age of two and a half years, require not less than fourteen hours daily; until school age, twelve hours; in adolescence, ten hours; and from that period till middle life, not less than eight hours. The aged sleep less than the young and middle-aged, but for them ten to twelve hours' daily rest in bed is beneficial in conserving their waning physical strength. The general reason for the longer periods of rest in those of tender years is that new growth as well as repair need to be attended to, whereas, as middle life is approached, it is only the daily waste that requires to be repaired. Many persons cultivate the habit of having less than eight hours daily for sleep. This may be borne with apparent impunity for a variably long period, but, in the end, evil effects are certain to follow. The brain worker, *a fortiori*, ought to secure eight hours' sleep daily, for it is of prime importance that the principal tool he uses should be bright, keen, and ready for work. Insomnia and general nervousness are too often the indications of inadequate brain rest or of mental worry. Both may be prevented, in large measure, by attention to the proper hours and periods of sleep, and by making every other engagement subordinate to these. The self-administration of hypnotic drugs ought to be strenuously resisted and opposed, and, at the earliest manifestation of sleep-

lessness, the advice of an experienced physician obtained. Not a single word can be said in commendation of the too prevalent modern habit which converts the night into the day at the expense of sleep. Such is fraught with inevitable mischief.

HYPNOTISM.

(Gr. *hypnos*—sleep).

Hypnotism is the modern designation of psychical states, which formerly were known by the names of animal magnetism, electro-biology, Braidism, and Mesmerism, the last two from the surnames of men who practised and wrote concerning the art. Although the phenomenon has been known since the days of the Egyptians, and has been periodically investigated ever since, it is only within the last twenty years that it has received the attention of scientific observers. Hypnotism is very difficult to define. It may be said to be a sleep-like condition induced by artificial means, but based upon physiological conditions of the brain, and which is wholly unconnected with any electro-biological or magnetic force. The precise form it will take in a person under its influence cannot be predicated. One person may assume a cataleptic condition, while another may be able to walk or perform complex movements at the will or suggestion of the operator. Public exhibitions of hypnotism are forbidden in Prussia, and ought to be prohibited in this country. It is a power which might be used by the irresponsible or criminal for purposes of gain or evil, and already hypnotic suggestion has been pleaded in France as a defence in a criminal charge. As a therapeutic agent it has been used beneficially, and, upon occasion, has taken the place of an anæsthetic in surgical operations. But in both respects

it is still on its trial. For all these reasons, therefore, its practice ought to be confined to those who would be responsible to the State for its proper use. The principle of hypnotism is this—the concentration of the mental energy of the subject on an object, or an action, through the organ of vision, the function of the other brain-centres being meanwhile inhibited, the production of fatigue in the visual centre—the only channel by which the person is conscious—and the induction of drowsiness and hypnotism, or sleep. There is more than this, however, for the operator is able to act on the will of the operated, thereby showing a degree of volition, but uncontrolled. There are certain psychic conditions allied to sleep and hypnotism which cannot be overlooked, such as dreaming, somnambulism, and catalepsy.

Dreaming comes on in sleep, and is characterised by some degree of mental activity, minus the government of the will; hence, dreams are usually of a distorted, irrational, and inco-ordinate character. Reverie is a dreamy condition in the waking state, and is produced by fixation or concentration of the mind on a certain object or train of thought, the person, meanwhile, being apparently and actually oblivious, wholly or partly, of external objects.

Somnambulism (Lat. *somnus*—sleep, *ambulo*—I walk) is a more complex condition. The subject of it may not only walk during sleep, but he may perform actions demanding complex co-ordination of muscles, skill, and apparently even calculation, all the time being unconscious to external influences. Somnambulism is a dream carried into action, the action being automatic and self-originated.

In all of these conditions the will-power is in abey-

ance, and they are usually found in healthy, but excitable persons.

CATALEPSY is a condition wherein there is sudden suspension of volition, motion, and sensation, and is usually accompanied by a fixed condition of the limbs and trunk of the body in the position in which they were at the time of onset of attack. It is often allied with an abnormal condition of brain and nervous system; on the borderland, indeed, between health and disease.

IDIOSYNCRASIES.

(Gr. *idios*—proper, *syn*—with, and *krasis*—temperament).

An idiosyncrasy is something which is proper or peculiar to the temperament of the individual. It may be mental or physical. These peculiarities are not easily explicable from the physiological standpoint, but they have some relation to inherited conditions, or to impressions received in early childhood which have left a lasting mark. They may exhibit themselves in the effects produced after partaking of certain substances, after the perceptions of certain odours, or by the irritation produced in the presence of certain conditions of atmosphere. Trousseau, in his classic work on clinical medicine, narrates cases of persons who were seized with acute asthma; one, if he chanced to be in a bedroom when the feather-bed was being shaken, another, a chemist, if ipecacuanha was being powdered, or even dispensed, in his pharmacy; and a third—his own case—if he went into a room which had the odour of violets. Such cases are of nervous origin, and heredity has, doubtless, a large share in the production.

CHAPTER XXIII.

EFFECTS OF OCCUPATION ON HEALTH.

Of the many factors, the sum of which determines the longevity of man, none is so potent as that of his daily occupation. This is true both in relation to the individual and to man in the mass. The ill effects of employment are probably more apparent in these days because of the congregation of workers under entirely artificial conditions, in factories, yards, and workshops. Coupled with the artificial environment, the high-level pressure and competition of the labour market act as a contributing strain on the average workman. Centralisation of population and centralisation of labour have mutually interacted upon each other to produce these results. This is especially true of productive industries where the commodity is made out of the raw material. Much less change is apparent in the primitive occupations, as farming, fishing, etc., since these callings can only be followed in the open. It has been alleged that the change which has taken place in the character of man's labour during the past century has been harmful to the workman. Then the workman was a craftsman who personally undertook all the processes necessary to produce the finished article; nowadays he only takes part in one process or one stage towards its completion. This has reduced the worker from the position of an artist to

that of a mere automaton, and the craftsman's pride in beholding the work of his own hands, together with the relief experienced in the change of incidence of work, is thereby lost. However that may be, the variety of occupations to-day is, indeed, very large. It has been computed that there are about 12,000 different occupations, no doubt largely owing to the subdivision of labour.

All occupations may be divided into three classes in respect of the bodily powers drawn upon, viz (1) those in which the nervous system is most employed; (2) those in which the muscular system; and (3) those in which both, in varying grades of combination, are used. To the first class belong brain workers generally, as authors, composers, and professional men; to the second the "hewers of wood and drawers of water," and unskilled labourers generally; and to the third skilled workmen generally. It would probably be correct to say that the bulk of occupations belong to this last class. Occupations may be subdivided also in respect of the harmful effects produced by, or incidental to, them. Dr. Ogle gives an excellent working classification on this basis, which we will follow:—

I. Where the workman adopts a cramped or constrained attitude, which prevents the healthy action of lungs and heart.

II. Where he is exposed to the action of poisonous or irritating substances used in the trade.

III. Where he is called upon to work excessively, either mentally or physically.

IV. Where he is compelled to work in confined spaces, and in foul air.

V. Where, from the nature of the occupation, he is liable to contract harmful habits.

VI. Where he is subject to risks to life from accident.

VII. Where he works in atmospheres containing particulate floating matter.

As examples of the first may be cited colliers and miners, clerks, seamstresses, hand-loom weavers, lace-makers (on cushions), glovers, shoemakers (on the "last"), and workers at benches or machines, in a sitting attitude generally. In all of these, more or less pressure is exerted on the chest, which is often most marked in the case of shoemakers, in whose case the "last" produces permanent indentation of the breast-bone.

Of the second class, workers in arsenic, mercury, zinc and copper, lead, "chrome," and phosphorus, chemical workers exposed to the fumes of chlorine or sulphur gases, rubber and waterproof workers to the fumes of benzene and carbon bisulphide, and those exposed to the vapours of tar, pitch, or resin, may be taken as examples.

[TABLE

Table IV.—Comparative Mortality of Men, 25 to 65 Years of Age, in Different Occupations, 1881-2-3.

Occupation.	Comparative Mortality.	Occupation.	Comparative Mortality.
Clergymen, Priests, Ministers	100	Builders, Masons, Bricklayers	174
Lawyers	152	Carpenters, Joiners	148
Medical Men	202	Cabinet Makers, Upholsterers	173
Gardeners	108	Plumbers, Painters, Glaziers	216
Farmers	114	Blacksmiths	175
Agricultural Labourers	126	Engine, Machine, Boiler Makers	155
Fishermen	143	Silk Manufacturers	152
Commercial Clerks	179	Wool, Worsted „	186
„ Travellers.	171	Cotton „	196
Innkeepers, Liquor Dealers	274	Cutlers, Scissor Makers	229
Inn, Hotel Service	397	Gunsmiths	186
Brewers	245	File Makers	300
Butchers	211	Paper Makers	129
Bakers	172	Glass Workers	214
Corn Millers	172	Earthenware Makers	314
Grocers	139	Coal Miners	160
Drapers	159	Cornish „	331
Shopkeepers generally.	158	Stone, Slate Quarriers	202
Tailors	189	Cab, Omnibus Service	267
Shoemakers	166	Railway, Road Labourers	185
Hatters	192	Costermongers, Hawkers, Street Sellers	338
Printers	193		
Bookbinders	210		

TABLE V.—COMPARATIVE MORTALITY FROM PHTHISIS AND RESPIRATORY DISEASES OF MEN IN VARIOUS DUST-INHALING OCCUPATIONS.

Men from 25 to 65 years of age.	Phthisis.	Lung Diseases.	Phthisis and Lung Diseases.
Fishermen (as standard) . . .	55	45	100
Carpenters, Joiners	103	67	170
Bakers	107	94	201
Wool Workers	130	104	234
Cotton „	137	137	274
Cutlers, Scissor Makers	187	196	383
File Makers	219	177	396
Masons, Bricklayers	127	102	229
Stone and Slate Quarriers . . .	156	138	294
Pottery Makers	239	326	565
Cornish Miners	348	231	579
Coal „	64	102	166

Of the third class, dock labourers, stevedores, athletes generally, porters, engineers, and others are representative. It has been clearly demonstrated that more harm ensues when the work is severe and inconsecutive than where it is steady and continuous. Where the muscular strain is solely confined to certain groups of muscles, as in shorthand writers, pressmen generally, musicians, telegraphists, etc., nerve disturbance, as "writer's cramp," is apt to follow.

Tailors, hatters, bookbinders, printers, machinists, laundresses, shopkeepers, as grocers and drapers, are typical of the fourth class, inasmuch as they work usually in confined, and often foul, air spaces.

Of the fifth class, where vicious habits are contracted from materials used, or from products manufactured in

the trade, the occupations of innkeeper, brewer, and distiller, barman and barmaid, and liquor dealer generally, carry with them the temptation to contract the alcoholic habit; that of tobacco manufacturer, the abuse of tobacco; and that of druggists, the use of opium, cocaine, ether, or other harmful drugs.

Of the sixth class, little need be said, except that certain occupations are more dangerous from accident than others, such as mining, quarrying, railway worker, or workers generally in large machine shops. To these may be added caisson workers, submarine workers, as divers and tunnellers under compressed air; and those engaged in the making of explosives.

The seventh class embraces a large number of occupations, and the factor, common to them all, which is provocative of harm, is floating matter in the air surrounding the worker, which, when inhaled into the breathing apparatus, produces lung diseases, and, in the case of certain substances, when deposited on the skin, maladies of the skin. The character of the air-particles determines the intensity of the harm produced. The dust particles are either sharp, blunt, or filamentous. In the following occupations are found sharp particles, viz. steel grinder (dry process), stone cutter, sand or glass paper maker, potter, button maker, file maker (by hand), ore miner, quarrier, and gannister worker; in the following, blunt particles: wood or ivory turner, sawyer, collier, miller, baker, foundry worker; and filamentous, in those of hemp dressing, flax working, hair and wool sorting, warehouseman, draper, cotton worker, and wool worker. The evil results of substances deposited on the skin are sometimes seen in those engaged in the soot traffic, as in "chimney sweep's cancer," or in paraffin workers, as skin

diseases; and in "chrome" workers, as ulcerative disorders of the nasal septum, hands and arms, followed very frequently by permanent perforation of the nasal septum.

The mortality arising from any occupation depends upon the following factors, viz. (1) the initial fitness of the employee; (2) the nature of the occupation; (3) the environment of the employment; and (4) habits of a vicious character which may be contracted by the workman. While it is difficult to attain absolute correctness in the mortality rates of occupations, sufficient accuracy is possible to compare the relative incidence of the death-toll. One of the causes of this difficulty is that many occupations, because of their light and easy character, attract the initially weak, disabled, or deformed. This is true of such employments as clerk, tailor, watchmaker, and others. Again, certain other occupations, as inn-keeping or liquor selling, have attractions for men who have saved money in their original occupation, but in which their health has broken down. Hence the mortality rate of a given occupation may not be the result solely of the conditions of that occupation, but partly of that, and of the previously depreciated health or physique derived from a former occupation, or which existed initially.

Of the accompanying tables, two which are from Dr. Ogle's paper (*Transactions of Seventh International Congress of Hygiene*, vol. x., pp. 12 *et seq.*) are more eloquent than words. The first table shows the relative mortality of different occupations, and the second, the mortality from lung diseases in occupations having different air surroundings; the third table we have compiled to illustrate the various deformities or disabilities which arise in certain occupations.

Table VI.—Occupations which cause Physical Deformity or Disability.

Occupation.	Deformity or Disability.	Proximate Cause.
Boiler Makers, Riveters, or Workers in any concussive noises.	Deafness. . .	Repetitive concussion of ear drum, etc.
Shoemakers . . .	Indentation or depression of breast-bone.	Pressure of last.
Tailors	Peculiar gait in walking.	Turk-like attitude of lower limbs when at work.
Clerks, Students, Scholars, Sedentary Employees generally.	Lateral curvature of spine.	Faulty attitude when occupied at work.
Telegraphists, Shorthand Writers, Instrumentalists.	Muscular cramp of fingers or hand.	Continuous strained use of digit muscles.
Clergy (preachers) . .	Affections of throat and voice.	Unnatural use of muscles of voice-box and voice.
Miners, Jewellers and Watchmakers, Scientific Instrument Makers, Microscopists, Seamstresses, Engravers.	Affections of eye and vision.	Strain on visual apparatus.
Cooks, Gardeners, Car and 'Bus Conductors, Shopkeepers, and persons generally who stand at work.	Varicose veins and ulcers of lower limbs.	Congestion of veins from effect of gravity and muscular strain on lower limbs.
Soldiers, Athletes, Porters, Dock Labourers, etc.	Diseases of heart and large arteries.	Strain on these organs.
Bridge-pier Builders (in caissons), Divers, and Workers under compressed air, Balloonists.	Diseases of circulation and nervous system.	Unnatural atmospheric pressure.

CHAPTER XXIV.

FOOD—CLASSIFICATION OF FOODS—PROXIMATE PRINCIPLES.

Foods are those substances which, taken into the body, and by mastication, digestion, and absorption rendered fit for the uses of the body, are calculated, directly or indirectly, to build up bodily tissue, repair waste therein, and to store and produce energy. While the term food is generally limited to those substances which after ingestion are capable of being oxidised in the bodily economy, perhaps more scientifically it ought to embrace water and air, without which the processes of oxidation could not take place.

Foods may be divided into two main classes depending upon their source: for example, into those obtained from the organic kingdom, and second, those derived from the inorganic kingdom. The organic class is the larger. It embraces: (1) Proteids or Albuminates; (2) Fats; (3) Carbohydrates; and (4) Organic Acids. The inorganic class comprehends only (1) Water, and (2) Mineral Substances. The sources of food are mainly the animal and vegetable kingdoms. Both give, in varying amounts, all the substances named in the foregoing list; at the same time, proteids and fats abound most in the animal, and carbohydrates and organic acids in the vegetable food products.

Another classification has sometimes been made, depending upon the presence or absence of constituent nitrogen, viz. (*a*) Nitrogenous, and (*b*) Non-nitrogenous foods. In this classification, proteids alone belong to the nitrogenous class, while fats, carbohydrates, and the others belong to the non-nitrogenous class.

Following, however, the first order of classification, the characteristics and properties of foods belonging to the organic class will first be considered, and in the order above named.

(A) *Proteids or Albuminates.*—For the purposes of the human body, proteids are most important constituents of food, of which they form an essential and proportional part. In the food of carnivorous animals they bulk most largely, in that of herbivorous the least largely, and in that of man they occupy an intermediate position.

Proteids are complex bodies, in the main colloid in character, but which in certain leguminous plants are found in crystalline form. They are built up of carbon, hydrogen, nitrogen, oxygen, and sulphur. Since they are found in food-substances obtained from both animal and vegetable sources, they may be divided into vegetable proteids and animal proteids. This is, however, more an academic division than a real division.

Animal proteids are relatively more easily and more rapidly digested than vegetable proteids, chiefly because the latter have in the process of digestion to be separated from fibrous material with which they are more or less intimately associated or united. Any continuance of diet of man in which proteids are at a minimum, or more so, if they are entirely excluded, is followed by great diminution of strength, prostration, and debility. This is even true where certain proteid substances, as gelatine, are

alone given for a period of time. On the other hand, excess of nitrogenous diet leads to loss of body-weight, general constitutional disturbance, and disease. It is therefore apparent that there exists for man some proportion of proteid substances to other food substances which must be taken to contribute to the even maintenance of the bodily requirements and of health.

The sources and kinds of albuminous substances are various. The chief sources are the flesh of animals, eggs, milk, cheese, seeds or fruit of plants of the Leguminous order, and, in lesser proportions, the seeds of most of the cereals. If the complex substance called albumen be considered from the chemical point of view, it will be found that it includes several forms of albuminous substances which differ from one another in solubility in different solvents, and by certain chemical reactions. Viewed in this way, the albuminous class may be subdivided into sub-groups, as follows:—

Group I.

(1) *Albumins*, which are soluble in water. The albumins of blood serum, of muscle, of egg, of vegetables, called legumin, and of milk, called casein, may be taken as types.

(2) *Globulins*, which are insoluble in water, but soluble in water mixed with a small proportion of common salt. Of these, vitellin or globulin of egg, and the globulins of blood-serum, of milk, and of vegetable substances are examples.

(3) *Proteids*, which are soluble in alcohol. These are mainly found in vegetable products.

(4) *Albuminates*, which are albumins soluble in alkaline solutions; otherwise called alkaline albumins.

(5) *Acid Albumins*, which are albumins soluble in acids, such as dilute hydrochloric acid. All albumins are soluble when subjected for some time to the action of such an acid solution at the temperature of the human body. These when formed, as in peptic digestion, are not soluble in water or in neutral solutions, nor are they coagulable by the action of heat at boiling point of water. They may be precipitated from an acid solution, however, when the solution which contains them is rendered neutral by addition of an alkali, just as alkaline albumins are thrown out of solution by neutralisation with an acid.

GROUP II.—This group consists of proteid bodies which contain a proteid group united with a non-proteid group. These have been divided into glyco-proteids, hæmoglobins, nucleo-albumins, caseins, nucleins, and amyloids.

GROUP III.—*Albuminoids.*—This group includes proteid substances which are found in horn, hoof, nails of fingers and toes, called keratin, those found in animal elastic tissues, called elastins, and those found in bone, cartilage, and connective tissue, called collagens, of which gelatin, isinglass, and chondrin are examples. Within this group also are placed albumoses or peptones, which are products of digestion due to splitting up of proteid substances, and enzymes, which are bodies possessing the power of reducing proteids, fats, and starchy substances into simpler bodies.

To various nitrogenous bodies certain definite names have been given. For example, casein is the name given to the chief albuminous constituent of milk and cheese.

Casein is not coagulable by heat, but is coagulated by rennet, which is a ferment obtained from the inner lining of the stomach of the calf, or by acid in excess. It dissolves readily in dilute acids and alkalies. In milk, casein is kept in solution owing to the presence of potassium phosphate, and is coagulated by the action of the products of the lactic acid bacillus and of other organisms; legumin is the name given to the albumin of leguminous plants, such as peas, beans, lentils, etc. It resembles in properties the casein of milk.

Glutin is the name given to the albumin found in the seeds of cereals, as oats, wheat, barley, rice, etc., in which last, however, it is least in amount. Myosin is an albumin of muscle, is coagulable by heat, and may be separated from the lean of meat by chopping the meat finely, placing it for some time in water mixed with 10 per cent of common salt, and then mixing the solution thus obtained with distilled water, when the myosin separates out as a flocculent precipitate. Gelatin is the substance got from cartilage after prolonged boiling, and which, when cold, sets in a firm, straw-coloured jelly. Gelatin contains about 17 to 18 per cent of nitrogen, and is therefore richer in that substance than the ordinary albumins which contain about one or two per cent less, but experiments have proved that when it is alone given to supply the nitrogenous element in a diet, animals not only do not thrive, but actually begin to lose weight. It is apparent, therefore, that gelatin does not make good the bodily waste, as do other albuminous bodies.

(B) *Fats.* — Fats are very complex chemical bodies. They are composed of various fatty acids, of which stearic, palmitic, and oleic are probably the chief, along with glycerine. Stearin or stearic acid is chiefly found in

animal fats, palmitin and olein in vegetable fats. The physical condition of a fat depends upon the particular fatty acid which preponderates in the fat; for example, stearin and palmitin are solid at ordinary temperatures, while olein is fluid. Hence it is owing to the relatively larger amount of stearic acid contained in mutton fat that the fat of mutton quickly congeals on a cooling plate, and that the fat of ham, owing to the relatively higher amount of olein which it contains, remains longer fluid. Most fatty substances, however, contain proportions of all the fatty acids named. Certain particular fatty products, notably butter, contain, in addition, other fatty acids, sometimes called the volatile fatty acids, such as butyric, capric, caproic, and caprylic, because they are given off on heating under definite conditions of chemical treatment. Chemically, fats are composed of carbon, hydrogen, and oxygen; but the last two elements do not exist in the proportions in which they are found in water or in carbohydrates, as the oxygen is proportionately less in amount. It ought to be clearly understood that glycerine does not exist as such in fats; it is a product obtained by the decomposition of a fat by an alkali, as in the manufacture of a soap, or by the action of superheated steam, by which the fat is split up into fatty acids and glycerine. Fats are usually neutral bodies when taken as foods, insoluble and immiscible in water, but soluble in ether, benzene, and other like substances. In ripe cheese, however, the ripeness of which is due to the influence of moulds and microbes, free fatty acids exist. As food, fats play an important part in the animal economy in maintaining the heat and energy of the body. For this reason they instinctively form a large part of the diet of man in arctic climates, and of persons

in ordinary climates who perform continuous arduous work.

(C) *Carbohydrates.* — In the class known as carbohydrates are included starchy foods, sugars, gums, cellulose, etc. The name given to the class has its origin in the fact that, in addition to carbon, the hydrogen and oxygen which they contain exist in the proportions in which they exist in water. The starches, though presenting microscopically characteristic physical differences in form and size of grain, are, from the point of view of food, to be reckoned practically as of equal nutrient value.

The percentage amounts in which they exist in cereal foods differ; for example, weight for weight, rice contains the largest proportion of starch. Starch is insoluble in cold water, but on heating the water, the starch grains swell, burst, and impart a mucilaginous or gummy feel to the water. When heated for some hours in water containing a small percentage amount of a mineral acid, starch is converted into dextrine, or, as it is sometimes called, glucose. When it is subjected to the action of ptyalin—the active enzyme of saliva—or to the action of diastase, maltose is formed. While starches, sugars, etc., may be considered to be chiefly found in the products of the vegetable kingdom, sugar, known as galactose, is found in milk, and glycogen, sometimes called animal starch, is found in the liver of animals.

Carbohydrates have been divided into three main groups, depending upon their chemical composition, viz. (A), Starches or Amyloses; (B), Sugars or Sucroses; and (C) Gums or Glucoses. The first-named has the following chemical formula: $C_6H_{10}O_5$; the second the formula, $C_{12}H_{22}O_{11}$; and the third, $C_6H_{12}O_6$. Of the first, or starch group, enough has been said generally.

Sugars or Sucroses.—These are obtained from sugar-cane, the sugar maple, sorghum, beetroot, etc., that from beetroot being sometimes called betose. Grape sugar or glucose or dextrose is found in many fresh fruits and in dried fruits. It is called dextrose because it has the power of rotating a polarised ray of light towards the right. In honey, however, along with dextrose exists another sugar, to which the name of levulose or fruit sugar has been given, because of its power to rotate a ray of polarised light towards the left. Dextrose is also found in some animal fluids, as in blood, diabetic urine, and in the egg, but in relatively small quantities. It is acted upon directly by different yeast organisms, and is converted thereby into alcohol and carbon dioxide gas. In the process of beer-making the object of malting is to convert the starch of the grain into maltose, and of fermentation to convert the sugar thus formed into alcohol and the above-named gas. In the sugar group, lactose or sugar of milk, and galactose, which is formed by boiling lactose in dilute acid solutions, are included. When milk turns sour, the sugar is changed into lactic acid by the action of the microbe of that name. Koumiss is in reality the milk of mares changed in this manner. Inosite or muscle sugar is sometimes added to the sugar group. Inosite is found not only in the heart muscle, but also in peas, beans, etc. Chemically, however, it is not a true sugar.

Cellulose, called woody fibre, constitutes the fibrous framework of plants. It forms a large part of the nutrition of herbivorous animals, but it has a limited value as a food for man. Pectose is an insoluble substance which is found in the unripe state of fruits, and pectin, the same substance, is found in the fleshy parts of fruits and

roots, but is believed to have undergone some change from the condition of pectose by the action of vegetable acids.

Nutritive Value of Carbohydrates.—Carbohydrates form a large and valuable portion of the diet of the inhabitants of warm and tropical climates. They supply material to the body by which the bodily heat is maintained and energy is produced. In warm countries they play the part in diet which fats do in colder climates. Taken in large amounts, they tend to cause deposition of fat in the bodily tissues, and are liable, in the absence of sufficient bodily exercise, to initiate gastric disturbance, and to interfere with the changes in nitrogenous tissue. Because of their conversion in the body into grape sugar, and because of the elimination in large amounts of this sugar in the urine of the victims of diabetes mellitus, starchy foods are reduced to a minimum in the diet of such persons.

(D) *Organic Acids.* — By the term organic acid is meant mainly the vegetable acids which are found in a large number of fruits and in some leaves. Of these the chief are tartaric, citric, malic, oxalic, and other acids. But it also includes those acids formed in other fluids used as food-stuffs or condiments, such as acetic acid in vinegar, and lactic acid in butter-milk. When taken into the body, organic acids are converted into alkaline carbonates, which, when absorbed into the blood-stream, influence the alkalinity of that and other fluids. Of the vegetable acids named, tartaric acid is mainly found in grapes, citric acid in citrons, oranges, lemons, and limes, malic acid in apples and pears, and oxalic acid in the leaves of the sorrel plant, in rhubarb, and in the leaves of the *Oxalis acetosella.* Organic acids in diet seem to be essential for the maintenance of health, and undoubtedly act as a preventive of scurvy. Captain Cook, to whom

the introduction of lime-juice into the Navy is largely, if not mainly, attributable, proved the value of the daily use of that product as a ration to his crew in maintaining them against the outbreak of this disabling illness. Opinions differ as to the precise substance or substances in foods which prevent scurvy. Some are inclined to attribute the anti-scorbutic property to the alkaline base, potash, with which the organic acids are combined, rather than to the acids themselves. That the vegetable acids alone do not possess this anti-scorbutic virtue is shown by the fact that fresh potatoes and vegetables, as cabbage, etc., fresh or dried, have a like preventive effect. Fresh blood is used, in the absence of vegetables, by primitive peoples under stress of circumstances to avert the disease. Whatever is the precise substance or substances, however, which act preventively, one thing is clear, that lime-juice, which contains citric acid in the free state as well as in the combined state as citrate of potash, is a specific anti-scorbutic. It is unnecessary, therefore, from the practical point of view, to pursue the inquiry further.

(E) *Inorganic or Mineral Salts.*—If an animal body is reduced to ashes by the action of fire, a certain amount of mineral residue will be found to remain. This residue when analysed is found to contain a large variety of salts of mineral bodies. In the bony framework of the skeleton, calcium is the chief constituent, which is united with phosphoric acid to form calcium phosphate, but in addition to this, which is largest in amount, calcium carbonate, calcium fluoride, and magnesium phosphate are also found. In short, bone is made up of about 67 per cent of earthy matter, and the rest of animal matter. The flesh of the body contains salts of potassium principally, of which

potassium phosphate is the chief. Muscle, however, contains only between one and two per cent of mineral salts, the rest being water and animal substances. The mineral salts found in the blood and other liquids of the body are mainly sodium chloride or common salt, potassium chloride, and phosphates and sulphates of these bases and calcium. Another important constituent of blood is iron, which gives the colour to the red blood-corpuscles. In addition to these substances, minute amounts of other substances are found, such as manganese, etc.

In order to build up the body of the growing infant or child, appropriate food must be given to enable the tissues to grow, and to supply the requisite salts to aid in the formation of bone and the growth of the tissues. It ought to be kept in mind that these salts are contained in food, and that the body mainly, if not entirely, derives them from the food. It is a popular fallacy that rickets in young children is caused by deficiency of lime in water. This disease is really due to a combination of factors, of which inappropriate food, bad ventilation, and insufficient light are probably the chief. Common salt is largely needed for the purposes of the body, and is used by man in all parts of the earth, and great pains are sometimes expended to procure it. Most animals relish it, but to some, particularly poultry, it is very poisonous in large doses.

These inorganic salts, therefore, are as essential to the growth and health as the other food substances which have been considered. Without their presence in due amount in the body, disease is sooner or later generated; for example, where the proportion of iron falls below the normal, bloodlessness, as it is popularly called, follows, and health may be restored by giving iron either alone or combined with other substances.

A suitable diet consists, therefore, of such foods as contain the proper amount and proportion of proteids, fats, carbohydrates, and other principles, adapted to the age of the person, the kind of work he is pursuing, and the climate in which he lives.

Food Accessories.—In addition to the substances which are imperatively needed for the sustenance of bodily health, there are many substances which have come to be used by man as food auxiliaries or accessories. These are used for a variety of purposes, and among these may be named the stimulation of appetite and of digestion, not to speak of general stimulation of the body. Artificial modes of living have been largely to blame for the increasing use of stimulants and condiments. The use of curry and spices in India affords an example of this. The enervating climate tends to the production of bodily lassitude and loss of appetite, together with considerable loss of sensible perspiration in those not acclimatised. To stimulate the flagging energies and to create an appetite, appetising stimulants which excite the action of the salivary and peptic glands are used, and alcoholic beverages are indulged in to produce bodily activity. Probably one of the earliest stimulants to be used by primeval Man all over the globe was some form of alcoholic beverage, or the infusion of some plant, both being adopted to create stimulation of nerve-force. It would, indeed, be difficult to find any portion of the primitive world in which some form of alcoholic beverage was not in use. In Eastern Asia, in India, South America, and Africa, some plant was discovered, an infusion of the leaves or seeds of which was found to have a stimulating effect. The tea plant in China and Japan and India, the *Ilex paraguayensis*, or Paraguay tea, in South America, the

berries of the coffee plant in Abyssinia and other parts of the world, have for ages been utilised for the purpose of stimulation, and their use now extends over the whole civilised and uncivilised world. The same may be said of cocoa, which is prepared from the beans of the cocoa-plant, *Theobroma cacao*. It differs, however, from those already named in respect that the substance which is used, rock cocoa, cocoa nibs, or cocoa in powder, contains in addition to the stimulating ingredient no inconsiderable amount of fat. The stimulating principle in tea and coffee is theine or caffeine, while that in cocoa is called theobromine. Good tea contains about $1\frac{1}{2}$ to 3 per cent of theine, coffee about $1\frac{1}{2}$ per cent of caffeine, and cocoa about $1\frac{1}{2}$ per cent of theobromine. Both tea and coffee contain, in addition, a volatile oil, which gives the peculiar aroma to beverages prepared properly from them.

Allied to these in their use, but more limited in range of use, are opium, kola, coca, and Indian hemp, all of which, when used in limited quantities, act as excitants upon the nerve-centres, stimulate the action of heart and lungs, and hinder the waste of the body.

Alcohol, tea, coffee, cocoa, and other stimulants, as well as condiments, are in common use throughout the world to-day. Mustard, spices, vinegar, peppers, pickles, and various forms of "relishes," etc., are in more or less demand. There can be little doubt that when used in moderation they serve a useful purpose, inasmuch as they assist to give a stimulus to jaded or flagging appetite, and lend a piquancy to food, which, however nutritious, is apt on occasion to pall on the taste. By exciting the sense of smell or taste, and by stimulating the digestive glands, they make for comfortable digestion and pleasure in eating.

CHAPTER XXV.

DIET AND DIETARIES—COMPOSITION OF FOODS—STANDARD DIETS—CALCULATION OF DIETARIES.

Diet and Dietaries.—If a review be made of the diets of different countries, apart from the prescriptions of religious ritual, it will be found that man, either through experience or instinct, or partly by both, adopts generally in his diet such articles of food as contain relatively accurate amounts of the proximate principles for nourishment of his body under different climatic conditions. The inhabitant of arctic climates revels in quantities of fats and oils which could not be taken with impunity by the denizens of more temperate and warmer climates, while, on the other hand, he of a warmer climate utilises more largely the class of carbohydrates, such as starch, sugar, etc. The reason for this is to be found in the fact that the great cold of the former produces more rapid oxidation of the bodily tissues and robs the body more rapidly of its heat, whereas the warmth of tropical climates provides what the former lacks, and therefore it is not necessary to take, as food, materials which are calculated by their consumpt in the body to produce heat largely, if duly utilised. The factor of work also tends to regulate the consumption and kinds of food used. In respect that work uses up in the energy expended that which food supplies, it is necessary in con-

tinuous, arduous labour to reinforce the bodily force and strength by increased amounts of food. Thus it is that a person undergoing hard work for a continuous period requires daily a larger amount of varied food than one who has little or no work to do. Economic conditions sometimes determine also the food of a nation, or of sections of it. Primitive man had to search for his food before he could eat it, and had frequently to undergo many hardships before he could indulge his appetite. The tendency of this was that when chance or success in hunting offered a plentiful supply for the time being, he was apt to gorge himself with it against the time of privation which experience taught him was likely to follow. Poverty likewise, as well as ignorant use of food, tends to imperfect nourishment. Famines are generally the result of the failure of the staple crop of a country upon which the poor depend for food; as examples of these may be taken the famine in Ireland in 1847 on the failure of the potato crop, and those in India from failure of the rice crop.

Where food is fairly plentiful and easily procured, it may be taken for granted that man will generally discover for himself what he finds most suitable for him under different circumstances, and, therefore, under such conditions, it does not become necessary to educate him in the mass as to what he should or should not eat. This education, however, seems to have become imperative in the case of the poorer classes of our large towns. These have largely departed from the more primitive and more nutritious foods of their ancestors, and have taken to ill-regulated proportions of other foods, which, however much they may tickle the palate or are easily prepared, are not so serviceable for the general needs of the body. Abuse of tea, for example, is commonly met with in such classes,

not to speak of abuse of alcohol. Canned meats, and other factory-made goods of this type, are largely utilised, mainly, it would appear, because they are easily prepared. Reference has been made to the prevalence of rickets in the children of our towns. There cannot be the least doubt that, in Scotland at least, some of the blame for this must be laid to the want of use of such cereal foods as oatmeal, or other appropriate foods. But whether this be so or not, it may be concluded generally that, under ordinary circumstances, all that needs be said on the educative side should have particular reference more to the kinds of food to be eaten than to their quantity.

The question of diet and dietaries assumes, however, a different aspect when bodies of individuals in public or private institutions have to be fed. This problem presents itself with regard to occupants of hospitals, asylums, poor-law institutions, prisons, sanitoria, and to large bodies of men, as in armies and navies. In order to maintain persons in the last-named positions, it is essential that they should be provided with such foods and quantities as are likely to best befit their active bodily requirements, and in the former, that they should receive such foods and in such quantities as are best calculated to suit their special circumstances.

It is quite obvious that a minimum amount of food is requisite for the maintenance of the health of man under any circumstances, and it is further clear that in dealing with persons in institutions regard must be paid to age, conditions as to work, and special states of health.

From what has been said, it will be evident that in order to keep the body in health, different amounts daily of the proximate principles are requisite: so much albumin, so much fat, so much carbohydrates, so much

food accessories, and so much mineral salts. The respective amounts of these will to some extent be determined, as has been said, by age, work, presence or absence of disease, and character of disease if and when present. It must be borne in mind that in respect of quantity a diet may be ample enough, which, however, in respect that the requisite proportions of proximate principles are absent, will not be sufficient for the bodily needs; in other words, there may be too large an amount of carbohydrates and too little albumin, or any other disproportion. Where this is continued for any time, disease, or weakness at least, is likely to supervene, accompanied, it may be, by loss of flesh.

What proportions, then, of these proximate principles are required under ordinary circumstances for the average adult? The answer will be best approached by a consideration of the ordinary physiological waste which takes place in the body, since, after all, the object in view is to see that the intake of food will at least equal the output of waste. The waste products of the body, eliminated by the usual channels, consist of (1) carbon, which is given off from the body in the form of carbon dioxide gas from the lungs, (2) nitrogen, which is mainly thrown off by the kidneys, (3) mineral matters, which are also given off by the kidneys, but also by the skin and in other excretions, and (4) water, which is eliminated by skin, kidneys, and intestine. The average adult while engaged in moderate work gives off from his lungs from 250 to 280 grammes of carbon, or from a little over eight ounces to a little under ten ounces, per twenty-four hours. Of nitrogen, under like circumstances, he will eliminate from 15 to 18 grammes, or from about 230 to 275 grains, per day; and of mineral matters and water, varying quantities. The

waste of the tissues, as represented in these substances, must be made good, and as far as possible in the same proportion as in the waste. Taking the foregoing in grammes weight, it will be apparent that the proportion of carbon to nitrogen is 250 to 15, or 280 to 18. But in proteid food substances the proportion of carbon to nitrogen is not found as above, the proportion being usually about 53 parts of carbon to 15 of nitrogen, or, reducing the ratio, 3·5 parts carbon to one part of nitrogen. It is because foods as found and prepared do not consist of such relative proportions that dietaries—that is, the kinds and amounts of food for daily requirement which, united together, provide the requisite amounts of nitrogen and carbon—require to be constructed. This point may be illustrated by setting down the composition of some common food-stuffs. It is necessary, however, first to explain that the nitrogen in foods is found in albuminous substances only, and that if a fairly accurate method of calculating the amount of albumin which is represented by a given amount of nitrogen is wanted, it is found by multiplying the figure of the nitrogen by 6·25, or, as some prefer, by 6·33. It must also be noted that in almost every food-stuff used, except pure fats, albumin in some form is present in smaller or larger proportion. The difference in proportion will perhaps be most easily seen by considering the chemical analyses of some typical foods.

Table VII.—Composition of Different Classes of Foods.

(Results given in round figures generally).

Food.	Water.	Proteids.	Fat.	Carbo-hydrates.	Mineral Salts (as ash).
Beef—					
Steak	60	20	24	...	1
Loin (lean)	67	19	12	...	1
Flank, medium	60	19	20	...	1
Rump, lean	65	21	13	...	1
Kidney	76	17	5	0·4	1·2
Liver	71	20	4	1·5	1·6
Tongue	71	19	9	...	1
Tripe	86	12	1	0·2	0·3
Mutton—					
Hind leg, lean	67	19	12	...	1
Loin, without kidney	50	16	33	...	0·8
Pork—					
Fresh ham, lean	60	25	14	...	1·3
Bacon, smoked	32	15	43	...	11
Loin chops	60	20	19	...	1
Pigs' feet	50	8	17	...	0·4
Lamb—					
Hind leg, medium fat	64	19	16	...	1
Fore quarter	55	18	27	...	0·9
Broiled chops	47	21	30	...	1·3
Veal—					
Leg	73	21	4	...	1
Breast	72	21	6	...	1
Loin	73	20	6	...	1
Poultry—					
Chicken, broiled	74	21	2·5	...	1
Goose, young	48	16	36	...	0·8
Turkey	56	21	22	...	1
Horse flesh	74	22	2·5	...	1
Fish—					
Salmon	64	17	18	...	1
Eel	64	16	19	...	0·9
Trout (lake)	68	18	11	...	1·2
Mackerel	72	19	8	...	1·4
Herring	72	18	8	...	1·7
Haddock	81	17	0·3	...	1·3
Flounder	84	14	0·7	...	1·3
Halibut	75	18	5	...	1

TABLE VII.—*continued*

Food.	Water.	Proteids.	Fat.	Carbo-hydrates.	Mineral Salts (as ash).
Salt fish—					
Cod	53	21	0·3	...	1·6
Herring	34	36	16	...	1·5
Haddock	72	34	0·2	...	1·5
Shellfish—					
Oysters	80	10	2	6	2
Mussels	77	12	1·7	5	1·7
Lobster	...	14·5	1·8	...	1·7
Milk—					
Cow (sweet)	87	3·3	4	5	0·7
,, (buttermilk)	90·6	3·78	1·25	3·7	0·65
,, strippings	81	4·2	9·8	4	0·79
,, foremilk	90·3	4·6	1·16	3·1	0·79
,, skim-milk	88	4·0	1·8	5·4	0·8
Human	88	3·07	2·9	5·87	0·16
Goat	87·5	3·7	4·2	4	0·56
Mare	88·8	2·6	2·5	5·5	0·5
Ewe	82·3	7·26	5·3	4·2	1
Butter	12	...	84	0·5	2·5
Cheese—					
Cheddar	35·6	28	31	...	4·22
Cheshire	37	27	31	...	4·4
Dunlop	30	32	32	...	4
Eggs—					
Brown-shell	65	12	11	...	1·04
White-shell	65	12	11	...	0·67
Starchy foods—					
Wheat	10·6	12	1·75	71	1·75
,, Flour	12	11·4	1·0	75	0·5
,, Bread	35	8	0·75	54	1·5
Oats	10	12	4	58	3·5
,, Meal	13	11·7	6	55	3
Barley	11	11	2·25	69·5	2·5
Maize meal	12·5	7	1·3	78	0·6
Rice	12·4	7·5	0·4	79	0·5
Beans (broad)	14·8	24	1·6	49	3·3
Peas (dried)	15	23	1·8	52	2·6
,, (fresh)	74	7	0·5	17	1
Lentils	12	25·7	1·9	53	3
Soja bean	10	34	17	29	4·7

TABLE VII.—*continued.*

Food.	Water.	Proteids.	Fat.	Carbo-hydrates.	Mineral Salts (as ash).
Vegetables—					
Potatoes . . .	78	2·2	0·1	18	1
Turnips . . .	89·5	1·3	0·2	8	0·8
Carrots . . .	88	1	0·4	9	1
Beets . . .	87·5	1·6	0·1	9·7	1·1
Vegetables—					
Parsnips . . .	83	1·6	0·5	13·5	1·4
Leeks . . .	92	1·6	0·3	10	0·7
Onions . . .	87·6	1·2	0·3	10	0·6
Cabbage . . .	91	1·6	0·3	5·6	0·8
Cauliflower . .	92	1·8	0·5	4·7	0·7
Sprouts . . .	88	4·7	1·1	4·3	1·7
Fruits—					
Apples . . .	84	0·36	...	13	0·5
Oranges . . .	87	0·8	0·2	11·6	0·5
Grapes . . .	78	0·6	...	16	0·5
Melons . . .	88	0·9	0·2	10	0·7
Strawberries . .	88	1	...	9	0·8
Gooseberries . .	86	0·5	...	12	0·4

It will be seen from the table that the constituents of the different substances are expressed in parts per cent, and in order to convert these into terms of a pound some calculation is needed, which, if the metric system is adopted, is a much simpler one than it is in British weights and measures. It is now much more common in calculations such as these to adopt the metric system, because analyses are now mostly expressed in terms of it. But so long as pounds and ounces are the weights by which our food-stuffs are weighed, and gills, pints, and gallons the measures by which they are measured, it will be necessary for us in this country to express our results in those terms. At the same time it will probably be better to express the proportions in both ways.

Different writers have given standard proportions of proximate substances needed in average adult diet. Of these the following only need be set down in the subjoined Table:—

TABLE VIII.—DIET STANDARDS SHOWING AMOUNTS OF PROXIMATE PRINCIPLES, EXPRESSED IN GRAMME WEIGHTS, AND WATER-FREE.

Observer.	Proteids.	Fat.	Carbohydrates.
Moleschott . .	120	90	333
Moleschott for a working man . .	130	40	550
Ranke . . .	100	100	250
Playfair . . .	119	54	530
Voit . . .	118	56	500

The above standards may be taken as the needed proportions of an average daily diet for an ordinary working man engaged in ordinary labour. Reckoning about 31 grammes per Troy ounce, the foregoing may be reduced to British equivalent weights. The British standard is somewhat more liberal than some of the above, viz. 5 ounces of albumin or proteids, 3 ounces of fat, and 15 ounces of carbohydrates, all water-free. On the basis of mere subsistence waste, waste during rest, and waste during different kinds of labour of differing severity, subsistence, rest, and labour diets have been constructed.

Calculation of Dietaries.—In calculating dietaries for classes of persons, care must be had to consider ages, conditions of health or sickness, and conditions of labour, and in the arrangement of dietary lists changes must be rung on the kinds of food, so as to avoid a deadly monotony.

For example, in a prison, in which different classes of prisoners are incarcerated, a different scale of diet must be laid down for those who are engaged in hard labour from that for those who are not, and in a hospital, for the sick and convalescent, for different classes of sick persons, and for different ages. In a poor-law institution, provision must be made for the healthy as well as for the sick. From what has been said it will be obvious that the fixing of amounts and variety of food-stuffs requires no little consideration, especially when such persons as those personified in the ancient verse, viz. those who can eat no fat and those who can eat no lean, have to be dealt with.

CHAPTER XXVI.

RATIONALE OF FOOD AND FOOD-TAKING.

Rationale of Food and Food-taking.—The human body, like every machine which does work, must be supplied with fuel. While the mechanical engine expends any force or energy which it manifests solely by reason of the fuel with which it is provided, in like manner the human machine would soon cease to act if food were denied it. The human machine is constantly doing work and expending energy in one or more of its parts. Even the action of the heart which goes on while the body may be otherwise entirely at rest expends some amount of energy. During active existence, whether that be moderate or severe, loss of energy is a constant accompaniment, and the greater the expenditure of force, muscular or mental, or both, the greater the amount of food required to repair the waste. The channels by which this energy is expended depend to some extent upon the occupation of the individual. In one case there may be a maximum of nervous expenditure, in another a maximum of muscular power, and in a third a combination of both. Whatever, however, be the nature of the occupation, repair must follow the waste. In order, besides, to maintain health, owing to the close interdependence of mind and body, there must be some regulated use of both physical and mental energy. The brain-worker cannot

neglect physical exercise for long without producing some physical trouble in his body, even if that at first be impaired digestion only. The living, active body is constantly giving off the products of combustion which are produced within it from the food formerly taken. These waste products are eliminated from the lungs, the skin, the kidneys, and intestine. There may be said to be three different phases in the life of an individual in relation to food-taking. The first in the earlier years of life when the body is growing, the second in the middle period of life when the grown body remains more or less stationary, and the third in the later years of life when some measure of wasting is exhibited. In the first the intake of food must be greater than the output, in the second it must be at least equal, and in the last the output may be said to be greater than the intake.

During life, moreover, there are times, for example, during febrile diseases, when the output is greater than the intake, due for the most part to the greater combustion of the tissues of the body, and, to a lesser degree, to the inability to take sufficient nutrition to cope with the waste. Or a person may become the victim of a disease such as diabetes, and though he may exhibit no less degree of appetite than during health, he visibly becomes more and more emaciated. Here the emaciation is caused by a defect in the processes of assimilation of food, and the material, starchy foods, which in health would go to his nutrition, is passed in large quantities by the kidneys in the form of sugar. It thus becomes necessary to arrange special dietaries for such persons. During the process of starvation, moreover, in famines, the expenditure exceeds the intake of food, the bodily tissues gradually waste away, and sooner or later the victim dies.

But since our concern now is chiefly with the average healthy person, it will be well to consider what nutrition really means. It may be said to be achieved in the four following steps, viz. (1) the taking of suitable food in suitable amount; (2) the digestion of the food; (3) the absorption of the food, and (4) the assimilation of the food. Associated with any one of these four stages towards nutrition there may be errors or disabilities. A description of the processes of digestion, absorption, and assimilation are subjects more fitted, however, for a work on physiology than for our present object. There are, however, certain terms which are employed to describe shortly the processes which food undergoes before it is fit for the uses of the body, and those which are associated with the waste of bodily tissues, which may be defined. The building-up processes are sometimes called *anabolism* or *anabolic* processes, whereas the breaking-down processes are denominated *katabolism* or *katabolic* changes. The term *metabolism* is applied to the changes which take place in the tissues, in relation to food, air, and water, and *metabolic* products to the waste substances which are excreted by the ordinary channels from the body. The body, taken as a whole, may be considered to be composed of the following respective materials: Water 64 per cent, proteids 16 per cent, fat 14 per cent, mineral salts 5 per cent, and carbohydrates 1 per cent. The muscular portion of the body forms about 40 per cent of the entire weight of the body, the brain forms 2 per cent, the fat about 18 per cent, the internal organs about 9 to 10 per cent, the skin about 1 per cent less, the blood about 5 per cent, and the bony framework about 16 per cent. In the muscles is contained about one-half of the proteid material of the whole body. But the constituents of

these individual parts are constantly undergoing changes, and it is to replace the substances changed and thrown out of the body that food is needed. As has already been stated, the average adult man at average work gives off daily from his body as carbon dioxide gas about 250 to 280 grammes, or from 8 to 10 ounces, of carbon, and in the same time, 15 to 18 grammes of nitrogen. These respective amounts of carbon and nitrogen represent the waste of the bodily tissues due to the work. What, generally, then, are the processes which take place in the body during work with respect to its energy? We have already seen that the body is made up of two classes of tissues, viz. those which contain nitrogen, and those which do not. It has been said, also, that one of the main functions of food, besides giving energy, is to supply the animal heat of the body. During muscular exercise the muscles, which contain about one-half of the proteid material of the entire body, undergo tear and wear; in other words, the proteid material is broken up into other nitrogenous products which are eliminated from the body as urea and uric acid by the kidneys. It was at one time taught by Liebig that in direct proportion to the muscular power exerted must be the supply of nitrogenous or albuminous food, because, he believed, the more the muscular exertion the greater the elimination of urea and uric acid. This was, however, found by direct experiment on men not to be true. Others, as Moleschott and Voit, proved that nitrogenous metabolism is not to any extent, certainly not proportionately to the work done, increased by work, and that work, unless prolonged and severe, does not tend to increase to any extent the amount of nitrogenous waste excreted. The most noteworthy change which takes place during hard work is the

markedly increased excretion of carbon dioxide gas from the lungs, which shows that rapid oxidation of tissue is taking place. These facts were proved by placing men in turn in an experimental chamber in the Munich laboratory, under conditions in which the oxygen supplied by the ingoing air and the carbon dioxide gas coming out in the outgoing air could be exactly estimated. These tests were employed, first, while the man was at rest, and second, while employed at work turning a heavy wheel. In the first experiment, the amount of oxygen taken in and absorbed was about 709 grammes, the carbon dioxide gas given out was 911·5 grammes, water 828 grammes, and urea 37·2 grammes. In the second experiment, the oxygen absorbed was 954·5 grammes, the carbon dioxide given out 1284·2 grammes, water 2042·1 grammes, and urea 37·0 grammes. The noteworthy points from these experiments, therefore, are these: (1) that during work more oxygen was absorbed, and more carbon dioxide and water excreted, than during rest, and (2) that the amount of urea thrown off from the body was practically identical on both occasions.

Ranke made an experiment upon himself which is of interest. He estimated in his food the amounts taken of proteid and carbon, and then estimated the nitrogen and carbon found in his excretions, and he found that the intake and output of both nitrogen and carbon exactly balanced. Physiologically, therefore, it would seem as if a slight excess of albuminous food should be taken by those who have to perform regular, hard work, but this must not be markedly in excess, for reasons to be pointed out presently. But hard work depends more for its needs upon fats and carbohydrates than upon albuminous foods, which, after all, are the main sources of energy.

Man was intended to be a mixed feeder: he is neither a herbivorous nor a carnivorous animal exclusively. In the process of Banting for the reduction of obesity, a person for the time being approximates the condition of a carnivorous animal. He is fed on animal food at all or most of his meals, such as lean meat; therefore in order to maintain physiological equilibrium, seeing he is getting an excess of proteid substances, he must derive the necessary carbon from the combustion of the fat of his body, of which already he has too much. He thus becomes lighter in weight. The experiment cannot be continued for too long consecutive periods, because too much work is thrown upon the kidneys. On the other hand, where a person feeds mainly upon carbohydrate foods, as rice, he obtains too little nitrogenous food for the needs of his body, and thus he is incapable of much muscular energy or of resistance to disease, although he may form fat.

From these considerations, therefore, it will be seen that physiological amounts of each of the proximate principles of food are required for the achievement and maintenance of bodily health, whether that be merely as subsistence diet or work diet.

CHAPTER XXVII.

CHARACTERISTICS OF GROUPS OF FOODS.

Flesh Meats.—The value of flesh meats consists in that they supply proteids, fat, and mineral salts to diet. All meat, however lean, contains some fat, but the proportion of fat which any meat contains depends upon the kind of animal, its age and condition, and the part of the body from which the meat is taken. Meats have been divided into red meats and white meats. The former are obtained chiefly from the ox or cow, deer, goat, sheep, and the horse, and the white meats from the flesh of the calf, the pig, and poultry. That of game birds is usually reddish. As to the digestibility of flesh foods, there is difference of opinion as between beef and mutton; on the whole, because of the larger proportion of stearin in the fat of mutton, mutton is less easily digested than beef. Pork is more difficult of digestion, because of its relatively greater amount of fat. Veal, when not taken from too young an animal, and when properly prepared, is comparatively easily digested. When too young, it contains too much gelatine, and its fibre is more difficult to masticate. The flesh of poultry, properly cooked, is the most easily digested of all, but ducks are more indigestible, chiefly because of their fat. Game birds are sometimes difficult to digest because they are commonly kept till "high," and then not infrequently are imperfectly

cooked. For these reasons, they are occasionally a source of mischief to the consumer. One of the most digestible flesh substances, and one, moreover, which is relatively much cheaper than beef or mutton, is tripe. This when properly cooked is one of the most digestible of flesh foods, and ought to form more commonly an article of diet of the poorer classes. Kidneys and livers and tongues of healthy animals, also, when duly cooked, are nourishing and toothsome dishes. On the average, flesh meat in the raw condition contains about 70 per cent of water, about 20 per cent of proteids, and from 5 to 10 per cent of fat. Good flesh meat ought to possess the following characteristics, viz. (1) a uniform reddish colour; (2) little or no odour; (3) be firm and elastic to touch; (4) should hardly moisten the finger when touched, and should be dry on its exterior.

The flesh of the horse is coarser in texture than that of any other animal, it exhibits little or no fat, but where it is visible, it is yellower in colour, but is not objectionable to the palate. It is used in the manufacture of sausages on the Continent, and when obtained from healthy animals forms a cheap and useful food. Sausages are made of beef or pork minced, and may or may not contain bread crumbs, tomatoes, or other ingredients of unobjectionable character. The contents of many continental sausages are an enigma.

Meat Extracts.—The use of meat extracts based upon the supposition that they are in reality foods must be abandoned. They are really stimulants, and in that regard fulfil a useful function. "An ox in a tea-cup" may be a clever advertisement, but it is not expressive of the fact that the nutritive value of the ox is so concentrated. Taken freely admixed with water, cold or hot, depending

upon the nature of the preparation, they form valuable stimulants.

Milk and Milk Products.—Milk is a solution or emulsion of proteids, fat, mineral salts, and sugar, called galactose, in water. The average milk of a good cow contains per 100 parts, 87 parts of water, 4 parts of fat, 5 parts of sugar, 3·3 parts of albuminous matter, and 0·7 part of mineral matter. The milk of other animals presents slight differences in proportion of one or other of these constituents: that of the ass and the mare being nearest the milk of the woman. The fat of milk, forming butter, contains higher proportions of the volatile fatty acids than margarine or any other preparation of fat, and give the pleasant odour to butter. The proteids of milk are interesting. Casein or caseinogen is not coagulated by heat, but is coagulated by rennet or a dilute admixture of acid, or by the lactic acid and other microbes. The other chief proteid is lactalbumin, which is coagulated at a temperature of 150-163° Fahr. The salts in milk are composed of phosphates and chlorides of potash, soda, lime, and magnesia, with a trace of iron. There are more phosphates than chlorides. Citric acid is found in cow's milk to the amount of about 0·12 per cent. Milk freshly drawn from the cow presents the curious phenomenon of reddening blue litmus paper and changing turmeric paper, thus showing both acid and alkaline reaction. It may be said, however, that this reaction is never seen in the milk which has been by rail or other conveyance transported to a distance. Milk tends to be slightly acid before it reaches the town consumer, although the degree of acidity does not make itself felt to the sense of taste. Sometimes, however, a taste is imparted to milk from the food-stuffs upon which the cows are fed: such plants as

garlic give a decided flavour to milk, and the same is alleged of turnips. The great desideratum at the present day in this country is *clean* milk. It cannot be pretended that the milk supplies of towns is in this condition, for passing the milk through a fine sieve will show the opposite. Doubtless, if more care were taken by the milkers to clean their hands and the udders of the cows prior to milking, this might be achieved, but this does not seem to be regularly done. Denmark and other foreign countries take great pains to secure clean milk, with the result that it keeps sweet for much longer periods. That this is a clamant demand is evidenced by the fact that, for want of ordinary cleanliness in milking, milk is polluted. This has been put to strict experiment. There can be no doubt about the improvement in keeping qualities which is effected by cleaning of hands of milker and udder of cow before milking; and the same is true of clean, sanitary milk-houses. Milk which has been found to keep sweet for fifty hours after it had been drawn from the unwashed udder and teats of a healthy cow, was found to keep its sweetness for one and a half days longer when drawn in the open air after careful toilette of the cow and milker. The same result may be ascertained scientifically by bacterioscopic examination of minute portions of the milk drawn under these two different conditions. Dr. Freeman, in the *Medical Record* for March 8, 1896, has recorded the results of an experiment in this direction. He exposed three plates (Petri) of exactly like size and condition, the first in the open air, the second inside a cowshed, and the third immediately in front of the pail into which the milk of the cow was being drawn, each being exposed for two minutes. From the plate exposed in the open air 6 colonies of microbes

grew, from that exposed inside the cowshed, 111 colonies, and from the third, exposed under the belly of the cow, 1800 colonies developed: thus showing that the continuous movement of the hands and fingers of the milker on ordinarily dirty teats was causative of the great excess in number of microbes which fell into the milk. What is wanted in these days is some form of suitable mechanical milker, so that human hands do not touch teat or milk, and thus clean milk be obtained.

Normal milk of the cow has a sp. gr. between 1·029 and 1·034. This, however, may be simulated by abstracting fat and adding water. As a test of milk, therefore, the lactometer alone is of no value. When milk gathered in the usual way is permitted to stand in a clean place, it naturally undergoes certain changes. The first of these is that it turns sour. The souring process is hastened by a temperature ranging between 76° and 86° Fahr. Nothing expedites the process more quickly than placing milk in a vessel which, formerly containing the same fluid, has not been thoroughly scalded. This souring is ordinarily occasioned by the lactic acid microbe, but many other organisms effect the same change.

Condensed milk is now largely in use for a variety of purposes. It is a not uncommon substitute for fresh cow's milk on board ship, and in other circumstances where fresh milk is difficult or impossible to obtain. It is prepared by evaporating fresh milk in vacuum pans to about one-third or one-fourth its original bulk, by which it becomes of the consistence of semi-fluid paste, when it is placed in tins which are hermetically sealed, and sold for use as required. Condensed milk may be obtained as whole milk, as skimmed milk, or as separated milk, and it may be had in its natural state, or artificially

sweetened. When cane-sugar is added, the milk keeps better. Since skimmed milk is sold in tins, care should be exercised to see that it is not used for the food of infants. "Dried" or desiccated milk is now being manufactured, to take the place of condensed milk. It is a coarsely granular powder, and contains all the solid ingredients of whole milk. When added in the proportion of thirteen parts to eighty parts by weight of water at 100° to 120° Fahr., excellent milk is formed.

Cream may be said to be milk which contains a large excess of fat and less water than ordinary milk. It depends upon the mode of collecting the cream how rich it is in fat. Hand-skimming does not secure so large a proportion of the fat as does the action of a "separator," consequently milk skimmed by the latter method has no fat left in it, whereas in hand-skimmed milk some portion of fat always remains. It has been shown by experiment that the hand is able to remove between 80 and 90 per cent of fat, while the machine is capable of removing it entirely.

Curds and Whey.—Milk curdled is a favourite dish with many persons in summer. It is prepared on the large scale by adding rennet, or a preparation of it, obtained from the inner lining of the calf's stomach. It consists of the coagulated casein and fat, the fluid which surrounds it after standing being the whey, in which the sugar of milk is to be found. Butter is produced from the violent agitation of milk in churning. The fat is separated into granular particles, which, uniting together and floating on the surface of the milk, are gathered, worked into pats or lumps by means of little wooden spades, by which also the milk worked up at first in the butter is washed out of it. Butter is made in one of two

ways usually. One method is to use only whole fresh milk, the other to use in churning the cream from one or more previous milkings with the fresh milk. By the former method, butter will keep longest. The keeping power of butter depends, however, more upon the milk-free condition in which it is got than upon any other factor. In many parts of the country, it is usual to put even in fresh butter a small amount of salt to aid in keeping. If butter be heated until it completely melts, the casein and water which it contains will fall to the bottom of the vessel, and if the melted fat be decanted free of these, it will keep for a very long time. The fat so treated is called "smalt."

Butter Substitutes or Margarine.—These are made as follows: Fresh beef-suet is cut up finely by machinery, is then heated to about 110° Fahr. for some hours to separate the fat from the fibre. The melted fat is then drawn off free of fibre, and is kept at a temperature of between 80° and 90° Fahr. so that the stearin may become consolidated. This is separated from the fluid fats, which are then churned with fresh milk alone, or with fresh milk and some genuine butter. It may be coloured yellow with annatto or "carrotine," or other innocuous colouring material. The conditions under which margarine may be sold in this and other countries are defined by statute, the objects being to prevent margarine being substituted and sold for butter. Margarine differs mainly from cow's butter in that it does not possess the volatile fatty acids of the latter except in trifling amount.

Cheese is made from the milk of different animals, but chiefly from the milk of the cow. The first stage of preparation is the same as that for making curds—that is, the milk is heated to about 80° Fahr. and then the rennet,

or it may be, sour whey, is added. Cheeses are of two kinds, depending upon the character of their constituents, viz. (*a*) those which contain the entire milk, and (*b*) those which contain the milk minus the fat. The former are sometimes called double cheese, and the latter single cheese. After the curd has set, it is cut up into small pieces, in order to allow better the whey to drain off. This whey contains water, milk salts, and milk sugar; indeed, it is from whey that "sugar of milk" is commonly prepared in any quantity. The curd, now drained and firmed, is placed in the cheese press, and is subjected to gradually increased pressure to rid it of all watery fluid. On completion of this stage, the mass which will eventually form the cheese is placed in the curing-house. Here the "ripening" takes place, the process being assisted by maintaining the room at a uniform temperature, about 70° Fahr. Ripening consists in the growth and development of microbes and microscopic moulds or fungi in the mass, by which a large variety of changes takes place in the curd and in the fat. The casein partly becomes converted into derivative bodies, and fatty acids are liberated from the fat, which unite with lime salts present to form organic salts of lime. Ripening only takes place in whole cheese, not in the other, which tend only to become drier and tougher through standing. Cheddar, Cheshire, Dunlop, and other cheese are made from whole milk, English Stilton from whole milk enriched with added cream, and Ednam (Holland) cheese is practically skim-milk cheese. Cream cheese, so called, is in reality rich fresh milk curd which has undergone acid fermentation. There are various table cheeses of foreign make worthy to be noted. Roquefort is made from the partially skimmed milk of ewes. Gorgonzola is practically alike to it. Both

are ripened by the action of moulds which are cultivated on bread, and added to the cheese-curd. Parmesan is manufactured from partly skimmed goat's milk. Camembert of the strong odour, is a soft cheese, and is ripened by a peculiar process. Cheese made from margarine, or "filled" cheeses, as they are called, have been put on the market. They are made by substituting lard for the fat of the butter, adding it to skim milk, and passing the mixture through the same process as for ordinary cheese.

Dietetic Value.—Since milk is the main food of the young of animals, including man, it may be said to be Nature's food for these, and ought, as is found, to be specially well adapted for their nourishment in early life. Human milk contains about 2·90 per cent of fat, 2·40 of casein, and 5·87 of sugar, and that of the cow, of the same ingredients, from 3·5 to 4·0, 3·98, and 4·0 per cent respectively. It will thus be seen that the former is better suited than the latter for infants, since the proportion of the proximate principles is most in accord with the needs of sustenance and growth. The latter contains more fat and more casein, and if used for infants must be diluted and sweetened. But there are essential differences in the character of the proteids of human and cow's milk which have to be noted, the chief of which is that in the former the proteids which are not coagulable by rennet are double the amount of those which are, whereas in the latter the coagulable proteids are four times in amount that of the non-coagulable proteids. The stomach of a newly-born child is able to contain only about three-quarters of an ounce of liquid; by the end of a month, however, it will hold from an ounce to an ounce and a half, and at the end of two months, about two and a half

ounces. The secret of feeding an infant artificially on milk consists in (1) scrupulous cleanliness of the bottle, (2) feeding at regular, short intervals, and (3) giving appropriate quantities according to its age. For want of such precautions as these, many infantile lives are lost annually. Milk alone is not a suitable diet for the grown adult in health, since it contains too small a proportion of carbohydrates; but taken with starchy foods, as bread, potatoes, or porridge, it suits the needs of the body fairly well for short periods. An excellent morning meal is one which consists in part of bruised oats or oatmeal properly cooked, with plenty of sweet milk. It is admirably adapted for all persons, but especially for girls and boys while growing. Butter milk contains mainly casein, little fat, and lactic acid. It forms an excellent drink for persons engaged in occupations in which free perspiration is usual, but it does not seem to be suitable for those of a rheumatic tendency. The experiments of Pawlow regarding the digestibility of different foods show that milk possesses three prominent advantages over other foods rich in nitrogen, viz. (1) it requires the least amount of digestive fluids for its digestion; (2) that apart from the appetite, it produces sufficient excitation of the digestive canal to cause its digestion; and (3) that a much larger fraction of its contained nitrogen is free to be used by the tissues of the user than that of any other kind of food. Cream used in other than small quantities is difficult of digestion by the bulk of persons, chiefly because of its high proportion of fat. Devonshire cream, as it is called, must be put in the same category. This is not a true cream, as will be seen from the mode of preparing it. The milk is heated in pans at a temperature below that of boiling-point for some hours, the effect of which is to

evaporate off not a little of the water of the milk, but also to coagulate the milk-albumen. Hence the product is almost semi-solid. Cheese with bread is a good staying food for healthy persons who have to do hard work. It cannot be taken with impunity in quantity by the ordinary city-dweller who has not active exercise; and this is true particularly of cheese of continental make, because of the modes of ripening them. Cheese, however, is a handy food, easy of transportation, and concentrated in character. Condensed milks are more used now than they used to be. They are useful when fresh milk cannot be obtained, but they lack something which fresh milk possesses. Perhaps one of their most common uses is for infant-feeding. Some insist that the best condensed milk is more easily digested by the young infant than ordinary cow's milk diluted. That, in our view, is too sweeping an assertion. When used, however, it requires first to be diluted with twelve parts of water, and the quantity given to be as for ordinary prepared cow's milk. As the child grows, the proportion of water is gradually lessened. There can be little doubt that condensed milk suits many children. They become fat, but experience indicates that not infrequently they are soft. The suitability of the milk of cows for infant-feeding, however, would seem to depend more on the purity of the milk than upon its kind. "Humanised" milk which has been sterilised seems to be best, since gastro-intestinal catarrh is least commonly found when this is used than in the case of the others. After all, therefore, we come back to the need for clean milk.

Butter fat is comparatively easily digested, and good butter has a flavour all its own. Much nonsense has been written regarding margarine. As a matter of fact,

it is a wholesome food, and is an excellent and cheap substitute for butter for cooking and eating purposes.

Eggs.—These are an excellent substitute for animal flesh food. From Table VII it will be seen that they compare favourably with flesh in respect of fat and proteids. They are most suitable in invalid dietary, when stronger albuminous food cannot be borne and digested. The fat of the egg is mostly contained in the yolk. There is a common belief that brown-shelled eggs are richer than white-shelled. This is, however, not borne out by analysis, as they are found to be fairly comparable in composition. There is also some difference of opinion regarding the best method of eating eggs. Some believe in hard-boiled, others in soft-boiled eggs. Personally we believe that the special advantage attaching to the hard-boiled egg is that it compels the eater to masticate the solid albumen more thoroughly, and thus to give the gastric juice easier work. When an egg is eaten in a semi-fluid state, there is a tendency to swallow the spoonful whole without any mastication. Eggs beaten up with some form of alcoholic stimulant act as a speedy restorative under many circumstances, and in the form of custard, made with milk and some flavouring, the albumen of egg may be borne by the weakest stomach. There is some foundation for the belief that the eggs of different birds differ as to digestibility. The egg of the duck, for example, has the reputation of being less digestible than that of the hen, or turkey. We know of individuals who are able to tell, by their uncomfortable sensations later, that they have unwittingly partaken of duck egg in a pudding. Plover's eggs, on the other hand, are believed, when taken raw or lightly cooked, to be especially easily digested by invalids. Many experiments have been made *in vitro*

regarding the digestibility of eggs cooked under a variety of conditions as to length of time boiled. For example, it it has been ascertained that eggs boiled respectively for three and twenty minutes, and then left to the action of pepsin solution for five hours, show at the end of the period 8·3 and 4·1 per cent respectively of undigested proteids; but if cooked for five and ten minutes in water at 180° Fahr., and treated in the same solution, no undigested residuum is left.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

CHARACTERISTICS OF GROUPS OF FOODS

(Continued).

Fats and Oils.—In addition to the fat of butter, which is perhaps the kind of fat most largely used in the world, there are others which take part in the diet of man. Associated with animal flesh in greater or lesser amounts, they constitute some portion of albuminous food-stuffs. But apart from these, there are such more or less pure fats, as lard, olive, cotton-seed, and sesame oils, together with certain nuts which contain more or less oily substances, regarding which a few words must be said. Lard, or, as it was long ago called, kitchen fee, because it was a perquisite of the cook, is made from the fat of flesh dissolved in culinary operations, and rendered clear before cooling and becoming solid. It is used, or margarine is substituted for it, in basting various flesh meats, for making pastries, and for cooking potato-chips, or even whole potatoes. Lard contains a large proportion of olein, which keeps it soft and plastic. Olive oil is obtained from the fruit of the olive tree. It is expressed in the cold from the fruit by hydraulic pressure, or after the fruit has been warmed. It enters more largely into continental methods of cookery than into those prevalent in this country, but as oil-dressing for salads it has a more extensive use. Olive oil, because of its initial cost,

is apt to be adulterated with cheaper oils of other origin, such as cotton-seed, sesame, peanut, or poppy oils, which can be detected by analysis. The objection to admixture of these with olive oil is not that they are innutritious or harmful; on the contrary, they are also beneficial as foods, although perhaps not so digestible as the pure oil. Cotton-seed oil is in reality an excellent substitute for olive oil or lard, and is of great use in culinary operations in which some form of fat is commonly employed. Various fruits, such as almonds, walnuts, and cocoanut, also contain not inconsiderable percentages of oil or fat. The green fat of the turtle is so expensive as almost to be a luxury. It, however, is very digestible. Cod-liver oil, as its name implies, is obtained from the livers of cod-fish (*Gadus morrhuæ*). There is good reason, however, to believe that the livers of fish, other than the cod, are being used to supply the product sold under that name. Fats and oils form a relatively large part of the diet of the Esquimaux and other inhabitants of arctic climes, while *ghee*, melted butter, takes its place in India. Chemically, fats are composed of 79 parts of carbon, 10 parts of oxygen, and 11 parts of hydrogen. It would be absolutely correct to say that in the composition of fats nitrogen does not enter, if we could except an unusual form of so-called fat which is found in the nerve tissue of human beings and in the yolk of egg, viz. lecithin, which contains phosphorus as well as nitrogen.

Starchy or Farinaceous Foods.—These are derived from cereal plants. All contain preponderance of starch over their other ingredients, although like other foods, they likewise contain proportions of proteids, fat, mineral matter, and water. The mineral salts which they contain are mainly phosphates of lime, magnesia, soda, and

potash. Wheat, barley, oats, rice, Indian corn, buckwheat, and rye are the chief cereals. Wheat contains about 71 per cent, barley 69·5 per cent, rice 78·8 per cent, oats 58 per cent, Indian corn or maize 71·7 per cent, buckwheat 63 per cent, and rye about 72 per cent of starch. They also differ from one another in the proportion of fat which they contain, oatmeal containing as much as 6 per cent, and rice as little as less than a half per cent, wheat flour having an intermediate amount, 1·75 per cent. Wheaten flour is richest in gluten, oatmeal and maize meal being very deficient, therefore the former lends itself to cake-making, while the others do not. Bread made of wheat or rye forms the principal table carbohydrate in all countries. The unleavened bread of the Jews was made without yeast, but ordinary bread is made either with yeast, or with some substitute, to make it "lighter." Butter milk and bicarbonate of soda or baking soda, cream of tartar and baking soda, or baking powders, which are commonly made of tartaric acid, or some acid salt, and bicarbonate of soda, are the most frequent substitutes. In Dauglish's patent process, carbon dioxide gas under pressure is forcibly mixed with the dough. Pastry is made with some form of fat, and unless well masticated, is apt to be indigestible. Much controversy has arisen as to the relative advantages of "whole" wheaten meal bread and ordinary wheaten bread. It does not appear that in ordinary bread made from ordinary wheaten meal, there is much, if any, nutritive property left out by omitting the external covering of the grain. New bread is indigestible solely because it is difficult to masticate, owing to its plastic character, and therefore it is almost impossible to duly mix it with saliva. It is because in toasting bread the

bulk of the moisture is driven off and the bread is rendered crisper and drier, and therefore requires more mastication before it can be swallowed, that it is more digestible. Macaroni, vermicelli, and spaghetti are peculiarly of Sicilian origin, although now extensively used in most civilised countries. They are best made from hard wheat—that of Calabria, for example, which is rich in gluten. They are made by making a stiff paste of the flour with water, which is pressed through holes or moulds in a metal plate, or moulded into devices, and then dried. Flour is probably one of the articles of diet least liable to adulteration, because of the plentifulness and cheapness of wheat. Rye is not used in this country except as a rarity, but is the common bread-stuff of the peasants of Russia and other countries. Barley was at one time in common use in Scotland for making bread or bannocks, and for the manufacture of whisky, but is now much less in vogue, its place being taken by other starch substances. Diastase is obtained from it in the manufacture of malt from barley. Oatmeal deserves a much better place as an article of diet than is at present given to it. At one time it formed the principal fare of our Scottish peasantry and workmen: to-day it is much more largely used, in one form or another, by the better classes. Much that is untrustworthy has been written regarding its digestibility. As a matter of fact, it is one of the most nutritious foods we have at our hand. When properly cooked and eaten, it is easy of digestion. Oatmeal, if steeped in water overnight, will be cooked by thirty minutes' boiling, but if not, then it must be boiled for forty to sixty minutes. Many persons err when eating porridge in taking it too hot, and are, therefore, apt to swallow each spoonful as a "bolus" unmixed with saliva, and

thus indigestion is fostered or engendered. If it could be remembered that the active gland principle which digests any starchy food is chiefly that found in the saliva, and that the food should be duly mixed with that secretion before it is swallowed, much less digestive trouble would be heard of in regard to porridge. Crushed oats, known best, perhaps, under the name of "Quaker Oats" and "Provost Oats," form an excellent change in the form of oatmeal, or even a necessary substitute where oatmeal is found too heating. Maize forms the chief, if not sole, ingredient of many proprietary articles of farinaceous diet, known as corn flour, hominy, and by other names.

Associated with the cereals proper are the legumes, viz. beans, peas, and lentils. They differ from the cereals in that they are much richer in proteids, of which they contain about double the amount. To some extent they might be designated vegetable flesh foods because of this. The principal proteid in them is called legumin. But they are more difficult of digestion than animal flesh food, because the digestive organs have greater difficulty in attacking the proteids owing to their intimate association with vegetable fibre; and for the same reason, they are less nutritious, weight for weight, than animal proteids. Containing a small proportion of sulphur, which forms sulphuretted hydrogen in the intestine, beans and peas are apt to give rise to troublesome and disagreeable flatulence. Lentils, however, do not contain any sulphur. Freshly-grown garden peas are not so rich in proteids as mature peas which have been dried, the average amount of proteids which they contain being only about 7 per cent as compared with about 22 per cent in the mature dried pea. Among the beans, we have to differentiate between

the broad bean and the French bean used as a green vegetable. While the former contains about 23-24 per cent of proteids, the latter contains only a little over 2 per cent. One other kind of bean must be named, viz. the Soja bean. This kind contains at least eight times more fat than any other form, and a little more than half the amount of starch. For these reasons, it has been recommended to be used by diabetic patients. Lentils are probably the most nutritious of the legumes. They are richer in proteids than beans or peas, are as rich in starch and fat, and they do not contain sulphur, therefore causing less disagreeable flatulence. Their popularity in this country has probably suffered by reason of the proper mode of cooking them being imperfectly understood. They are probably best served as a soup. The lentils are steeped in water overnight, are boiled next day for two and a half hours at least, are then rubbed through a fine sieve back into the soup-pot, and the soup is then served. Haricot beans need long steeping and cooking to render them digestible. Raw or imperfectly cooked, they give rise to gastro-intestinal irritation, sometimes of an acute character. But well cooked, they form with bread an excellent substitute for potatoes.

CHAPTER XXIX.

CHARACTERISTICS OF GROUPS OF FOODS

(Continued).

Potatoes.—Probably no farinaceous food has become so popular in this country, since its introduction into Ireland by Sir Walter Raleigh from Virginia in 1585, than the potato. Although much less rich in proteids and starch than any other form of starchy food already considered, it possesses a virtue which none of these others has, viz. anti-scorbutic property, due to the salts of potash which it contains. Its proteids only amount to about 2 per cent, and its starch to 18 per cent, while its water amounts to about 78 per cent. The starch of the potato is more readily acted upon by the saliva than any other form. Most nutrition is obtained from it when boiled in its "jacket." When potatoes are first peeled and then boiled, the loss of nitrogen is about 46 per cent of the whole contained, whereas if boiled in their skins, the loss only amounts to about 1 per cent. Steaming is the better form of cooking, however, because then there is no loss.

Besides the foregoing, must be reckoned as farinaceous foods the substances called arrowroot, tapioca, and sago. Arrowroot is a pure starch, obtained from the root of the maranta plant, but the name also covers starches got from the roots of the cassava, canna, curcuma, and other plants. From the dietetic point of view, it is

questionable whether arrowroot is of any other or higher value than so much potato starch. Tapioca proper is obtained from the thick, fleshy, tuberous root of the manihot or cassava plant. In its original state the root possesses an acrid juice, which is destroyed, however, by heating the sliced root, or the starch obtained therefrom, on hot plates, which has the additional effect of bursting some of the starch granules. Sago is obtained from the pith of so-called sago palms. The pith is taken out, ground into a powder, mixed with water, and strained through a fine sieve or coarse cloth, thus arresting the fibre, the starch granules passing through the cloth with the water. The collected starch is made into a paste, which is then roughly granulated to form the sago of commerce.

Vegetables.—Under the popular designation of vegetables are included various plant materials, the leaves, stems, and shoots of which are chiefly used; but to these must be added certain fruits which are used as vegetables. Among the former may be named cabbage, Brussel sprouts, cauliflower, asparagus, celery, lettuce, cress, leeks, onions, spinach, dandelion, endive, and sorrel; among the latter, the tomato, vegetable marrow, cucumber, and others. Besides, there are not a few roots which are in table language called vegetables, such as turnips, carrots, parsnips, beetroot, radishes, salsafy, and artichokes. Most of these are of value because of their anti-scorbutic properties. They contain on the average about 90 per cent of water. Some contain sulphur, as cabbage, leeks, and onions; others contain stimulating principles, as radishes, cress, and celery, but all are relatively rich in salts of value to the blood. They are poor in proteids, fat, and carbohydrates. Of the fruit-vegetables, perhaps

those named are the most popular in this country, the squash and pumpkin being common in America. The tomato is a very much over-rated fruit. It has, indeed, about the same nutritive value as a lettuce, and contains only about 6 per cent of solid matter, the rest being water. Its cost is far beyond its value, that being doubtless due to the cost of rearing it artificially in this country. The vegetable roots have about the same nutritive value as other vegetables. They are all poor in proteids, and contain about 90 per cent of water. They are rich in potash salts, however; hence their value to the blood. They give a piquant taste to other dishes, because of their flavour, as, for example, radish and parsnip. The so-called "Jerusalem" artichoke contains no starch, but yields about 14-16 per cent of sugar, which latter beetroot also gives in relatively large amount. It is hardly necessary to add that the name "Jerusalem" is merely a corruption of the Italian word *girasole*, which means sun-turning—therefore, a sunflower.

Fruits.—The name fruit is limited in the language of the menu to products of plants or trees which are of use as dessert. They are used principally because of their flavour and sweetness. These are due to the amounts of pectin, sugar, gum, acids and other constituents which they possess. Apples, pears, plums, apricots, peaches, cherries, oranges, grapes, figs, bananas, melons, and various forms of berries are the principal of them, but many other foreign fruits might be added. Some of these, together with some unnamed, are in use in the dried form under different names, as prunes, raisins, currants, etc. Apples, pears, plums, and others contain varying proportions of malic acid, while oranges contain citric acid. All of them are poor in proteids, contain about 80 per cent of water,

and all contain more or less sugar. Fruits are pleasant to the palate, and give variety to a meal, while they are most healthful taken in moderation. Of the different forms of berries which are in use, probably strawberries, gooseberries, raspberries, and blackberries are most popular. They all contain more or less sugar, and in this respect the gooseberry, weight for weight, contains more than the strawberry. Some are too sour or too astringent for food without the addition of sugar after cooking. They are of great anti-scorbutic value.

Sugars.—The chief forms of sugar in use are derived from the sugar-cane and from beetroot; but in America, sugar obtained from the sugar maple is also used in domestic use. Of course, sugar is found in many plants besides those named, but they are not used to yield sugar commercially. Lactose or sugar of milk is used for limited purposes—among others that of sweetening milk for infants. Cane sugar is largely used in making candied fruits and preserves of garden and other fruits. Syrup and molasses or treacle were much more used formerly than now. The best cane sugar is white in colour, the cheaper forms being more or less yellow or brownish in colour. Sugar is rarely adulterated, because it is so cheap. Sometimes brown Demerara sugar, used mainly for coffee, is imitated by dyeing the crystals artificially. Glucose or grape sugar is much used in the manufacture of certain food substances. Maple sugar is used in this country mainly as a sweetmeat. It has a pleasant flavour. Maple syrup is used abroad for sweetening cakes. Cane sugar may be recognised scientifically by the fact that it rotates a polarised ray of light to the right, whereas when heated with dilute acids it is split up into dextrose and levulose, which, as explained before, are so named because

of their respective action of turning a polarised ray of light to right and left. Molasses or treacle is used for the manufacture of rum, hence less good treacle is obtainable now than formerly. It is often adulterated with glucose syrup, and may, on occasion, be found to contain proto-chloride of tin, since that substance is used to improve the colour. Honey is a viscid substance obtained by bees from the nectaries of flowers, and stored in combs. It contains both dextrose and levulose, together with other ingredients. As sold in this country, it rarely causes objectionable results, but occasionally in foreign countries, because of the kind of flowers from which it has been gathered, poisonous symptoms have been produced in those who eat it. The flavour, odour, and colour of honey vary, depending upon the flowers frequented by the bees. Heather honey is especially prized. It is of very agreeable taste, and is easily assimilated. On account of its price, it is liable to adulteration. Honey ought to be purchased in the comb, as then it is certain to be genuine: for although the ingenuity of man may manufacture the comb, it has not been able to simulate the mode by which the bees fill the cells. From sugar confectionery is made, with certain flavouring ingredients added. The colouring matters used are usually more or less harmless, but at times noxious colouring matters are discovered therein.

Dietetic Value.—Sugar is an excellent carbohydrate. It supplies, when digested, the body with heat. It would probably be true to say, however, that too much sugar, especially in the form of sweetmeats, is being used by our juvenile population. Whether injury to the teeth is a result of this habit or not, is a difficult question to answer. Probably dental mischief may be caused in those children who inherit the rheumatic tendency. Sugar in quantity

should be avoided by those inclined to rheumatism or obesity.

Alcoholic Drinks.—Among primitive peoples, as has been said, some form of alcoholic beverage has been devised, probably from imitation of nature's processes. So long as a sugary liquid is exposed to the action of yeast cells which float in the air, so long will alcoholic fermentation ensue. The very bloom on such fruits as grapes, plums, etc., contains the necessary ferment to convert the sugar which these fruits contain, under suitable circumstances, into weak alcohol. The Japanese drink, *saki,* has been used for many centuries. It is made from rice. Cocoa-nut wine, called *arrack,* is commonly used by barbaric tribes in Central Africa. It is, unfortunately, being replaced by the "fire-water" of the white man. While in the first instance, therefore, the character of alcoholic drink which a people or a country devised and used was determined to some extent probably by discovery of substances most apt to undergo fermentation, later, as knowledge grew, the staple drink was determined mainly by the climate in which peoples lived. The chief alcoholic drinks are wine, brandy, whisky, beer, stout, rum, gin, cider, perry, not to speak of those weak alcoholic beverages which are obtained from the fermentation of garden fruits.

Wine is a generic name given to the product of alcoholic fermentation of the grape; consequently there are many kinds of different flavours, due to the colour and character of the grapes used, and the mode of manufacture. There can be little doubt of its very early use in the history of mankind. The sugar of the grape provides the material to be acted upon by the ferment. In making wine, the first stage of the process is to make the

"*must.*" The grapes are gathered into a large receptacle, after the coarser stems are removed in the case of the better wines. The fruit is then crushed either by trampling it with the feet or by machinery. The former method does not crush the seeds, which are apt when broken to impart an astringency to the wine which is not wanted. White and red wines may be made from purple grapes. When a white wine is wanted, the skins of the grapes are removed from the *must*, but when a red wine is wanted, they are left in during the process of fermentation. The alcohol which forms liberates the colouring-matter of the skins, which is converted into a red colour by the acids formed during the fermentation. The *must*, with or without skins and seeds, is then fermented in vats, the process of fermentation being quickly set up, because, as has been remarked, the fermentive organisms are found in the bloom on the fruit. Since the process of fermentation is accelerated in action by warmth, the fermenting *must* is kept in a warmed place. This has to be conducted with great nicety. When the fermentation proceeds slowly the bouquet of the wine is better than if it proceeds more quickly. The best temperatures for slow fermentation are between 40° and 60° Fahr. During fermentation, the carbonic acid gas, which is the product of chemical action on the sugar of the grape by the ferment organisms, is gradually evolved, and the end of the fermenting stage is known by this gas ceasing to be given off, and also by the fact that the sp. gr. of the fluid in the vat becomes lower, owing to the presence of the alcohol now formed. The extent of the fermenting process depends upon the amount of proteid material in the fruit upon which the organism has to live and grow; it sometimes happens, therefore, that the activity of the

process ceases before all the available sugar is utilised. It then becomes necessary to add some albuminous material, such as white of egg, in order to permit of the fermentive process going on. The acid which is liberated from the grapes during this time is mainly tartaric acid, which unites with the potash of the fruit to form bi-tartrate of potash or cream of tartar, which being insoluble in alcohol forms the *crust* of wine. Commercially it is called *argol*. The first fermentation being now over, the alcoholic liquid is put into casks, which are kept constantly full. It remains in the casks for some months, during which time it undergoes a second slow fermentation, the effect of which is to improve the flavour or "bouquet," due to the production of the higher ethers of alcohol, chiefly œnanthic ether. At the end of this second stage the wine is decanted into other casks, in which it may require to be "fined," *i.e.* by the addition of isinglass, gelatin, or egg albumen, which helps to carry down as a sediment any matters in suspension. Red wines are mainly clarets and Burgundies, the white ones being Chablis, Hocks, Sauternes, and others with local names. Wines are divisible in the trade into those that are natural and those that are fortified. A natural wine is one which contains no more alcohol than can be produced from the fruit of which it is made, while a fortified wine is one to which additional alcohol has been added. Likewise, wines are divided into those which are sweet and those which are dry or *sec*. In the former, sugar is artificially added, whereas in the latter most of the sugar, if not all, has been changed in the process of fermentation into alcohol and carbonic acid or other acid. Wines also are either still or sparkling (*mousseux*). The former contain almost no carbonic acid, certainly none under

pressure; the latter owe their sparkling chararter to contained carbonic acid gas retained under pressure, which has either been added artificially, just as the gas is put into aerated waters, or which has been derived by fermentation from sugar added just as the bottles are wired down. Ports, Sherries, Madeiras, Tokays, and others are fortified wines. Artificial wines are constantly on the market, and ports and sherries are fairly well copied. In France, an artificial substance is manufactured in large amount from raisins and dried apples, called "piquette." It is made by adding to each gallon of water 1 lb. each of raisins and dried apples in an open vessel; the mixture is allowed to stand for three days; it is then bottled, after adding to each bottle a little sugar and a small piece of cinnamon bark.

Brandy, so called from the German *Branntwein*, or wine which has been subjected to heat, is made by distilling wines of poorer qualities, or, where an odorous brandy is desired, the lees of the casks along with the "marc" is used with the wine. Brandy flavour, or oil of wine, is got by distillation of the marc, and is used to give semblance of brandy to corn or other cheap spirit. From the marc and lees, œnanthic ether is got. The distillate from the wine being colourless, it is stored for a time in oak casks, from which some tannin is dissolved out, thereby giving it some tint of amber colour depending on the length of time it is retained in the casks. It is then stored or bottled for market. Good brandy ought to contain from 38 to 45 per cent of alcohol, and has a distinctive pleasant odour, due to ethylic ethers. Not a little of the liquid sold as brandy is not true brandy, but some cheaper alcohol flavoured to simulate brandy.

Whisky.—This is the alcoholic product of the dis-

tillation of the fermented mash of different starchy materials. The raw materials used for this purpose are malt, rye, Indian corn or maize, potato, wheat, and oats. Scotch whisky of the best sorts is made from malt, barley, and oats and rye, while Irish is made of the same materials excepting the rye. Potatoes are largely used to manufacture spirit on the Continent. In the process of mashing, the starch of the material used is changed into sugar by the diastase of the malt; but since diastase is capable of changing into sugar more starch than that with which it is ordinarily associated in grain, some additional raw grain and malt are commonly added. When the fermentation, due to yeast, is completed, distillation is performed, but the first distillate, called in the trade "low wine," is put back, and is redistilled, the second distillate being much stronger and not so rich in fusel oil, or *amyl alcohol*, than the first. It is then stored in casks for variably long periods in order to mature, or in other words, to lose the fusel oil by its change into other substances in course of time. The bouquet of whisky which is associated with different brands depends to some extent upon the nature of the raw materials of which the spirit has been made, but mainly to processes of malting; for example, "peat-reek" whisky is that having the characteristic odour of peat which has been used to dry the malt. Blending of different spirits also contributes to difference of flavour. Sometimes artificial colour is imparted to whisky by means of caramel or burnt sugar.

Alcohol, looked upon as a chemical substance, and dissociated for the moment from its connection with food and food-taking, has three separate distinct forms which are capable of recognition by the characteristic

delicate or other odour which each possesses. The three forms are *ethyl* alcohol, *methyl* alcohol, and *amyl* alcohol. The first predominates in brandy, the second in methylated spirits, and the third in new raw-grain whisky.

Beer and Stout.—Beer is a common name given to fermented liquors which are made from malt, and thus may be said to include stout, porter, and ale. Beer at one time was solely made from an infusion of malted barley, which was flavoured with hops, and fermented by yeast; nowadays, owing to the legalised use of substitutes for malt and hops, it is not so commonly so manufactured. Stout contains more malt extract and less alcohol, while porter contains more alcohol, and is made from malt dried at a high temperature. Beer is a very ancient beverage. The process of manufacture may be briefly described. First, the malt must be prepared. Barley is steeped for some days in water, thereafter it is removed from the water, is arranged in heaps, is then spread out in an even layer, is turned repeatedly, all with the object of aiding germination. When this has occurred to the necessary degree, it is next dried in kilns kept at first at a temperature about 90° Fahr., and later, raised to a higher temperature, 125°-180° Fahr., depending on the colour desired. The heating destroys the act of germination, and develops flavour. During germination, the ferment diastase is formed and developed, which acts upon the starch of the grain and converts it into dextrine and maltose. The germs and rootlets being now removed from the grain by screening and sifting, the malt is crushed and is added to water, preferably hard water, at a temperature of about 160° Fahr., to form the "wort." The water is then drawn off, is boiled with hops, which gives the liquid a bitter flavour and assists later in

clarifying the wort; the water is then cooled rapidly, is run into vats, is mixed with yeast, and the wort, now so termed, is allowed to ferment for several days. The carbonic acid produced is constantly given off while the alcohol is being formed from the maltose. Beer-brewing has become more exact since the introduction of pure yeasts, and the product has consequently been much improved. The method of fermenting, too, determines the nature of the beer. Top fermentation is carried on at a comparatively high temperature, the yeast organism growing upon the surface of the wort, whereas bottom fermentation is carried on at a lower temperature, the yeast growing at the bottom. No matter whether high or low fermentation be pursued, the maltose is not allowed to be completely acted upon by the yeast, for then flavour would be interfered with and the beer would not keep so well. Thereafter, at this stage of fermentation, the yeast is separated from the beer, and the beer is transferred into vats, where it is clarified by means of shavings or chips of hazel or beech, or other agents, which entangle the particles held in suspension. After clarification is complete, the beer is stored in casks, where it undergoes some further low fermentation, and then becomes ready for use. Glucose is sometimes used in the manufacture of beer; and where this has been made by the action of dilute sulphuric acid upon starch, it is necessary to see that the acid is arsenic-free, else chronic poisoning by that substance, as recently took place extensively in England, will occur. Sometimes the bitter flavour is obtained from other substances than hops. Quassia, calumba, gentian, and other wholesome bitters are employed, but none of them are equal to the hop. Lager beer has a slight pine-resin odour and flavour,

owing to the resin sometimes employed in caulking the beer casks. Continental beers, as a rule, contain lower percentages of alcohol than British beers.

Rum has a distinctive flavour and odour peculiar to itself. It is made from the uncrystallisable residue left in the manufacture of cane sugar, with some flavouring material, as pineapples, added. Its characteristic odour is due to butyric ether. *Gin* is alcohol made from corn flavoured with juniper berries and other materials. It, like rum, has a peculiarly distinctive odour. *Cider* or cyder, or apple wine, is made from apples. It is commonly used in England, America, and France. Of late years, great improvement in its manufacture has been made, chiefly due to carefully picked fruit being used for the best kinds. The fruit is ground to a pulp, the pulp is subjected to pressure, and the resulting fluid is put into barrels and allowed to ferment, or it is kept in wired bottles. When care is exercised in its manufacture, as is now done by the best makers, it is a sound drink for many people. It is not suitable, however, for persons subject to rheumatism. *Perry* is made from pears, as cyder is made from apples. Since pears contain more sugar than apples, perry is apt to be richer in alcohol than cyder.

Liqueurs.—These are manufactured compounds of alcohol and contain essential oils for flavouring, cane sugar, and colouring matter. The chief of them are Chartreuse, green and yellow, Benedictine, Curaçoa, Vermuth, Kirschenwasser, Anise, and Absinthe. With the exception of absinthe, in view of the limited amounts in which they are taken, liqueurs are not harmful, and often serve a corrective purpose. They are sweet, owing to the large amount of sugar which they contain.

Absinthe is a most dangerous liqueur, and ruins, sooner or later, the morals and nervous system of the *habitué*. Its noxious character is obtained from the oil of wormwood which it contains; some, however, are inclined to attribute its evil effects to the oil of star anise, which it also contains. Vermuth has wormwood also for one of its ingredients, but the same deleterious effect is not apparent from its regular use; and it is for this reason that the blame is laid at the door of the anise rather than of the wormwood. Whatever is the true source of the mischief, its evil effects are well assured.

Dietetic Uses of Alcohol.—With the exception of those alcoholic liquors which contain varying amounts of malt extract, such as beers of low alcoholic strength, stout, and porter, it may be said that alcohol, as such, has, under ordinary circumstances, little or no nutritive value. But as a stimulant and aid to digestion, it has a legitimate place in dietetics. Primarily, alcohol acts as any other stimulant, such as tea or coffee. It increases the action of the heart through its general stimulating power on the nervous system, and the difference between its action and that of tea or coffee is merely one of kind and degree. Between the extreme positions of habitual over-use of alcohol on the one hand, and total abstinence from its use on the other, there is a middle position which is a safe one. It is perfectly true that alcohol is not needful to the person in active health. That may, however, be said equally truthfully of tea or coffee, or, indeed, of any other stimulating agent. Short, however, of actual departures from health, there are not infrequently in the course of life of every person times when, by reason of temporary fatigue or nerve depression, due to the exactions of mere existence, something in addition to ordinary food is needed

in order to create appetite for food, and to give zest to digestion. That something may be tea or coffee, or small amounts of well-diluted alcohol, or, indeed, may even be a cup of hot water, or a hot drink of meat extract. Any of these will provide the requisite temporary stimulus and fillip to the digestive organs to overcome the temporary disability arising from nerve exhaustion. The choice of the stimulant, therefore, like the choice of the food itself, ought to rest with the individual; and provided none of these, compared with the others, is followed by harmful results, there is no need to interfere with the choice. In such a connection, alcohol used in regulated, moderate quantities, must be deemed to be a valuable food accessory. The position of the total abstainer is illogical in respect that he would limit the choice of stimulant to tea, coffee, cocoa, hot water, and meat extracts, forgetting that the stimulating action of these is initially identical with that of alcohol, and that abuses of these are as likely to produce harmful consequences, although less noticeable outwardly, as is alcohol. The basis of his position is, that abuse of alcohol being accompanied by such disastrous consequences, physical and moral, and in order to prevent the temptation to abuse to which a moderate use at first may lead, alcohol should be never partaken of. Surely it would be more logical to inculcate the doctrine of temperance in all things—in tea as well as in alcohol—since alcohol, like tea, in moderate use, cannot be proved to be hurtful to the average user; on the other hand, alcohol, like tea, in moderate quantities, is distinctly beneficial to many persons. We are entirely at one with those who advise the non-use of alcohol by persons of hereditary predisposition to intemperance, but for ethical or moral rather than

for physiological reasons, and we are in complete sympathy with every movement toward the repression of intemperance, because we are persuaded that the abuse of alcohol is the most potent factor in this country in the production of poverty, disease, and crime, and operates toward the subversion among our poorer classes of social order, and among all classes generally, of health and self-respect.

CHAPTER XXX.

CHARACTERISTICS OF GROUPS OF FOODS (*Continued*) —VEGETARIANISM—FOOD AND ENERGY.

Condiments.—A large variety of substances are now used at the tables of civilised peoples with the object of giving piquancy to various dishes. Among the more common are vinegar, mustard, pepper, cloves, cinnamon and cassia, allspice, ginger, nutmeg and mace, cayenne pepper, ketchup, various sauces, and others. Common salt ought to be reckoned in this class, but its use in the animal economy is dictated more of necessity than those named. All of them have marked distinctive flavours, and all act more or less as carminatives. Vinegar is merely a weak solution of acetic acid, but malt vinegar, which is derived from the acetous fermentation of malt liquors, contains minute proportions of alcohol and aldehyd, and extractive matters, which characterise it from a simple dilution of vinegar. The organism, *mycoderma aceti*, which produces the acetous fermentation, acts upon the alcoholic fluid after the action of the yeast organism, *saccharomyces cerevisiae*, has ceased. Commonly, malt vinegar contains dilute sulphuric acid in small proportions, as is permitted by law of this country up to 0·10 per cent. Mustard is made from the flour of the seeds of both black and white mustard, from which the oil has been removed. It is a common British condiment, and is an excellent stimulant

to a flagging appetite. Pepper, black and white, is obtained from a foreign climbing shrub, the former from the unripe berries, and the latter from the ripened berries, the outer black coat of which has been removed. It is a good carminative. It is liable, however, to be adulterated. Cloves are the dried flower-buds of a plant called *Eugenia caryophyllata.* They contain a strong odoriferous oil, which is used for purposes other than for food. Cloves, like pepper and allspice, are used to flavour cakes. Allspice is composed of the unripe berries of Pimento. Ginger is the green or dried root of the ginger plant. It gives a pleasant flavour to different spiced foods, and used green is mixed with advantage in certain household fruit preserves. Preserved green ginger is a wholesome sweet. Nutmeg and mace are probably less used than they formerly were. Mace is the dried covering of the nutmeg, and nutmeg is the solid dried kernel of the fruit of *Myristica fragrans.* Cayenne pepper, as it is called, is not a true pepper, but consists of the ground pods of *Capsicum.* It is probably the most pungent of condiments, and is, therefore, relatively little used. Vanilla is obtained from the pods of a parasitical plant found largely in tropical South America. It has a most delicate flavour and odour, and is therefore used for flavouring chocolate, ices, and puddings. Probably in this class ought to be placed certain herbs, used in the fresh or dried state, which are used as aids to digestion. Of these may be named curry, into the composition of which several of the fore-named condiments enter, fennel, dill, sage, thyme, mint, marjoram, garlic, and the humbler parsley.

It may be said of all these condiments that their use is merely incidental in foods, and that their intention is to give variety of flavours to food, promote the flow of saliva

and gastric juice, thus aiding digestion, and to serve as correctives.

Edible Fungi.—In this country few specimens of the mushroom class are used for food, but on the Continent a larger variety is enlisted for that purpose. It is not unlikely that this is due to wholesome dread of the poisonous varieties, and particularly to a want of knowledge respecting those which may, and those which may not, be eaten with impunity. Mushrooms and truffles are, perhaps, the best-known kinds at table. The former grow plentifully in certain places in this country, and now there is a large business done in their artificial culture in dark tunnels, etc. A truffle is a fungus which grows underground in southern Europe, and is scented and rooted out by dogs trained for the purpose. Both are rich in nitrogen, and when cooked emit a toothsome odour. Mushrooms are largely used in the preparation of ketchup and other sauces, although certain kinds of so-called ketchups are innocent of that fungus.

Some mosses, also, are used in invalid diet and for making puddings. Of these may be named Iceland moss, which is a lichen found in arctic and sub-arctic regions, and Irish or Carrageen moss, which, however, is not a moss but a seaweed, called *Chondrus crispus.* Both are agreeable to the taste, especially when suitably flavoured, and when boiled in milk. The latter has been lauded as a food for consumptives with delicate digestion, owing to the large percentage of vegetable jelly contained in it.

Tea, Coffee, Cocoa, Kola, Coca, Chocolate, and Paraguay or Matè Tea.—All these are substances used as beverages with food because of the stimulating alkaloidal principles which they contain. Their use tends to modify tissue waste. Their action as stimulants of the nervous system

is well known, although their pernicious action when abused is not so well understood.

Tea is a world-wide beverage, but is relatively less used on the Continent of Europe, if we except Russia, than in this country and Asia. Obtained from the leaves of the *Thea Chinensis*, which is indigenous to China, it is not surprising that it has been in general use in that country since nearly three thousand years before the Christian era. It is cultivated extensively also in Japan and India. The leaves are gathered at different stages of their growth, thus constituting different qualities of tea. The gathered leaves are dried either in the sun or artificially. Green tea is composed of leaves dried in the sun, black tea after they have lain in heaps for some time and have thus fermented in some measure, which causes the darker colour. Tea contains besides fat, resin, nitrogenous matters, a volatile oil, gum and other materials, tannin and thein. It entirely depends upon the mode of preparing the infusion how much tannin is extracted. The tea-taster, in gauging the quality of a sample, makes his infusion by merely pouring boiling water over a certain weighed amount of leaves. He thus gets the full flavour of the sample. When tea is infused for long periods, and more so if boiled, much of the tannin is imparted to the infusion, and thus it becomes bitter. Properly-made tea should not be infused for more than a few minutes at the longest. Too commonly do our working people, especially workmen, use tea which has been boiled. Much abuse of tea-drinking obtains among our working and poorer classes, chiefly, we believe, because it is easily prepared. That it gives rise to serious results there cannot be the least doubt. Domestic servants, too, are frequently slaves to tea, and there is good reason to believe, because of the

strong infusions taken frequently which they use, ulceration of the stomach and gastric catarrh are induced. The great development in later years of public tea-rooms is educating our younger and even older populations to indulge excessively in tea. In moderation, tea is a useful, stimulating beverage, and is especially grateful in states of physical and mental fatigue. But used in excess, it acts hurtfully on the nervous system, leading to nervousness, excitability, irregularity of the heart, and other symptoms. Average good tea contains about one and a half per cent of thein, which is the stimulating principle.

Coffee.—Coffee consists of the seeds or berries of the *Coffea Arabica*, which have been stripped of their fleshy covering. The pulpy berry usually has two seeds. Believed to have been found originally in Abyssinia, it is now extensively grown in many parts of the world. It is less used in this country than in continental countries or in America. Before the seeds are used for coffee-making, they must first be roasted, which converts their greenish colour into a dark brown. During the process they emit a penetrating, aromatic odour. Thereafter, the seeds are ground into a coarse powder. The powder is used to make either an infusion or a decoction. Boiled coffee loses much of its aroma; consequently it ought never to be boiled, else it will become bitter and unpalatable. Like tea, it is a powerful nerve stimulant. When used in moderation, it is an excellent stimulating beverage, but used too strong and too frequently, it operates harmfully upon the nervous system, shown by such symptoms as have been described for tea. It enables the user to temporarily overtake arduous spells of work, and it lessens the sense of fatigue. It is also a strong cardiac excitant, causing increased rapidity of the heart's action, which

may ultimately lead to irregular action. Commonly it is mixed with chicory, in order to give body to the infusion which pure coffee lacks. Chicory, however, is objectionable to many persons because of the griping effect it produces. Coffee is very liable to produce gastric catarrh, if used improperly with meals. For example, it hinders digestion of animal flesh meats, except bacon. It contains a smaller percentage of caffein or thein than tea, for caffein is identical chemically with thein, the average amount being between 1 and 2 per cent, whereas tea contains amounts which vary between 1·5 and 3 per cent. There are many preparations of so-called coffee which are innocent of the coffee-bean. Such are prepared from substitutes, the only characteristic of which is that they produce when infused an infusion not unlike coffee, but in colour only.

Cocoa.—Cocoa is a corruption of the word *Cacao.* It is obtained from the seeds of the *Theobroma cacao,* which is found abundantly in tropical South America. The entire fruit consists of a large pod which is filled with "beans" in several rows. When ripe, the pods are gathered and thrown into heaps, the effect of which is to produce fermentation of the pulpy outside of the pods. The pods are then opened and the seeds extracted. The seeds are then put into earthen vessels, or into the ground, wherein they undergo fermentation, whereby they are rid of an acrid bitter taste which they otherwise possess. The seeds are now dried in the sun, whereby they become dark reddish brown in colour, and hard and brittle in character. Before, however, the seeds are ready for market, they must be roasted, in performing which process some care has to be exercised, lest it be overdone and the aroma destroyed, as roasting brings out the aroma when

performed to the right degree. This loosens the husks of the seeds, which may be removed thereafter from the seeds. These husks, ground together, form cocoa "nibs" and coarse chocolate. To make cocoa for ordinary use, owing to the large amount of fat or oil which the seeds contain, the bulk of the fat must be removed, that being done by subjecting the seeds to hydraulic pressure. The cocoas in the market are mixed with sugar and starches to form a uniform powder, which, on addition of boiling water, gives a fluid of such specific gravity that the cocoa, which is insoluble in water, is held in suspension for some time. Chocolates are made by mixing the cocoa with sugar, starch, flavouring agents, and, sometimes, spices, one of the favourite flavouring agents being vanilla.

Cocoa differs from tea or coffee as a food in that, unlike the two others, it contains nutritive material in addition to its stimulating property. Cocoa nibs and coarse chocolate contain, for example, about 50 per cent of fat—this fat, when separated, being known as cocoa butter, which has a low melting-point. The cocoas used as beverages, however, ordinarily contain less fat than the above proportion, as it has before been largely expressed from the seeds. Cocoa also contains naturally about 13 per cent of starch, and about the same amount of proteids. The alkaloidal principle which it contains is called *theobromin*, which is closely allied to thein and caffein, but differs chemically from them. It is probably less stimulant than the others. It amounts to about 1·50 per cent.

Kola nuts chewed raw are used in some parts of the world as a stimulant. They contain a red colouring-matter, called kola red or kolanin. Their stimulating principle, however, is thein. Natives of different parts of the world attribute to their use great fatigue-resisting

power. The amount of thein contained in kola powder is about five times larger in amount per cent than in tea. *Coca* is used for the same purpose. Experiments have distinctly proved that coca leaves are of considerable value as a nerve stimulant. They contain cocaine, a substance which exercises local anæsthetic action, and which is sometimes used to their hurt by persons who have contracted the habit of self-administering injections of it. Coca wine is manufactured in this country for medicinal use, and administered under medical direction is a very suitable wine in certain low states of the nervous system.

Paraguay or Matè tea is obtained from the skin and bark of the *Ilex paraguayensis*, a plant or shrub belonging to the holly family, and is used in South America as tea is used in other parts of the world. It contains thein. The tea is made by making an infusion of the shredded skin and bark with boiling water in a gourd, and the infusion is sucked therefrom by means of a hollow stem rounded at one end and perforated with minute apertures to enable the fluid but not the solid material to pass into the mouth. We have tried on many occasions to become familiar with its use, but have failed to like it. It is much less agreeable than tea to the palate, and possibly for this and other reasons it has failed to become popular in this country.

Dietetic Value.—All the foregoing substances are powerful nerve stimulants. They are of value in restoring nerve energy temporarily, and, to some extent, inhibit the nitrogenous waste of the body. They are subject to not a little abuse, and therefore do not a little harm, not only to the nervous system, but also to the digestive organs. For these reasons a word of warning must be uttered against the prevailing tendency to increase the use of tea, for

it must be remembered that although it has been designated by the poet Cowper as "the cup that cheers but not inebriates," its action may be as pernicious as that of the other powerful nerve excitant, alcohol. It is of no consequence, apart from the immediate effects of over-use, whether excess of tea or of alcohol is indulged in, as they are both stimulants although their physiological effects only differ in kind: both are capable of exercising prejudicial results, each in its own particular way. Therefore the cup of the teetotaler is accompanied with probable disaster as well as that of the non-abstainer. It would be probably too sweeping an indictment against tea to say that from its abuse as great mischief happens as from abuse of alcohol, but it is not too strong to say that it is followed by grave harm, probably among our working and poorer classes especially. Tea-drinking with, and immediately after, meat meals, and miscellaneous drinking at various times of the day, as well as the use of long-drawn infusions, must be utterly condemned.

Vegetarianism.—Owing to the abuses which are said to have been caused from the too prevalent use of a flesh diet has arisen the school of vegetarians. The only error of the latter is that they preach the absolute exclusion of animal flesh from dietary, and while they practise that in the letter they do not carry it out in spirit. Milk and eggs cannot, even by the utmost stretch of the imagination, be deemed vegetable foods, yet vegetarians largely use both. Probably sentiment against the destruction of animals for food, coupled with the fact that various diseases may be transmitted to man from eating the flesh of diseased animals, has had much to do with the genesis of the vegetarian school; because while it makes little difference to man how and in what foods he obtains those

proximate principles in adequate quantities wherewith to nourish his body, provided that, weight for weight, vegetable and animal substances were equally nutritive and equally digestible, it is of consequence to know, with respect to albuminous substances especially, that much more labour is entailed upon the digestive organs when vegetable albuminous foods are used than when animal flesh properly cooked is used. Probably there is some truth in the indictment of the vegetarians that too much flesh meat enters into the average diet, but it does not follow, therefore, that all flesh meat should be excluded. We are prepared to support their contention that a larger use of vegetable foods might be made by all classes of persons with advantage, but we are unable to subscribe to the view that abstention from flesh foods is necessary, or even advantageous, for the maintenance of health.

Food and Energy.—The value of foods, scientifically considered, is reckoned by the amount of potential energy which they possess, and which is capable of estimation in foods as in other forms of fuel. This *potential* energy of food becomes *kinetic* energy when it is put to use, or is liberated for the use of the bodily organism, as in the formation of bodily heat or in the expenditure of labour. Foods are burned up in the body by processes of combustion, called oxidation, just as fuels, when more actively oxidised by combustion, give out heat, and are then capable of doing work—as, for example, evaporating definite amounts of water, or imparting definite amounts of heat to water per unit of fuel used. It was Joule's discovery that the amount of mechanical power produced from a unit weight of fuel was directly proportional to the amount of heat generated by its combustion, which enabled the principle to be applied to food-stuffs. The

experiments on food-stuffs and the amounts of potential energy obtained therefrom must, however, be taken with some reservation, for, after all, fuel burned artificially to completeness outside of the body is not quite the same as food consumed in the body, because all the food taken into the body may not be consumed; but relatively to one another, the results for different kinds of food are of value as affording a means of arriving at the amounts of energy produced in the body by different proximate principles of food, on the assumption that in each case the food has been entirely consumed in the body, and has been converted into potential energy. This, however, is not precisely the case; and the fact must be borne in mind in appraising the values of food so determined. According to these determinations, different values, expressed in foot-tons of potential energy produced per unit of food, are attributed to the proximate principles of food. But even here chemists are not quite agreed as to results. One has arrived at the opinion that 240 parts of starch are equivalent in production of potential energy to 100 parts of fat, while others believe that the proportion is more truly expressed in the proportion of 175 parts of the former to 100 of the latter. It may be taken as generally near the truth, subject to the preceding reservations, to say that one ounce of dry albumin produces about 170 foot-tons of potential energy, one ounce of fat about 375 foot-tons, one ounce of starch about 130, and one ounce of cane-sugar about the same. The work or energy expended by different men daily in work is reckoned in numbers of foot-tons, and differs as is the amount of work performed. A foot-ton is the amount of energy required to lift one ton through a height of one foot. It must be understood that by the term work is meant any form of exercise, and

includes such simple exercise as walking. The average amount of energy expended daily by the adult person is about 300 foot-tons. Expressed in more popular language, such an expenditure would be made by a person of average weight taking a walk of about 15 or 16 miles. But to be able to expend this energy, such a person must manufacture out of the food he has taken not less than 1500 foot-tons of internal energy, mainly in the form of heat. Comparing the human body with a mechanical engine, the former has been found to be capable of expending about one-fifth of its total energy as mechanical work, and the latter less than that amount—generally about one-eighth in proportion. It will thus be seen that by applying these principles, it becomes possible to estimate from the amount of food taken the amount of mechanical work a person is capable of performing daily, or to calculate from the amount of work done the amount of food which requires to be taken to keep the body in a fit condition, or, in other words, to see that the repair is at least equal to the waste.

CHAPTER XXXI.

HOUSE DRAINAGE IN RELATION TO HEALTH—THE SANITARY FITTINGS OF THE HOUSE—WASTE WATER AND SOIL DISPOSAL.

HAVING made provision for the plentiful supply of fresh air, light, and water to the home, equally careful arrangements must be provided for the safe removal and disposal of house-refuse and night-soil. The nature of the fittings for these will be entirely determined by the fact whether or not the house is to be contributary to a *water-carriage system* of sewage. By this is meant a system of sewers wherein waste water and excretory products are carried away to the outfall from the houses, which are connected to the sewers by the house drains—the vehicle being the waste water from the houses and the rainfall. Where no such system is in operation, each house must have its own arrangements separate from others. The former system usually prevails in populous places, the latter in isolated dwellings or in small collections of houses. The food-waste, fire-ashes, and other débris are, or ought to be, in each system, kept apart from the excreted products. It will, therefore, be necessary to discuss the subject under two heads, viz. the disposal (1) of night-soil, and (2) of house-refuse.

Disposal of night-soil by the water-carriage system necessitates the installation in every home of certain

sanitary fittings. The knowledge on this subject of many persons, if not, indeed, of most, is limited to the fact that "soil" disappears into a pipe, which, in turn, disappears into the ground outside the house; and beyond this they do not inquire. Ignorance on this subject has doubtless not a little to do with prevalence of certain diseases. The intelligent householder ought to inform himself more regarding these points, since forewarning is forearming.

The sanitary fittings which at their one extremity open into the interior of the house, and at their other open into the main waste-pipe, or into the soil pipe, then into house drain and sewer, are (1) the bath, wash-hand basins, and kitchen sinks, and (2) the water closet and urinals. The channels by which waste water in the one and soil in the other are conveyed to the sewer are lead or iron pipes. The former is called the waste-water pipe, and the latter the soil pipe. A third pipe, or series of pipes, is commonly present, which also opens into the house drain, viz. the rain-water pipe or conductor. All of these unite, at some point near the base of the building, to form the house drain, which, after running a shorter or longer distance, empties into the sewer. It is necessary, once and for all, to distinguish between the house drain and the sewer. The house drain receives the waste water, rain water, and soil from one building, whereas the sewer receives these products from several buildings.

If, from the sanitary fittings of a house, the foregoing pipes ran an unbroken course to the sewer, foul air and gases of decomposition and microbes would inevitably find their way into the house interior, by reason of the higher temperature of the latter, and would be detri-

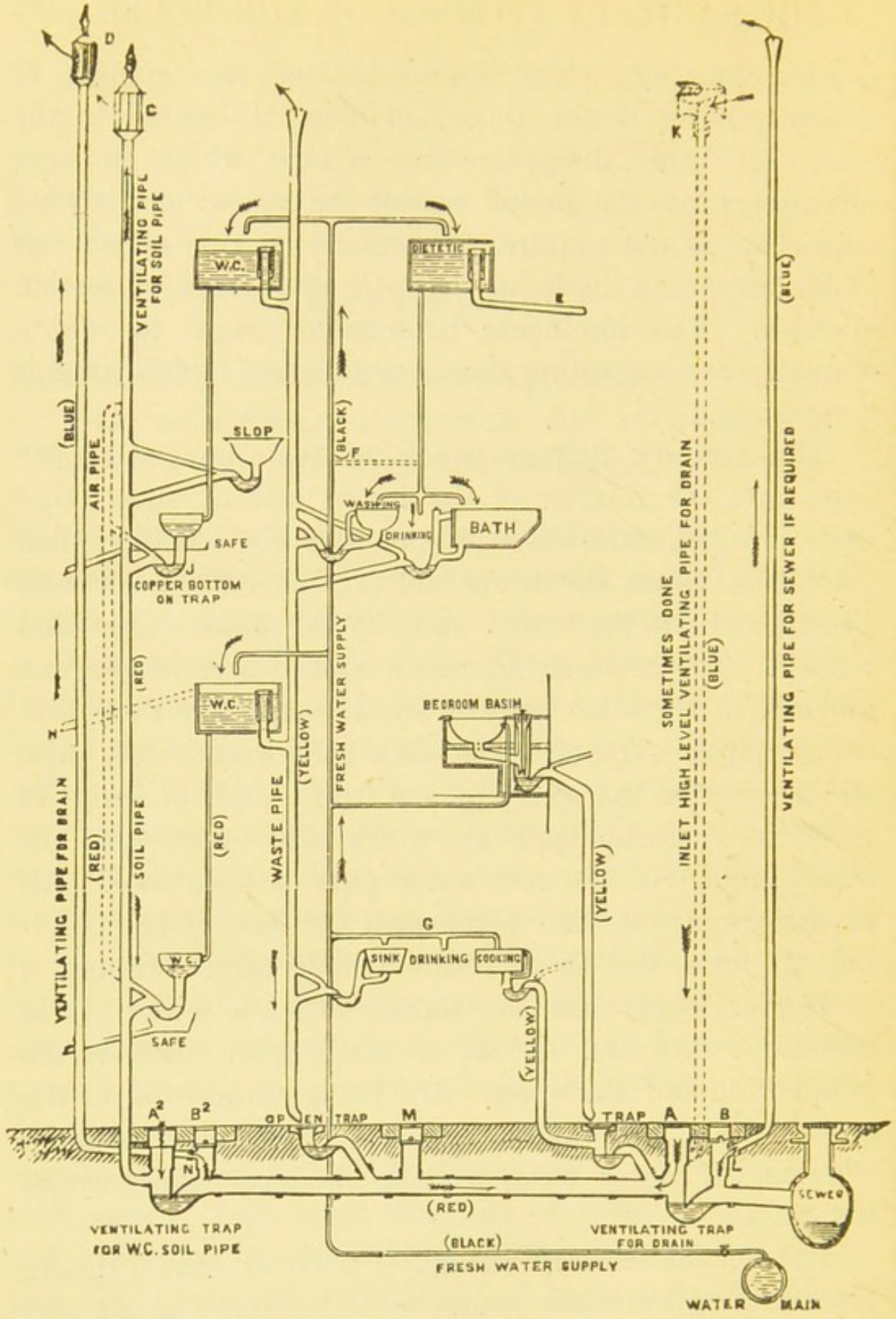


FIG. 42.—General System of Water Supply and of Waste Water and Soil Disposal.

The relative positions of fresh-water main and sewer are only diagrammatic. In actual operation the latter is usually at a lower level.

mental to the health of the occupants. The object of sanitary fittings, therefore, ought not only to be the conveyance of excretory products from the house, but also the prevention of the return of harmful products to the house This latter is provided for by means of what are called *traps*. The opposite diagram illustrates the foregoing points, as also the arrangements for the domestic water supply, and is self-explanatory (Fig. 42).

Having considered the sanitary arrangements generally, it will be necessary to review the various fittings of (1) the waste-water system and (2) the soil-pipe system.

Belonging to the former are (1) the bath; (2) wash-hand basin; (3) kitchen sink; and (4) waste-water pipe. In many houses the bath-room also contains a water closet and wash-hand basin in addition to the bath, owing to exigency of space. For obvious reasons, when possible, the water closet should have an apartment separate from the bath-room. In tenement houses—that is, houses of flats entered by an entrance common to all, and inhabited by different householders, such as are common in all Scottish cities, and now, also, in London—the bath-room is too often a "poky" place and imperfectly lighted, the bath itself being often fixed in the darkest corner. This ought not to be. The bath-room ought to be well lighted and well ventilated. Reference to Fig. 43 will show the various fittings as above.

The bath itself ought to stand clear of the floor on short pedestal feet, so that the space below and around it may be easily cleaned. It should not be surrounded by woodwork, for within this enclosed space dirt and decomposing soapy water are apt to collect. There should

be an ample supply of hot and cold water—the former preferably from the general house supply. For houses with no hot water supply, instantaneous heaters have

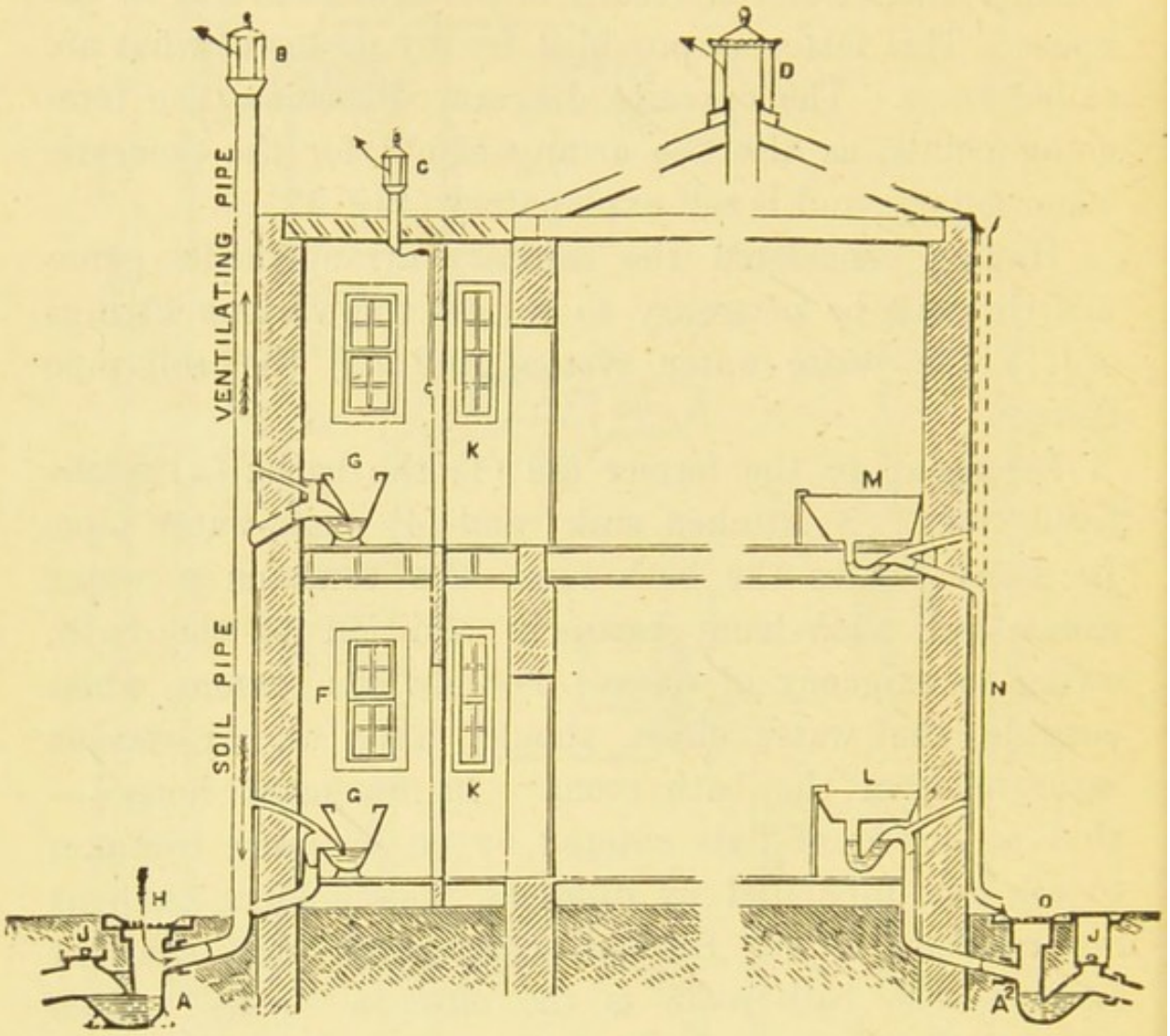


FIG. 43.

This diagram, which represents the disposition of the sanitary fittings of a house, is self-explanatory in large measure; G, G, represent closet-rooms, cut off from rest of house by corridors, K, K; M is the bath; L, housemaid's sink; A, A, traps disconnecting main pipes from house drain; N is the waste-water pipe, which ought to be continued above the eaves as is the soil pipe. The fixed ventilator at top of soil pipe is sometimes substituted for the plain trumpet-shaped opening.

been devised for baths, whereby, by a series of Bunsen burners which heat a convoluted pipe through which cold water passes, the water is heated (Fig. 44). Care must be exercised in the use of these, owing to the generation

of CO_2 and CO gases, which have already caused fatal accidents from suffocation.

From every old-fashioned bath—other than the water-supply pipes—there are two pipes for carrying off waste water, viz. (1) the waste pipe, which leads from the bottom of bath, and by which the bath is emptied; and (2) the overflow pipe, by which, in case of overflow, the overflow water is carried away, and thus flooding of the

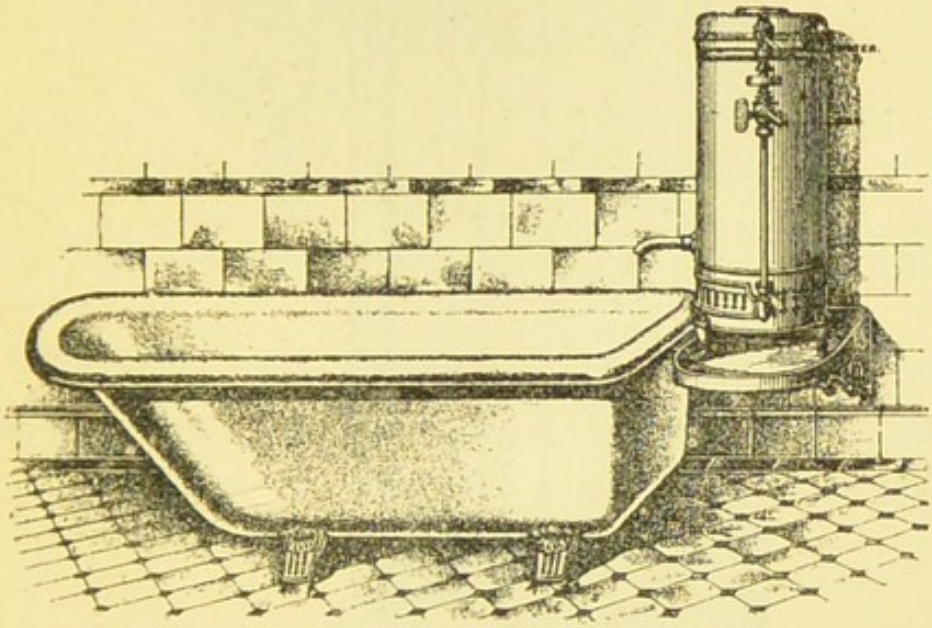


Fig. 44.—Doulton's Water Heater, which is fitted with an automatic arrangement which prevents the gas being lit until the water is turned on, and by which the flame is lowered by failure or great reduction of pressure of water supply. It heats water to 105° F. in 10 minutes at a cost of ¾ths of a penny.

bath-room is prevented. This pipe, therefore, leads from the top part of bath. In the old form of "built in" bath, the bath itself is usually placed on a leaden tray, which is intended to catch stray water. This tray empties into a pipe called the tray pipe, or save-all pipe, which is put at the lowest point of the tray. These pipes are united together under the floor to form one bath waste-pipe before it joins the main waste-pipe, and after the junction of the smaller pipes, the branch pipe must be

trapped from the main waste-pipe. The foregoing must be considered as applicable only to the older forms of baths. In the most modern baths, the waste and overflow are combined in an ingenious manner, as in Fig. 45,

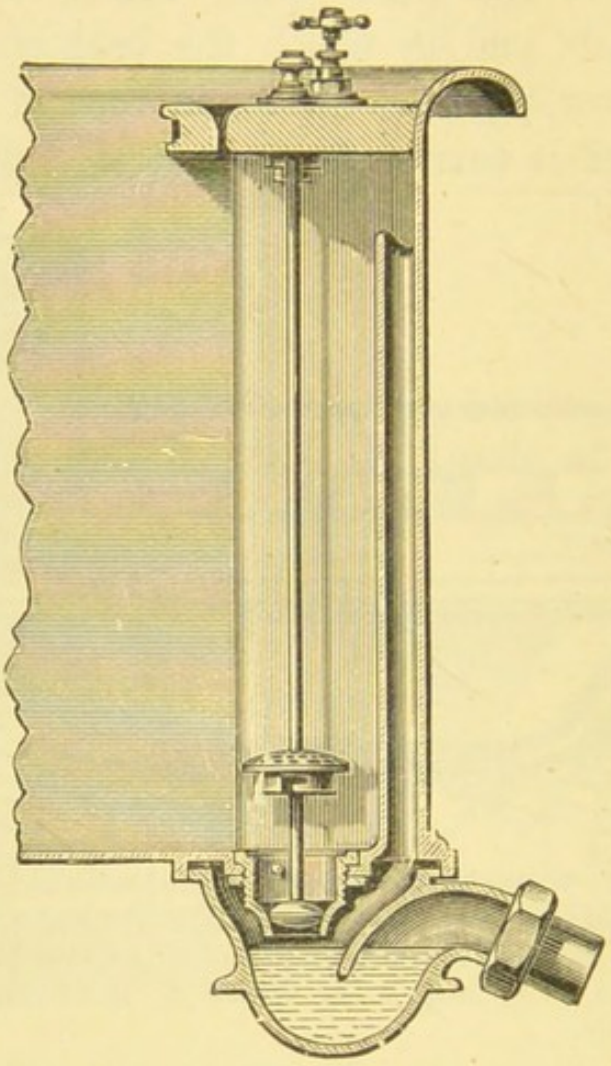


FIG. 45.—Shanks and Co.'s "Modern Waste" applied to baths.

The waste opening is plugged, the bath is filling, and as soon as the water level reaches above the shaded line, the water runs down the overflow channel (behind the waste plug) into the trap, which serves for both waste and overflow channels.

by Shanks and Co.; other makers, as Doulton and Co., have an equally ingenious system.

Wash-hand basin: This fitting, to all intents and purposes, is but a miniature bath, and, like the bath, ought to have its parts exposed, and to be provided with a waste and overflow pipe (Fig. 46). The "tip-up" basin,

which being mounted on a swivel, may be quickly emptied by the act of tipping, is valuable, inasmuch as the sudden rush of water assists to keep the pipes clean; otherwise, it possesses no advantage over the ordinary plug-basin.

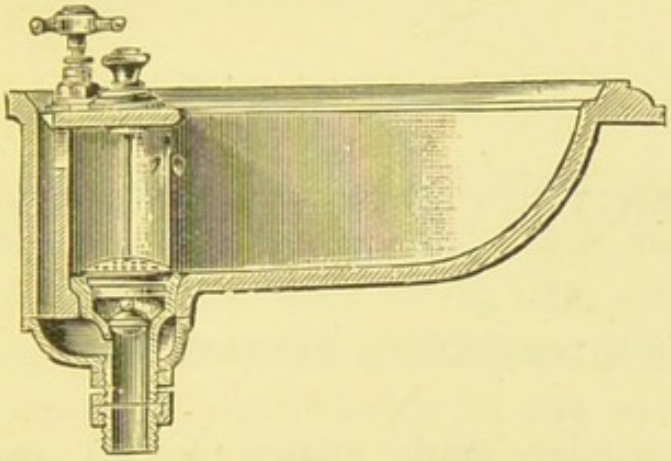


Fig. 46.—Shows the arrangement in Fig. 45 applied to the wash-hand basin.

The "Aseptic" basin of Shanks and Co. is an ingenious contrivance for hospital use. The waste pipe from the basin must also be trapped before it joins the main waste pipe.

CHAPTER XXXII.

THE SANITARY FITTINGS OF THE HOUSE

(Continued).

KITCHEN AND PANTRY SINKS.

THESE are usually made either of cast iron, plain or enamelled, or of earthenware. They ought to be sufficiently capacious and of oblong shape, and the grated or perforated waste pipe opening ought not to have too large holes, lest débris of food descend and block the pipe. They ought to have a "waste" and an "overflow" pipe, and should not be surrounded by woodwork. From kitchen operations greasy matters find their way by the sink into the waste pipe, and, when cooled, are liable to block the pipe. To prevent this special forms of trap have been devised. One of the best of these is Buchan's grease trap, of which Fig. 47 is an illustration: A is the inlet pipe from sink—the arrows indicate direction of flow; B is the grease chamber, in which fatty matters solidify, and which may be removed by the movable lid, E; C is the outlet pipe, by which grease-free water escapes into

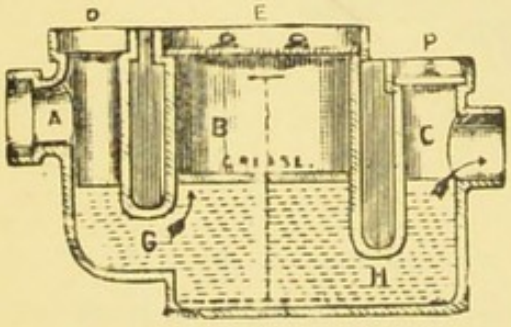


FIG. 47.—Buchan's Grease Trap.

A, is inlet pipe from sink; B, the grease-chamber; C, outlet pipe to house drain; D and P, openings by which trap may be cleansed; E, movable lid, by which congealed fat may be periodically removed.

house drain; D and P are openings by which the trap may be cleaned. The congelation of fat is effected by making the inlet pipe higher than the outlet, and the tongue of the trap nearest the outlet lower than that nearest the inlet. Its operation is very efficient.

MAIN WASTE-WATER PIPE.

This pipe, into which all branch pipes from previously mentioned fittings enter, may either pass downwards on the inside of the house wall, or on the outside. Most practical men are of opinion that, provided the pipe makes its exit from the interior to the exterior of the house above the ground level, and that it be disconnected from the house drain, either by opening over a trapped gully or into a ventilating trap, no objection can be offered to placing it on the inside of the house wall. In this position it is less liable to freeze, and it is less subjected to alternations of heat and cold, which slacken joints and warp pipes because of the alternate expansion and contraction of the metal. To prevent freezing it is customary to keep the water dribbling in this pipe, but this often helps what it is intended to prevent. A thin layer of water passing down a pipe which has a northerly or easterly exposure will quickly freeze in its course during severe frost. This, by gradual accretion, soon blocks the pipe. It is an open question whether the waste pipe should open over a grated gully on the ground level, or into a ventilating trap below the ground level. In either case the trap prevents the return of harmful products from the house drain. The determining factor ought to be the exposure of the pipe in respect of the points of the compass. If it be the south or west, the open method is preferable; if the north or east, the closed,

because of the liability of the open gully to become filled up with ice in frosty weather, and of the water from the waste pipe being diverted on to the surface of the yard or pavement.

RAIN WATER CONDUCTORS AND COURTYARD GULLIES.

These practically belong to the waste-water system. Sometimes the rain conductor is formed by the simple extension of the waste pipe to the eaves, where it is joined to the eaves-channels. In many cases, however, they are, necessarily, separate fittings. Whatever their position, they must be trapped at their junction with the house drain. Courtyard gullies carry off surface water. They are made of special form, so that mud in suspension is allowed time to settle, when it may be removed periodically (Fig. 69). From what has been said, the following principles may be laid down, viz. (1) that all fittings intended to convey waste water should be connected with a main waste-pipe only; and (2) there ought to be no connection with the waste-water pipe of any fitting for the conveyance of excretions. Hitherto this has not been general. It is by no means uncommon to find both classes of fittings united in the same main pipe. But waste-water fittings should only be united to a main waste-pipe, and soil fittings to a soil pipe.

SOIL-PIPE SYSTEM.

The fittings which belong to this system are: (1) the water-closet and slop closet; (2) the urinal; and (3) the main soil-pipe.

WATER-CLOSET APARTMENT.

Much too little consideration has hitherto been given to the place occupied by this sanitary convenience. It is but far too common to find it placed in a cramped, dark, ill-ventilated apartment. Probably the reasons for this were want of thought and ignorance of the relation of drain connections and certain filth diseases. Hygiene has demanded more suitable conditions, and they are gradually now being realised. For tenement houses of the poorer class, one closet serves for three or four families, and in flatted houses of a better type there is a closet for each family. In either case, ventilation is but ill accomplished. In such circumstances the apartment is poorly lighted by a small window opening out upon a common-stair landing. When this window is opened the current of air instead of being from the closet outwards, as is expected, is quite the reverse, owing to the difference of temperature of the interior and exterior of the house. This, obviously, is very objectionable. Indeed, it may be fearlessly said, that while there is no apartment of a house which more greatly demands free ventilation than this, there is none which receives less. The system most suitable for tenement closets is that denominated "cross" ventilation, which is secured by providing windows at opposite sides of the apartment and at right angles to the doorway. Compatible with comfort, every closet should always be well flushed with a continuous current of air.

The closet itself now requires to be considered. During the last twenty-five years this fitting has undergone an evolutionary process—one might well call it a revolutionary process. The process, however, has been

slow, for a variety of reasons. The first closet—a valve closet—was patented in 1775 by Alexander Cummings. Bramah, the famous mechanician, also invented a valve closet. Since then many patents have been taken out by many inventors. The closets in use to-day may be divided into four typical classes, viz. (1) the valve closet; (2) the pan closet; (3) the hopper closet; and (4) the "flush" closet.

The valve closet has now, except in the case of one

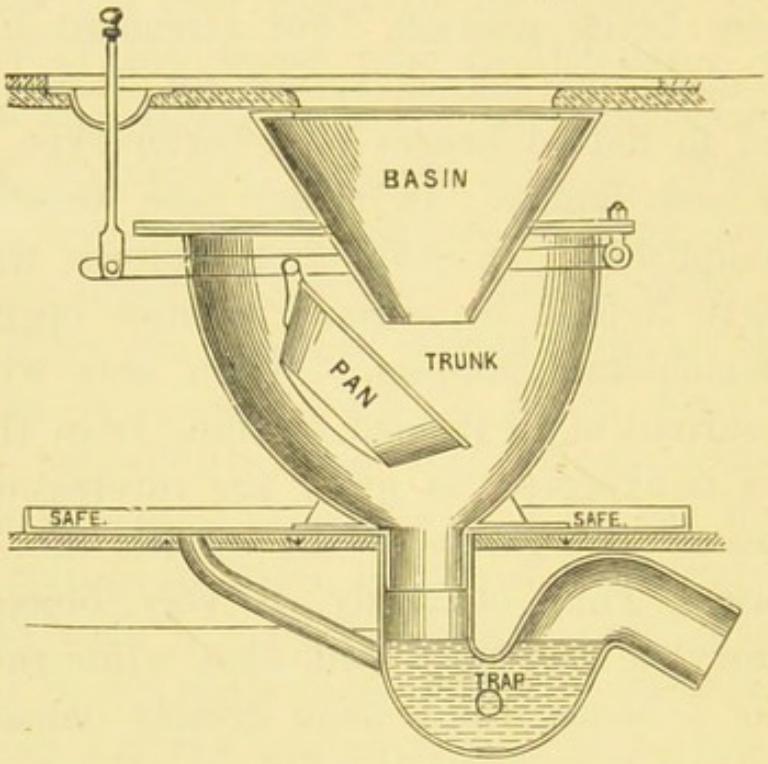


FIG. 48.—Pan Closet.

or two specially good forms, fallen into disrepute. Its chief merit is that the contents are suddenly projected, on release of the valve, into the trap; and its principal demerit is that the seat of the valve—which must be accurately fitting—is liable to be dislocated by any substance which gets fixed therein, thereby allowing the water in the basin to gradually drain away. They are thus very liable to get out of order. Fig. 51 shows a very good form.

The pan closet is still largely in use, but is giving way gradually to a less complicated and much safer form of closet. It is composed of the following parts, viz. (1) an earthenware basin; (2) a copper pan which closes the bottom of the basin in which the water is retained; (3) the receiver, or container, or trunk, composed of cast iron, into which the basin and copper pan are fitted; and (4) the trap. Fig. 48 illustrates this form of closet, as used in Scotland. The handle, seen on left of figure, operates at the same time to open the cistern for flush water, and to depress the pan, thus emptying and flushing the basin at one pull. Of this closet an American writer once said: "It probably was not, although it might have been, the invention of the devil." It is, certainly, a most unhygienic fitting—first, because it is composed of parts that cannot be cleaned; and second, and chiefly, because the sides of the "trunk" become coated with decomposing excreta, the odour of which is projected into the apartment each time the handle is pulled. English writers have urged an additional objection, viz. that the trap used is a D-trap. In Scotland, however, this objection has no force, since the siphon, or S-trap, is alone used.

CHAPTER XXXIII.

SANITARY FITTINGS (*Continued*)—DIFFERENT FORMS OF CLOSETS—THE SOIL PIPE.

THE hopper closet is mainly found in two forms, viz. the long conical and the short hopper. The former is decidedly objectionable, by reason of it becoming easily fouled, and being imperfectly flushed. Less objection can be offered to the short form, and provided that the water flush is adequate, it is an efficient fitting.

The "flush" closet embraces several forms, which are often made of one piece of earthenware, composing both closet and trap, and which may be made of the plainest or most ornamental character. With the addition of a "hinged" seat, they may also be used as slop closets, as they have no valves or other mechanism liable to be put out of gear. Another merit is that they can be fitted into position without any surrounding woodwork. Pedestal in shape, they are divisible into two kinds, viz. the "wash-out" and the "wash-down" forms. They are so differentiated by reason of the primary point of lodgment of the dejecta; in the former it is a projecting ledge, in the latter it is the trap itself. In the former class, therefore, much of the force of the water flush is spent in dislodging the contents of the basin, and there is a liability for the contents to be swept into the trap only, and not through it. This objection does not apply to the

wash-down form. Fig. 50 represents one of the best forms of wash-down closet.

Another form of closet which has, of recent times, deservedly risen into notice, is the "Siphonic" closet, so called because the contents of the basin are emptied by siphonic action, which ensures the thorough riddance of the dejecta at each time of using. When this form

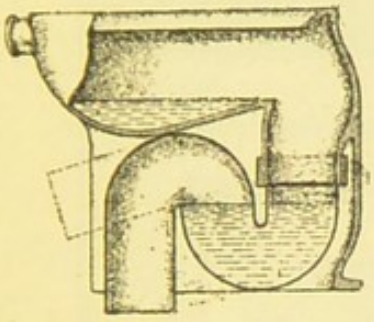


Fig. 49.

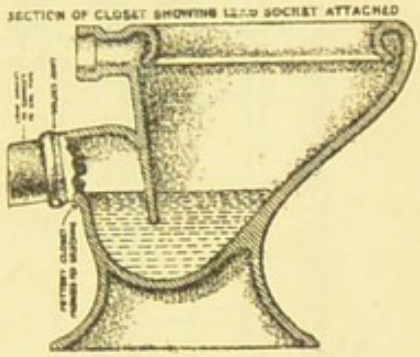


Fig. 50.

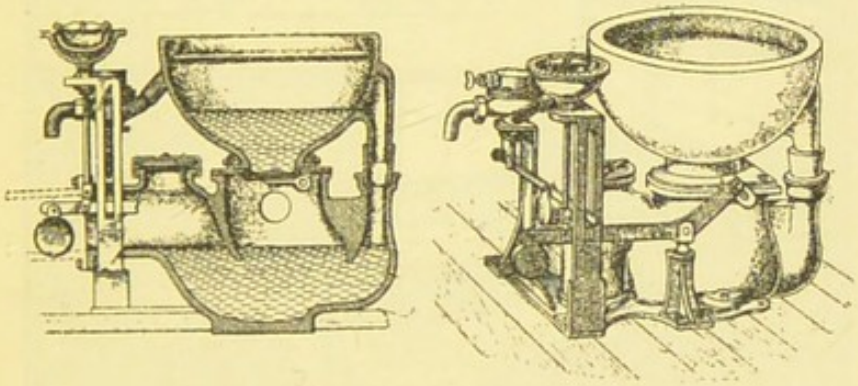


Fig. 51.

Fig. 49, Doulton's Combination Wash-out Closet; Fig. 50, Doulton's "Simplicitas" Wash-down Closet, fitted with patent metallo-keramic joint; Fig. 51, Doulton's Valve Closet (plan and section).

of closet was at first made it was defective in construction, inasmuch as it had double traps and sometimes an intricate mechanism for exhausting the air of the siphon. The most modern apparatus, however, dispenses with both; and now they have only one trap with a deep water-seal, and a large basin surface. The action of the siphon is started by the direct action of the water from

the service pipe, and in the "Levern" closet, made by Shanks and Co., the lower part of the long leg of the

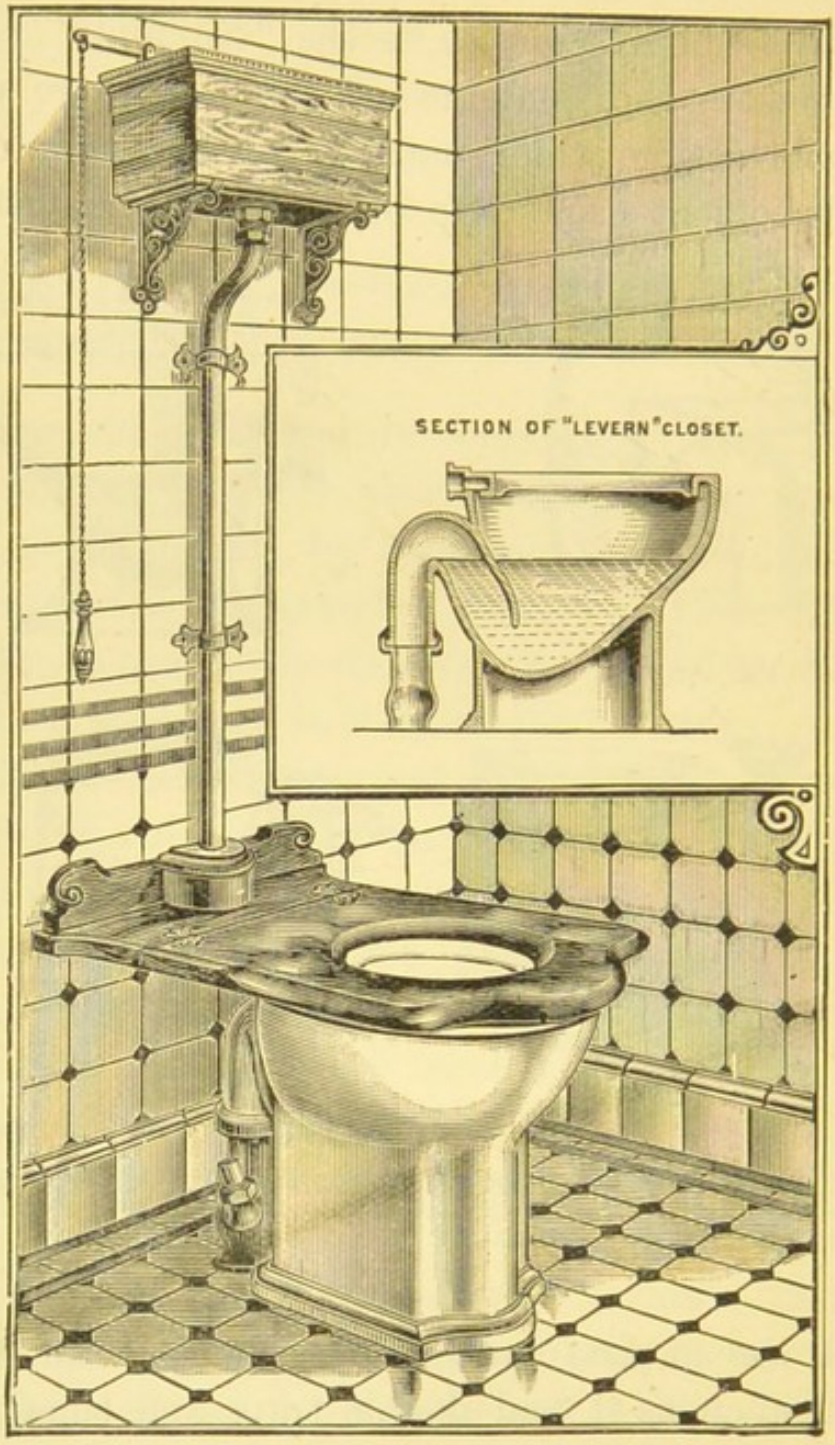


FIG. 52.—Shanks and Co.'s "Levern" Siphonic Closet.

siphon is of patented construction and made of lead. An essential adjunct to such a closet is an efficient cistern, which is usually sold with the fitting by the makers in

order to ensure effective action. The objection against

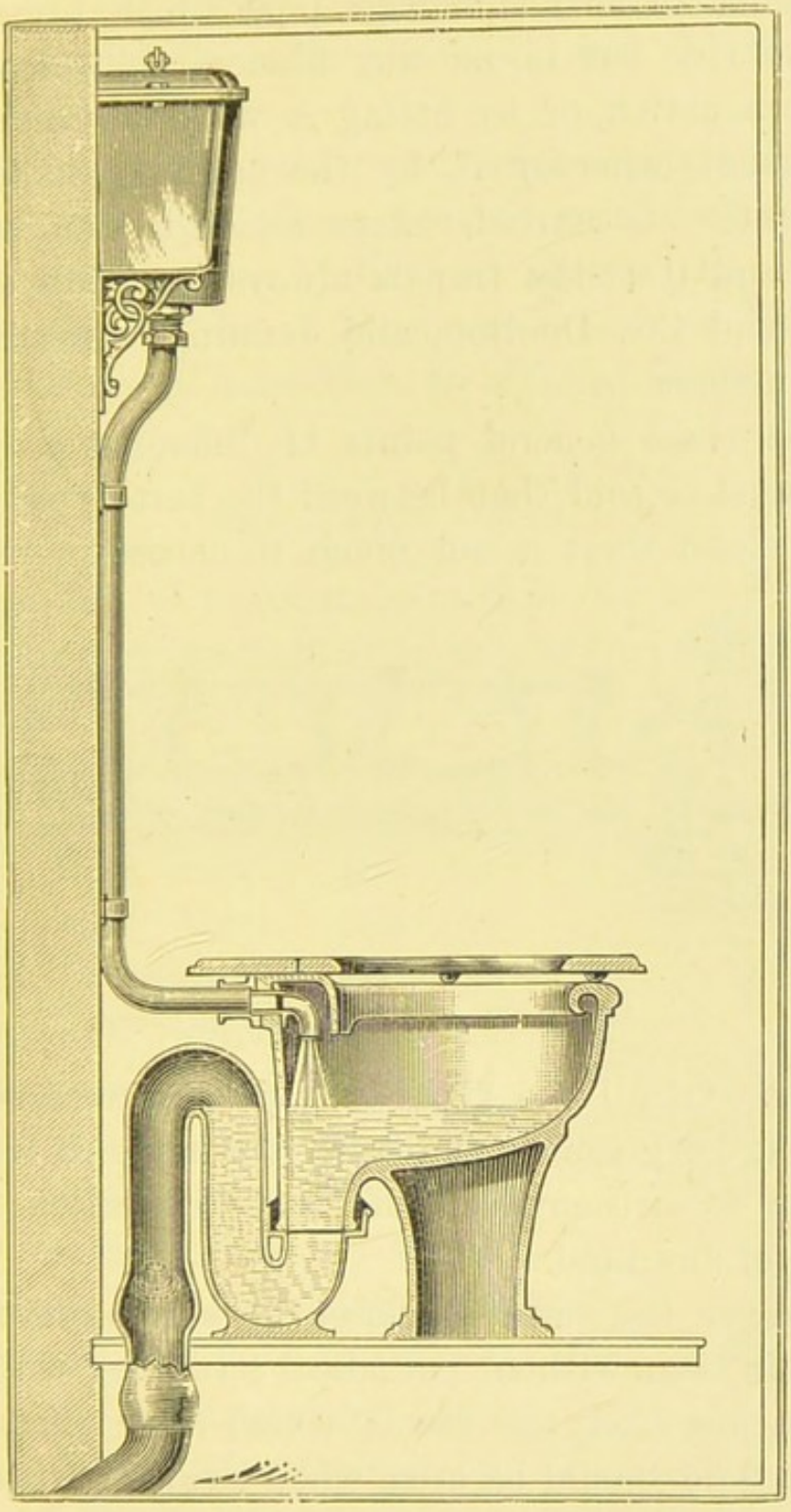
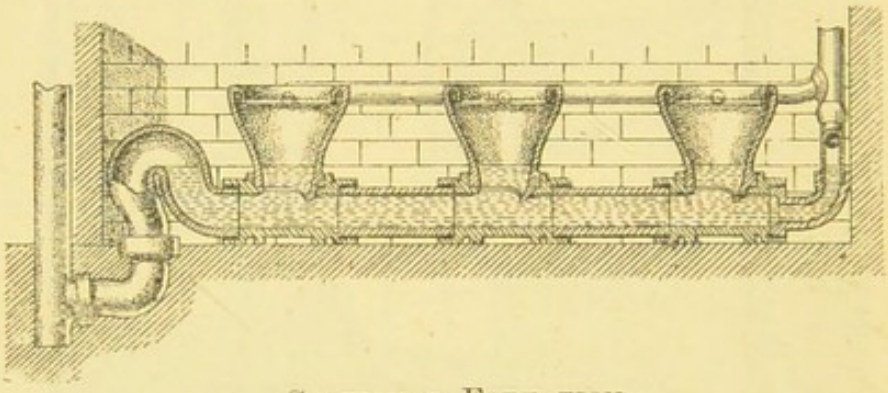


FIG. 53.—Section of Shanks' Siphonic Closet.

these closets, viz. the risk of siphonage by throwing in slop water and thus leaving the trap unsealed, is over-

come in this fitting in one of two ways, viz. either by introducing an anti-siphonage pipe which prevents the foregoing risk but in no way hinders siphonage caused by cistern action, or by fitting it with Dicksee's patent arrangement, whereby if, by the addition of slops, the siphon action is started, cistern action is simultaneously set up, and thus the trap is always kept full of water. Shanks and Co., Doulton, and Jennings are among the leading makers.

While these general points of difference are pointed out, it must be said that between the best types of flush form of closet there is not much to choose in respect of



Sectional Elevation.

Fig. 54.—Doulton's Isolated Trough Closet.

efficiency. Of all the types mentioned, preference, however, must be given to the wash-down closet, formed of one piece of earthenware and fixed in position without covering of any kind.

Whatever the form of closet in use, however, none can remain clean without periodical scrubbing with strong soda solution, after the use of which some effective disinfectant fluid should be used, when the trap, with proper flushing, will keep in good order for a week.

The characteristics of a good closet may be summed up in the following points, viz. (1) it should be of a form to enable perfect dislodgment of the contents by the

water flush; (2) this dislodgment should be sudden and complete; (3) it should possess a sufficient trap; (4) all its parts should be easily cleansed; and (5) the water flush should be ample.

For schools and public conveniences, trough closets are often fixed up. These demand careful attention to flushing and trapping. Fig. 54 shows the sectional elevation plan of one of Doulton's which is, like those of other makers on same lines, an efficient fitting.

THE WATER FLUSH.

The amount of water to be used at one act of flushing should never be less than two, and when possible, should be three gallons, and it should reach the closet by a flush pipe of not less than $1\frac{1}{2}$ in. in diameter, from a cistern intended for the closet supply and for nothing else. Much water is sometimes needlessly wasted in this way, and water companies have been compelled to guard against this waste by restricting the size of the cistern. The most effective arrangements are where the contents of the cistern are suddenly projected into the closet on the "pull" being used; and periodical flushing is attained by the use of the "siphon" cistern, which acts automatically. In most arrangements, however, the amount of water flush depends on the user, by the length of time for which the

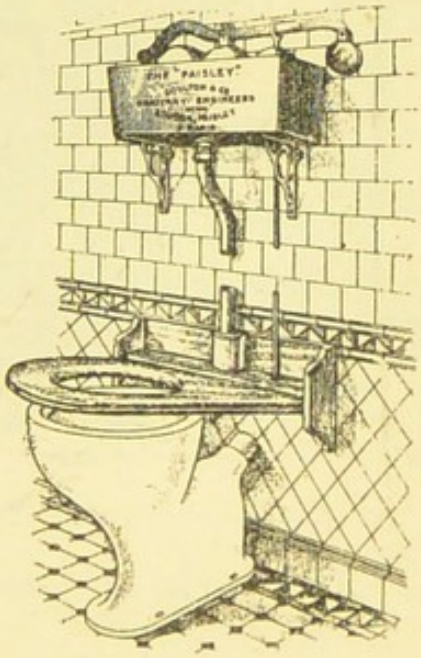


FIG. 55.—Arrangement of Closet whereby flushing is secured by closet-seat action.

"pull" is held. Carelessness in this respect has much to do with the inefficiency of any fitting.

Attempts have been made, however, to overcome carelessness, by causing the flush to take place by closet-seat action, as in Fig. 55.

In order to secure effective flushing, another com-

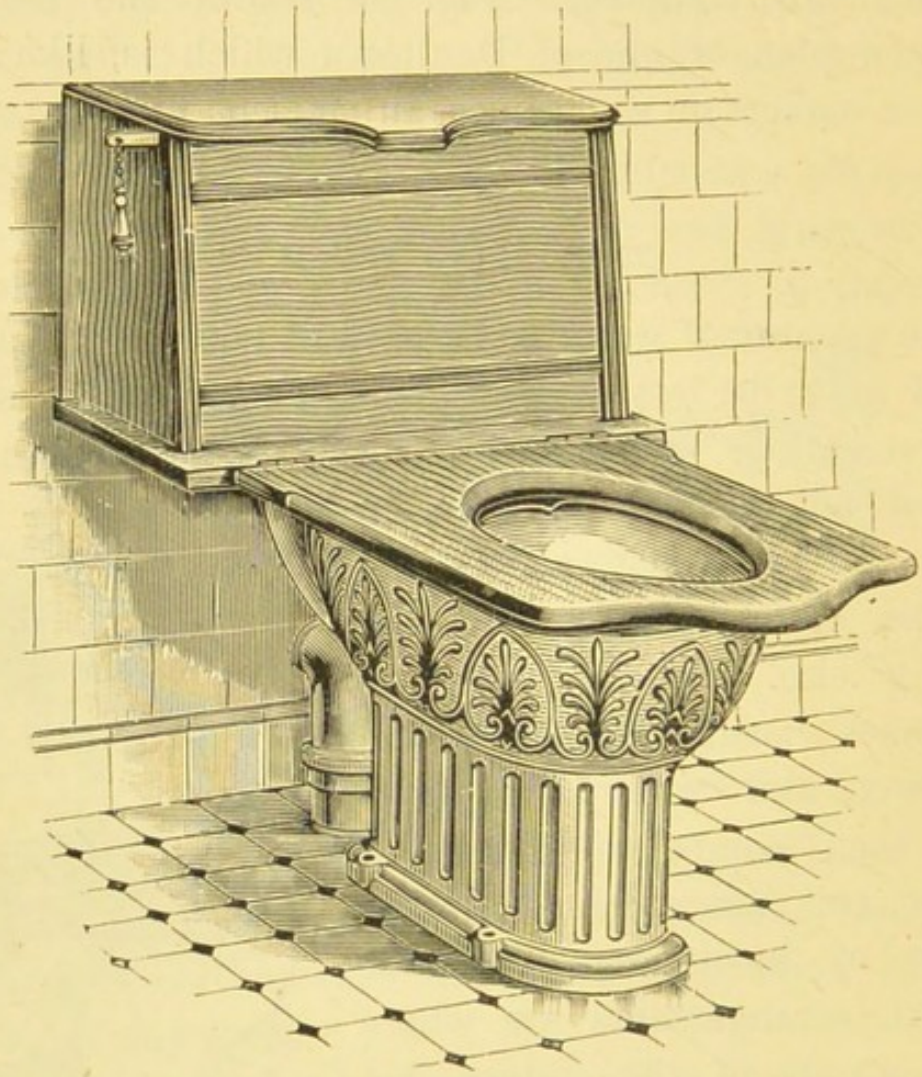


Fig. 56.—Shanks and Co.'s Combination Closet.

bination of cistern and closet has been made by Shanks and Co.

Fig. 56 shows an elevation plan of the fitting. It is claimed for this cistern that when in action it is noiseless, that the flush is discharged suddenly, and that the mere movement of the lever secures that the whole

contents of the cistern are discharged into the basin. This fitting may be put up where the architectural arrangements of the closet room do not permit of the cistern being fixed higher, as in Figs. 57, 58.

While a fitting, as in Fig. 57, provided with a hinged seat, may conveniently be used as a slop closet and as

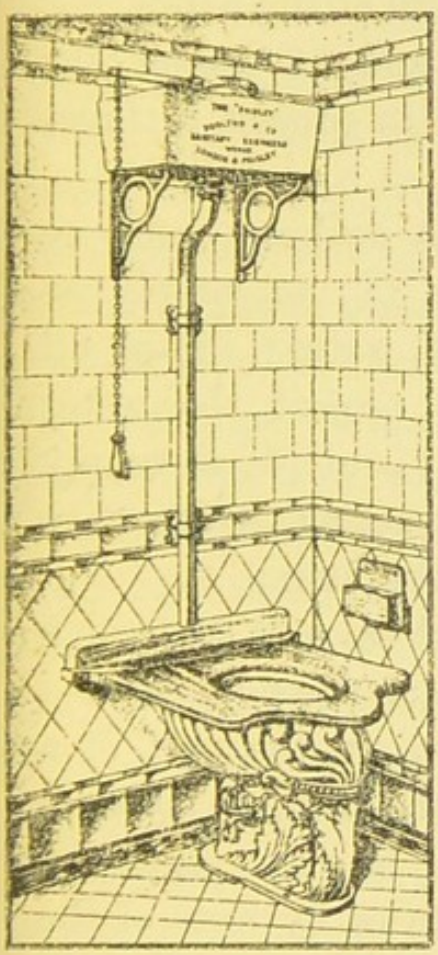


FIG. 57.—Typical form of arrangements of Closet Fittings. Doulton's "Simplicitas" Closet.

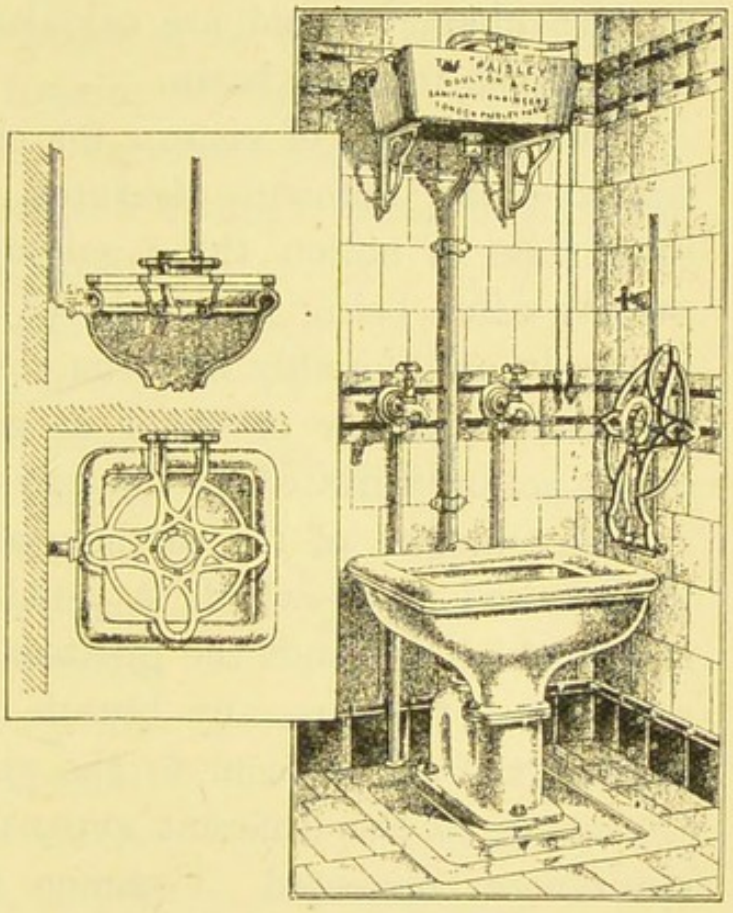


FIG. 58.—Doulton's Slop Closet.

a urinal, it is but an imperfect slop closet, since it is unprovided with water supplies for the cleansing of utensils. Such a slop closet, as in Fig. 58, fulfils every such purpose, as examination of the diagram will reveal, although it cannot be used but as a slop closet. Such apparatus is of considerable usefulness in large private

houses, in hotels, and in hospitals. A recent contrivance for use in infectious hospitals, which can be fitted to the slop closet, is a grid with perforated openings, which, when turned down over the slop basin and the utensil placed over it mouth downwards, throws an upward stream of water into the utensil, and thus thoroughly cleanses it without the objectionable use of the hands.

The cisterns shown in Figs. 57 and 58 are of the modern character, and are calculated to project a three-gallon flush into the basin.

The best type of cistern for closet flushing ought to combine the following features, viz. (1) to supply at each time of action three gallons of water; (2) to fill rapidly after being emptied; (3) to project the water suddenly and forcibly into the closet; and (4) to supply the same quantity of water at each action, irrespective of the action initiated by the user of the fitting.

The junction of the earthenware closet and its branch pipe to soil pipe—which is usually composed of lead—is one which demands the greatest care on the part of a workman (1) because any breach in the joining material exposes the closet room to the air of the soil pipe, and (2) owing to the different expansibilities by heat of the substances connected. Common uniting materials such as red lead and others, for the above reasons, are apt to be imperfect, or to become so. This difficulty has successfully been overcome by the new metallo-keramic joint, patented by Doulton and others, Fig. 50. This forms a perfect connection, and from experiments we have made with it would appear to be a "fast" connection.

THE SOIL PIPE.

The main pipe used for carrying off dejecta is called the soil pipe. It is usually composed of lead or iron, and is jointed at interval by rounded, flanged, or "filled" joints. It ought always to be placed on the outside of an outer wall of the house. In America, however, and other places, subject to rigorous winters, the soil pipe is commonly placed on the inside of an outer wall, or on an inner wall, to prevent freezing of contents. The various fittings for the reception of excretory products are united to it by branch pipes, and each fitting is trapped from the branch pipe, and therefore from the soil pipe. Fig. 43 demonstrates the soil pipe passing down the exterior of the house wall and receiving the branch connection from the closets G, G.

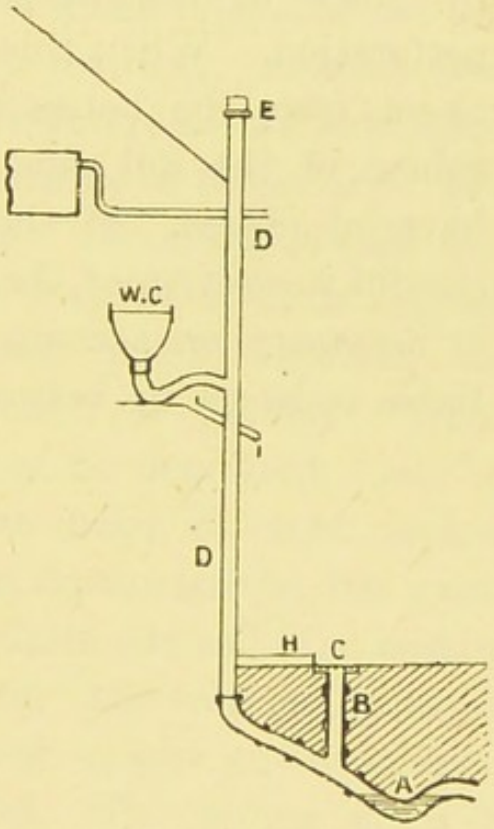


FIG. 59.

D, soil pipe; A, trap; B, ventilating "eye"; C, grating.

The soil pipe should extend from a point at least three feet above the house eaves to a point below the level of the ground, where it is joined to an intercepting ventilating trap, which disconnects it from the house drain. The diameter of the soil pipe ought to be the same throughout its entire length, and right angles ought to be avoided, else accretions are apt to form, and ventilation will be interfered with. The opening of the soil pipe should never be located near attic or dormer windows. Inspection of the soil pipe

ought to be periodically made, as all jointed pipes are apt to "shake," especially when exposed on the sunny side of the house, on account of the expansion and contraction which the metal undergoes (Fig. 59).

The size of the soil pipe must be regulated by the amount of work it is expected to do, and has therefore direct relation to the number of fittings connected with it. For an ordinary house of two or three flats a four-inch diameter pipe will amply suffice; for larger premises, such as hotels, etc., a five- or six-inch pipe.

The lead of branch soil-pipes is attacked by the gases dissolved in the water which passes through them and by gases of decomposition. Corrosion often ends in perforation. When this takes place in the vicinity of the closet-trap, the house interior is exposed to the atmosphere of the soil pipe, and the inmates to consequent harmful effects. If the soil pipe be composed of iron, careful inspection of the joints with the lead branch-pipes is necessary on account of the galvanic action which is liable to be set up between these metals.

CHAPTER XXXIV.

SANITARY FITTINGS (*Continued*)—THE HOUSE DRAIN —TRAPS AND THEIR USES.

THE house drain is that part of the underground soil-carrying apparatus which is situated between the intercepting trap after junction of the waste pipe and the soil pipe and the common sewer in the roadway. Considerable care must be exercised in laying it, and it should be planned to have as straight a course as possible to the sewer. This is called the *alignment* (Fig. 73). It must be laid with a downward gradient from the trap named (its highest point) to the sewer (its lowest point) so that the drainage will flow from the action of gravity. When laid too level, solids are liable to be deposited, "silt" is formed, and, sooner or later, the drain becomes choked. If, on the other hand, the slope downward be too great, the volume of descending water from the soil pipe passing through the trap is apt to "siphon" the trap owing to the momentum—that is, the combined weight and velocity—of the passing column of liquid. The proper slope is, therefore, adjusted by the eye of the experienced workman, or, better, by some instrument as figured in Fig. 60, which represents Moss-Flower's gradient indicator.

The bed upon which the soil pipe is laid ought to be composed of some immovable material to secure solidity, and to prevent disjointing of pipes from uneven "settling"

of house foundations, which is especially liable to happen in buildings founded upon "made-up" or "filled-in" sites. Concrete, or cement, forms the best bed. The house

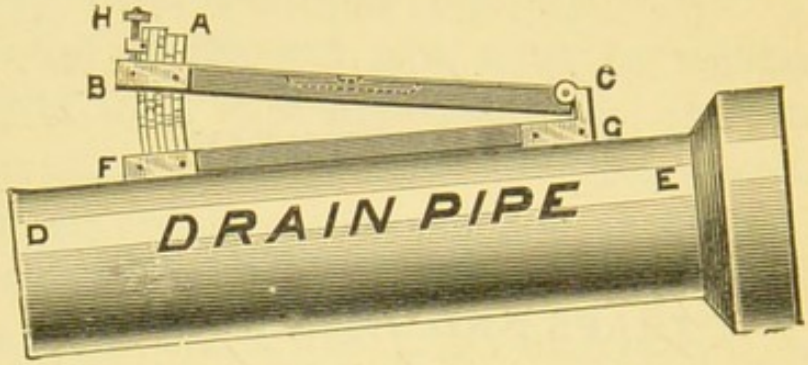


FIG. 60.

A, brass-plate to indicate gradients; D, C, spirit level; D, E, drain pipe, D being the "spigot," and E, the "faucet" end of the pipe; F, G, drain limb of instrument for applying flush with pipe; H, tangent screw, for very accurate adjustments.

drain is composed usually of either fire-clay or iron pipes, in lengths, each length being fitted into the other,—"spigot" and "faucet,"—and the joints made impervious by cement in the case of the former, and by oakum or tow and molten lead in the latter. The best constructed drain, however, is liable, upon occasion, to become blocked from negligence or carelessness on the part of domestics or of householders themselves, and the obstructing causes are of a very varied character; scrubbing brushes, washing-cloths, dusters, and other kindred articles often

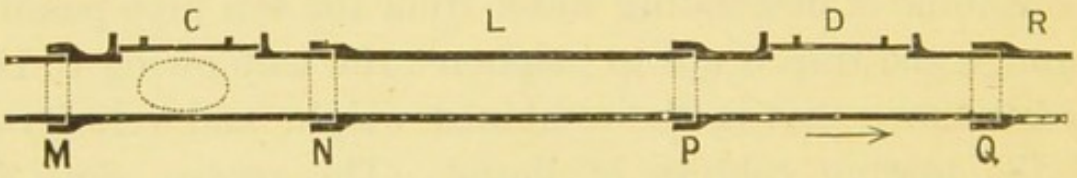


FIG. 61.—Buchan's Inspection Pipe.

D, C, movable openings by which interior may be examined; C is placed at a junction with a branch, indicated by oval ring; L, ordinary pipe length; M, N, P, Q, junctions of pipes.

cause obstruction which must be got rid of. Where the drain is closed in its entire length this can only be accomplished by passing a long flexible iron shaft along

the pipe from a part which has been opened for the purpose. This, however, is an unsatisfactory and expensive method. Provision, therefore, in the original construction may be made for such a contingency by putting in, at intervals, sections of pipes, having movable openings, called "inspection pipes." Figs. 61, 62 represent these in position.

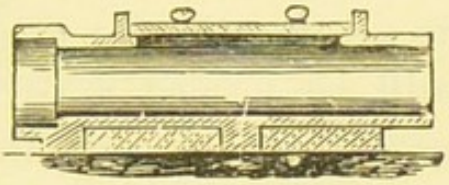


Fig. 62.—Shows Inspection Pipe with pedestal feet, laid on concrete bed.

A house drain ought to possess the following points, viz. (1) it should be laid on a solid bed of concrete or cement; (2) it should have a sufficient gradient; thus, for a four-inch pipe a fall of 1 in 40; (3) there should be no right-angled connections, but oblique, in the direction of the flow; (4) its interior should be as smooth as possible; (5) it should be automatically flushed; (6) it should be disconnected from the soil pipe by an intercepting ventilating trap, which should not open on a pavement, or be close to windows or doorways.

TRAPS.

Frequent use has already been made of the word "trap," and mention has been made of its being an essential part of the drainage system of the house. It is, therefore, necessary that explanation of its use be now given. The object of a trap is suggested in the word itself. It is an arrangement whereby something is to be arrested or trapped which it is desirable to arrest or trap. In relation to sanitary fittings, that *something* consists of foul air and gases generated in pipes which carry foul and putrescible materials, and micro-organisms. The medium by which these are trapped is water more or less

pure, the point of arrest being situated between the house interior and the nearest adjacent foul pipe, or channel. If a glass tube be taken, and in a flame be bent twice in a round curve, and if, after it cools, the tube being held in a perpendicular position, water be poured into it, there will be formed a part of the tube in which water will constantly lie, and through which air at the ordinary pressure will not pass. This forms the most elementary form of trap, consisting of a simple bend in a tube. Should air or gas attempt to pass from the lower end of

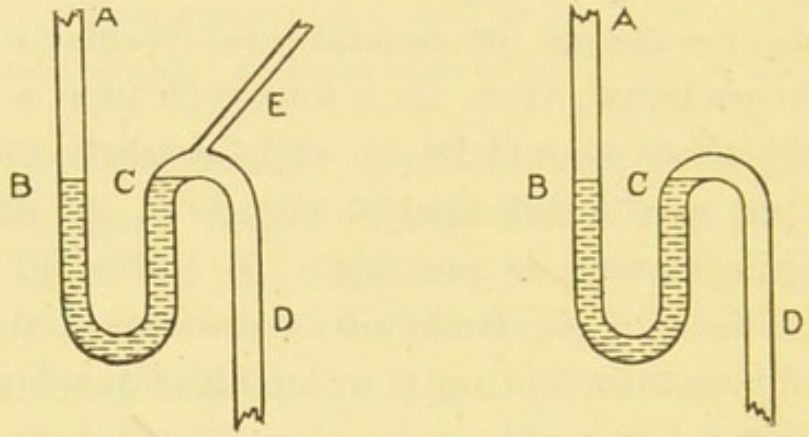


FIG. 63.

A, pipe of trap to fitting; B, C, level of water seal; E, ventilating pipe; D, branch pipe from fitting to soil or waste pipe.

the tube to the upper it is arrested or trapped by the column of water lying in the bend. Should the gas be passed under high pressure, the trap would be forced; in other words, the force of the pressure would overcome the weight of the column of water in the bend of the trap.

If, however, a branch tube be blown in the glass model into the top of the upward bend, no pressure whatever will force the trap, as the air or gas on its way to the trap finds a ready vent by the ventilating tube. From this simple experiment and apparatus the essential features of a trap may be understood (Fig. 63).

A more primitive form of trap used when square brick built drains were in operation, was called the "dip-stone" trap (Fig. 64).

When, however, the circular or pipe form of drain came

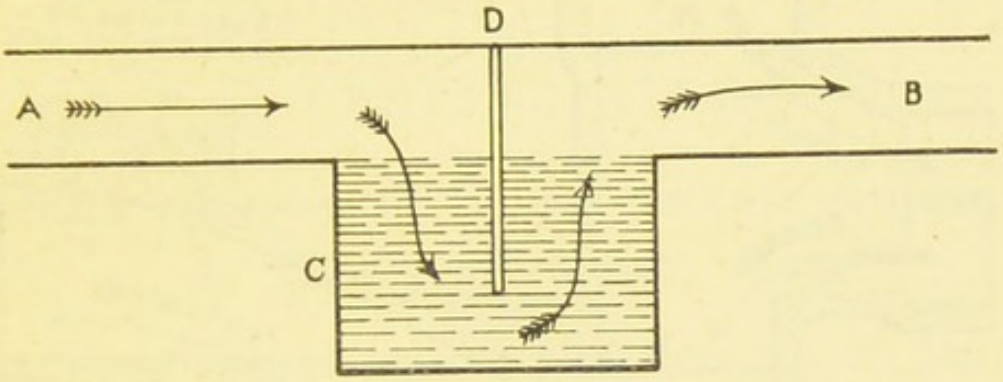


FIG. 64.—"Dipstone" Trap applied to square built drains.

A, inflow of sewage; B, outflow of sewage; C, water seal of trap; D, section of stone from roof of drain dipping into water seal.

to be adopted, the trap had to partake of a character suitable to the new form. Hence in the most elementary form, a simple bend, or a depressed tongue, in the pipe formed the trap. Fig. 65 illustrates the "dipstone" principle adapted to the circular pipe, which was patented by Mr. Honeyman, a Glasgow architect, in 1868.

The column of water which lies in the bend of the trap, and to the extent to which it lies above the "tongue" or "dip" of the trap, is called the *water seal* or *water lock*. Thus in Fig. 66 the water seal is the height of the column of water in the trap between the extremity of the "tongue" Z, and the free surface of the water at Y. Experience with traps in connection with pipes through which water flowed with considerable velocity soon showed that the water seal was liable to dislocation or "forcing"

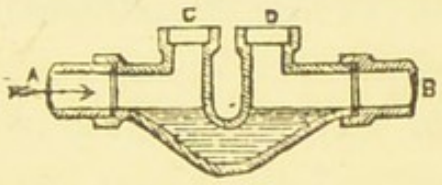


FIG. 65.—Honeyman's Somerset Trap.

A, inlet opening of drain; B, exit opening of drain; between them is the fixed column of water forming the trap, the depressed tongue acting as the "dipstone"; C, D, ventilating and cleansing "eyes" of trap.

from different causes. The disturbing force was found to be either difference of atmospheric pressure or momentum of the flowing water; and the effect produced was the

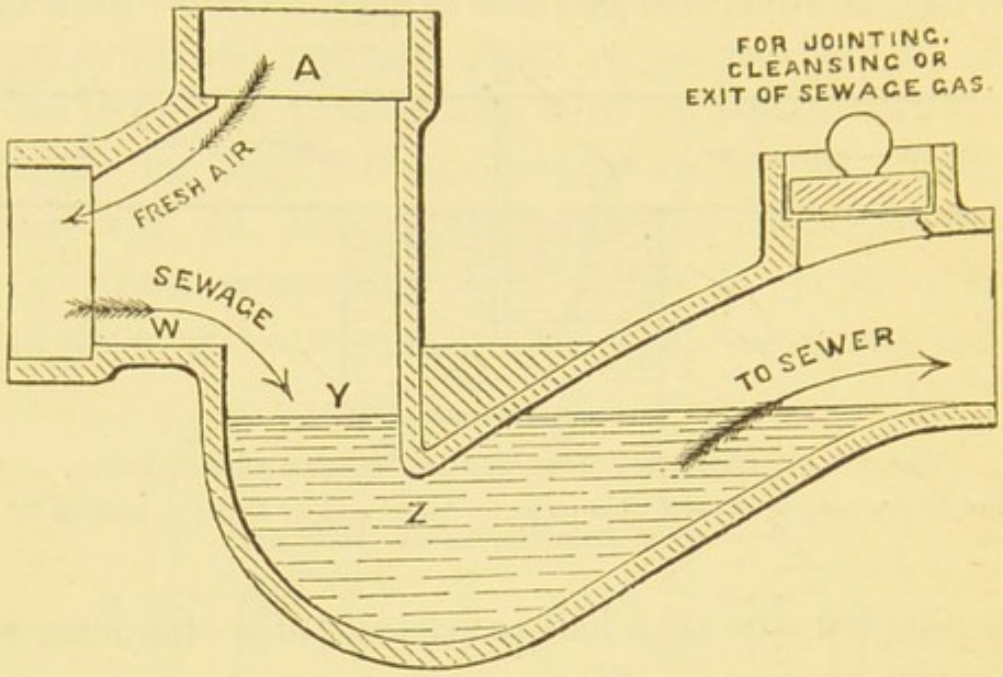


FIG. 66.—Buchan's Intercepting Ventilating Trap.

A, ventilating "eye"; W, lip to produce "cascade" action to cleanse bottom of trap of silt; Y, upper level of water seal; Z, tongue or "dip" of trap. The column of water between Y and the tongue of the trap at Z constitutes the water seal or water lock.

emptying, partial or total, of the water seal. This action, from its parallelism to the action of the siphon, came to be called the "*siphoning*" of a trap.

CHAPTER XXXV.

HOUSE DRAINAGE (*Continued*)—TRAPS—SIPHONING OF TRAPS—FORMS OF TRAPS.

TRAPS may fail in their purpose from one of four main causes, viz. (1) from "siphon" action; (2) from momentum; (3) from evaporation of water seal; or (4) from deposit of solids or "silt." What is meant by "siphoning" of a trap? The action of the siphon having already been explained, little difficulty should be experienced in the comprehension of this. Let us consider the problem in its practical application to a soil stack into which a series of closet branch pipes enter at different levels, as in Fig. 67. In the first place, let it be clearly understood that "siphoning" most readily happens where the traps of the soil pipe and sanitary fittings are unventilated. Therefore, in the diagram, the soil pipe is not carried above the eaves, the traps of the various closets are unventilated, as is also the trap of the soil pipe at its junction with the house drain. Let us suppose, to begin with, that the trap of each closet is properly filled with water, thus trapping the atmosphere of soil pipe from that of house interior, and that the soil pipe and branch pipes are full of air. Between the trap of closet 1, and the unventilated trap of soil pipe, C, there is, therefore, an intervening column of air locked between these two water-sealed points. When closet 1 is used, what happens is what is

represented in the figure. The descending column of water (B) rushes into the soil pipe, and, like the piston of a pump, compresses the atmospheric column, already mentioned, which is water-locked at C. This atmospheric column, therefore, in front of the descending water column is at a greater pressure than that of the outside air, and the air column behind the water is at less pressure. When the water descends to D, and more particularly when it reaches and passes the junctions of the branch pipes from closets 2 and 3 (F and G), the difference of pressure is at once noticed in the water of the traps of these closets. And since the pressure at F and G is now less than that on the surface of the water in the traps 2 and 3, the greater pressure drives the water out of the traps into the soil pipe after the descending column of water, and thus these traps are unlocked, or unsealed, or "siphoned," and are consequently left empty. Suppose, for example, the ordinary atmospheric pressure being 14·7 lbs. per square inch on the surface of the water in the traps 2 and 3, that the superficies of water in each trap be equal to 48 square inches, and the reduction of pressure within the soil pipe during the action of the flush be $\frac{1}{2}$ lb. per square inch, then the total pressure, by difference, on the surface water of the traps will be $48 \div 2 = 24$ lbs., and

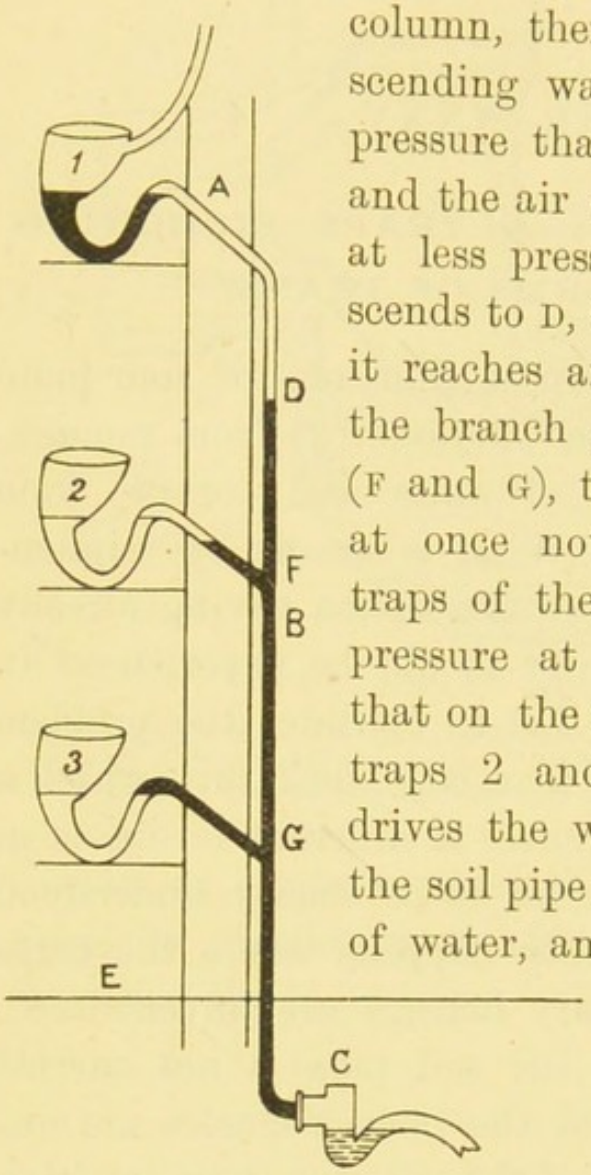


FIG. 67.—To illustrate "siphoning" of traps.

this increase of pressure drives the water of the trap into the soil pipe in its effort to establish atmospheric equilibrium in the soil-pipe atmosphere. This phenomenon of "siphoning" takes place, under such circumstances, even more readily when a bath is being emptied high up in the waste pipe or soil stack, for then the pipe is running "full bore" with water. When traps are siphoned, a straight path for the foul air of the soil pipe is opened into the house interior.

Momentum is the second common cause of rendering a trap useless. When the descending column of water in the soil pipe reaches the unventilated trap, C, it has attained considerable velocity, which is not reduced much by the basin of the trap; consequently, when the last portion of the column reaches the trap it is in a highly agitated condition, and since it is difficult to bring a body moving at considerable velocity to a state of rest, the whole column is likely to be swept through the trap, which is thus left partially or entirely empty.

The third cause is *disuse* of the trap, during which time evaporation of the water seal happens. This is apt to occur in town houses which are unoccupied wholly or in part for lengthened periods during summer, or, indeed, at any time. By reason of this evaporation the atmosphere of soil pipe and house becomes continuous, and not only foul gases, but also micro-organisms, owing to the dry condition of the pipes, find an easy access into the house.

Traps may also be rendered inoperative from being blocked with solid deposit owing to imperfect "setting," or to imperfect water flushing, or to insufficient fall in house drain.

From a knowledge of these difficulties experience has

suggested remedies. For example, free ventilation of soil pipe and all traps connected therewith will prevent siphoning. Any temporary disturbance in the equilibrium of the atmosphere of soil pipe is thus quickly and safely righted. The remedy for disuse is obvious. The means of ventilating the soil pipe having been already discussed, it will be enough now to consider the means of ventilating the traps of the branch fittings. Fig. 63 shows the position of the ventilating pipe in an ordinary trap of a lead pipe. It is always placed on the "crown" of the trap—on the soil-pipe side of the trap. Where a series of such ventilating pipes exist, they are either passed singly through the wall into the open air directly, or they are united either to a separate ventilating main-pipe, or, separately, to the soil pipe at some distance above the entrance of each branch, this distance being regulated (1) by the maximum flush of water which can enter the soil pipe at any time, and (2) by the length of soil pipe which that amount of water will occupy. Thus, one gallon of water fills a pipe of 4 in. diameter to a height of 22 in., and a pipe of $4\frac{1}{2}$ in. to nearly $17\frac{1}{2}$ in. If the maximum flush be three gallons, and the pipe 4 in. in diameter, then $22 \times 3 = 66$ in. would be the minimum height above the entrance of the branch pipe at which the ventilating pipe of the trap of that branch should enter the soil pipe. In large traps which are placed in the ground at the termination of the soil pipe or waste

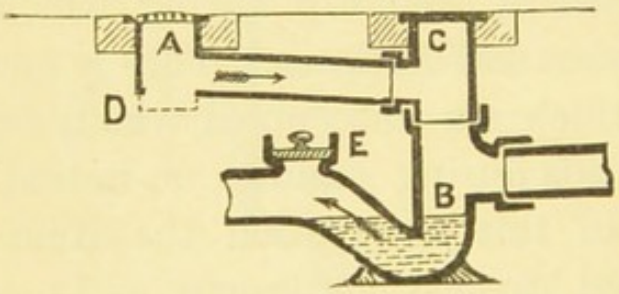


FIG. 68.—Buchan's Trap with Ventilating "Eye."

A is the ventilating "eye" which is carried to the ground level at some distance from the house, and the arrows represent the direction of the incoming current of air, and the flow of sewage.

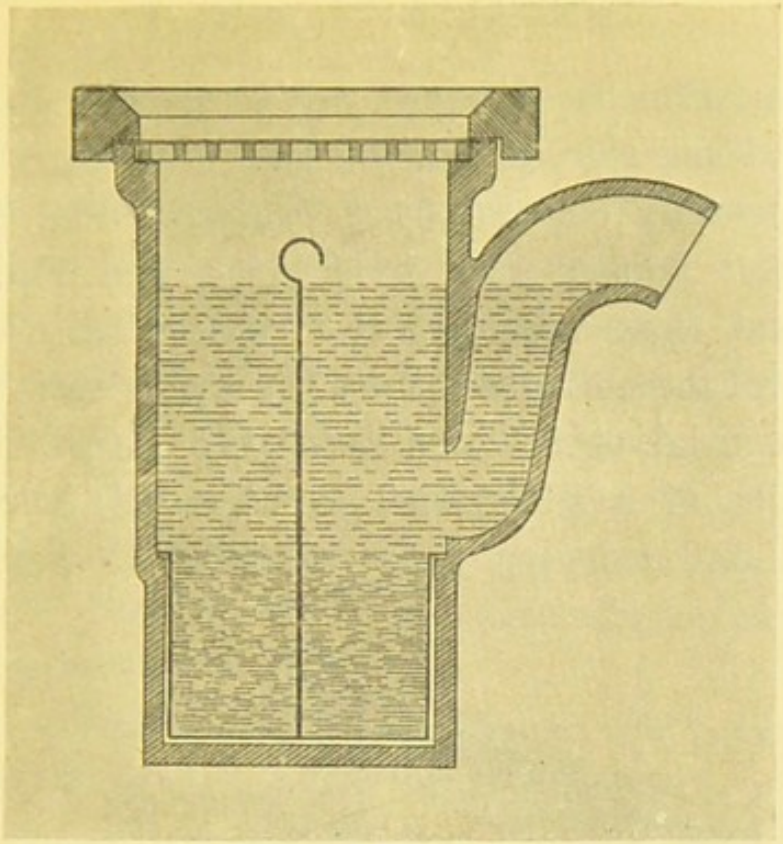


FIG. 69.—Dean's Yard Gully-Trap.

This trap is intended to receive water from courtyard surfaces, and to catch and retain solid detritus in the bucket which is contained in it.

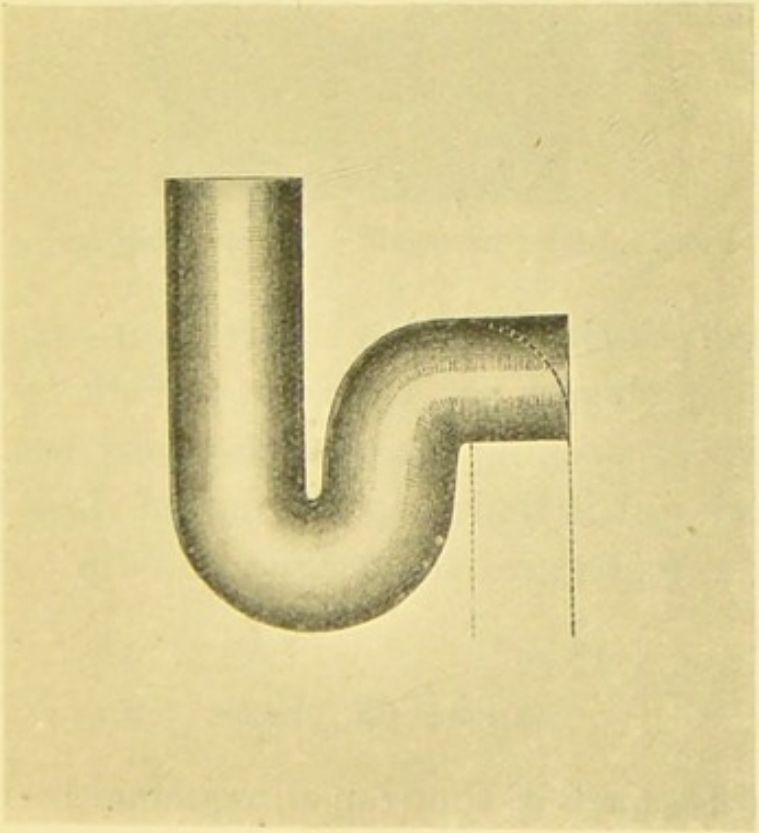


FIG. 70.—Ordinary S-Trap.

Traps of this form, with or without a ventilating or anti-syphonage eye, as shown in Fig. 63, and with or without a movable lid at its base for the purpose of clearing the trap, are adapted to sinks, water-fittings, as basins, etc.

pipe, ventilation is attained by a special opening in the trap which reaches the surface of the ground, and which is usually covered by a grating. Fig. 66 shows the essential points of a good trap; and Fig. 68 the arrangement for carrying the ventilation opening at ground level some distance from the house wall.

The essential points of a good trap are these, viz. (1) it should be of a self-cleansing shape; (2) it should be ventilated, and thus not easily unlocked from any cause;

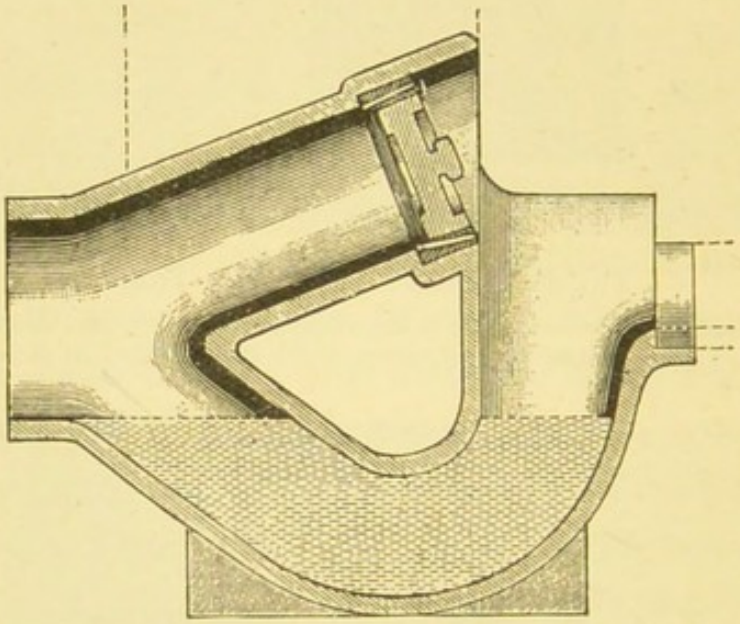


FIG. 71.—The "Beancliff" Disconnecting Trap.

(3) it should possess a sufficient water seal—not less than $2\frac{1}{2}$ in.; (4) it should not be liable to "silt"; and (5) it should have an opening for cleansing purposes. In Fig. 66 the water seal is shown by the dotted lines between Y and Z, and Z represents the tongue or "dip" of the trap.

FORMS OF TRAPS.

The precise form of the trap is regulated by the special function it is intended to serve, and the forms now in use are so varied that space forbids their consideration. One

additional form must, however, be mentioned, viz. the courtyard "gully" trap, which, as the name implies, is placed in courtyards for the purpose of carrying into the house drain surface-washings and rainfall. Inasmuch as sand and other débris are liable to be swept into the gully with the inflowing surface-water, the trap is so formed that the heavier débris at least settles at its lowermost part either into a bucket with perforated walls which is inserted into that part of the trap, or into that part of the trap itself, from which the sedimented matter may be emptied periodically (Fig. 69).

It is sufficient to say that there are many excellent forms in the market by well-known makers, and there is little to choose between the best of them.

CHAPTER XXXVI.

ATMOSPHERE OF HOUSE DRAIN AND SEWER — MODES OF TESTING DRAINS — SEWER VENTILATION.

FREQUENT mention of the foul air of soil pipe, house drain, and sewer, and of its being a disease-producing factor, has already been made. Let us briefly inquire wherein the air of these parts of the sanitary apparatus is harmful. In the first place, it is to be remembered that these channels carry off materials in a putrescible condition, from which, when putrescence takes place, as it readily does in water, foul-smelling gases are disengaged, which are chiefly composed of compounds of sulphur with hydrogen or ammonia, or both, as in a rotten egg. From constant exposure to these alone, ill-health is more or less quickly engendered, shown by loss of appetite, malaise, weakness, pallor of countenance, and not infrequently by eruptive skin diseases. When present in concentrated form, as in sewers, they produce alarming symptoms, and sometimes fatal results. In addition to these malodorous gases there are other equally objectionable gases generated, which, however, only possess a faint, sickly, or fœtid odour. These are compounds of carbon and ammonia, and carbon and hydrogen. Of greater importance still than any of these are certain disease-producing micro-organisms. Diverse opinions are

held in respect of the amount of mischief produced by the agency of sewer air; but little doubt need be entertained on the question, since, indubitably, sewer air is harmful. There is no question, however, regarding the potency for harm of certain micro-organisms which are found associated with decomposing fæcal matter, and particularly with the discharges from patients suffering from enteric fever and diphtheria. Entrance of gases from soil pipe or house drain, and more certainly of these micro-organisms, into the atmosphere of occupied rooms, will sooner or later set up ill-health or disease, and it is to prevent these entering that water traps are used, since water arrests and holds in solution and suspension such gases and micro-organisms. A dry pipe or trap is, therefore, more dangerous than a wet one, and the atmosphere of sewer, drain, or soil pipe is always more dangerous in droughty weather than in wet, and in the case of micro-organisms, least harmful in a rainy season.

TESTING OF DRAINS.

It is advisable and necessary during the occupation of a house to have the drain connections periodically tested in respect of their integrity. Systematic attention to this will often avert illnesses in a family. Whenever a house has been built, and before the drainage contract is taken from the hands of the contractor as being satisfactory, the whole plumbing and sanitary work should be tested. To this, no proper tradesman can offer any objection. It is to be hoped, also, that the time is near at hand when every householder, before occupying a house, will deem it necessary to have a certificate of its sanitary competency given at the hands of a competent inspector.

The mode of drain testing resolves itself into one of four ways, viz. (1) by water; (2) by smoke; (3) by the pneumatic test; or (4) by some volatile odorous substance. The water or hydrostatic test consists in stopping the waste and soil pipes near the basement, and each branch fitting, with watertight, solid plugs, and then in filling, from the topmost part, the whole piping with water. Any imperfect joint will be revealed by leakage, and by the lowering of the original level of the water. This test is only fitted for new buildings before occupation. It is, however, an unduly severe and unequal test if applied to a long length of perpendicular pipe, since the internal pressure on the pipe is inversely as is the height of the column of water. Thus the pressure is greatest at the lowest point of the closed pipe, and diminishes gradually upwards, until at the top it is trifling in amount. But this hydrostatic test is always applicable to the house drain. The smoke test consists in filling the whole sanitary apparatus with strong-smelling smoke under some degree of pressure. To do this, the tops of the waste pipe and soil pipe must be properly closed. The smoke is then driven into the pipes at the ventilating "eye" of the intercepting trap, at the junction of soil pipe and house drain. Should leaky joints be present, they are detected by the appearance of smoke, and by its odour. In this way "faults" are tracked, and remedies applied. The apparatus used is called a smoke-testing or fumigating

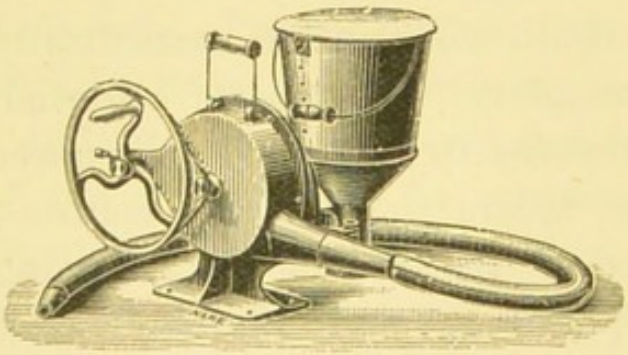


FIG. 72.—Machine for testing Sanitary Fittings by the use of Smoke.

machine, and consists of the following essential parts, viz. (1) the motor by which the smoke is impelled; (2) the smoke-generating receptacle; and (3) tubing to connect Nos. 1 and 2, and No. 2 with trap (Fig. 72). The motive power may consist of a fan driven by hand, or of spirting jets of water which act automatically. A machine of the latter form has been invented by the chief sanitary inspectors of Glasgow and Mid-Lanarkshire. Such an apparatus works automatically when connected with a water-supply pipe. The water tap is connected by tubing with the branch pipe. When the jet of water enters the top-shaped part, in the upper part of which the smoke-generating material is placed and lighted, it is split into a large series of fine sprays, which cause a current of air and smoke to pass on towards the pipe, and air to pass from the outside to fill its place. This is a very ingenious and labour-saving machine. Its efficiency depends, however, on adequacy of pressure of water supplied. Other modes, such as pouring odorous substances into the pipes to be examined, are absolutely useless. The most recent method is the pneumatic test. In this test, air under pressure, the degree of which may be regulated as desired, is driven in by a pump to which is attached a pressure-gauge or manometer. The presence of leakage, due to faulty construction of joints, or to defects in the pipes, is indicated by lowering of the pressure in the gauge, and the fault itself by a hissing sound, it may be, at point of leakage.

SEWER VENTILATION.

This subject may be briefly dismissed in the following sentences:—By means of manholes, about every hundred

yards apart, situated in the centre of the street, an interchange is effected between the air of the sewer and the atmosphere. Some of these manholes act as outlets of foul, others as inlets of fresh, air, the incidence of their action depending on local wind currents, or the admission of hot water or spent steam from public works into the sewer. Such, however, at the best is but haphazard

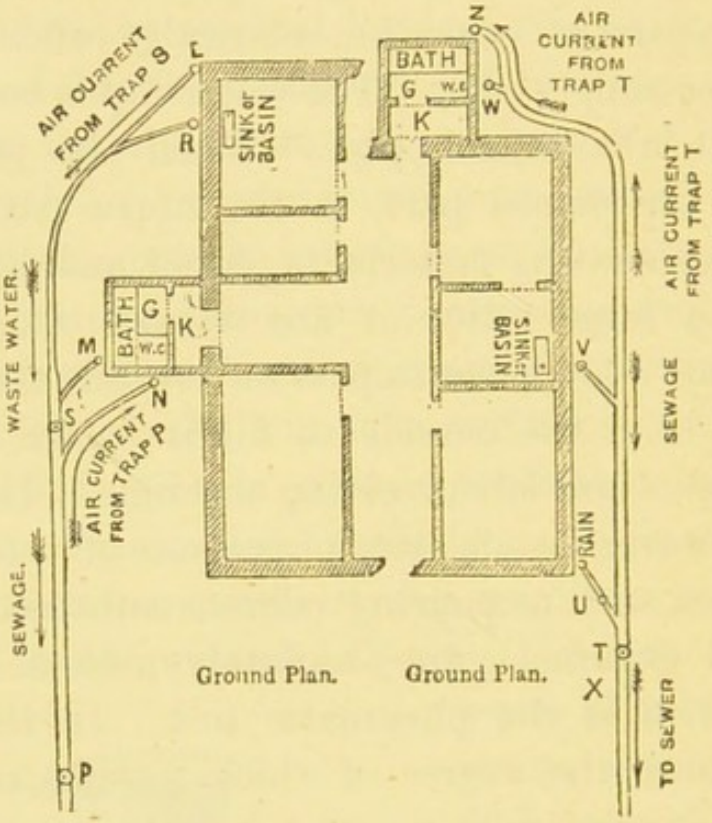


FIG. 73.—Drain Plan of Villa.

ventilation, and, generally speaking, too little attention is given to the subject. Doubtless the time will come when the sewer system will be composed of a closed system of channels, made to converge at fixed points, at which, by the exhaust power of a furnace burning at the base of a tall chimney, perfect ventilation will not only be effected, but also harmful sewer products be made innocuous.

PLAN OF DRAINS.

An exact plan of the drainage system of every house should be in the possession of its owner. From the want of such, considerable expense and trouble have been caused. To the uninitiated such a plan may appear a very complicated affair, but usually it is easier to read than an architectural plan. Fig. 73 shows a simple plan.

DISINFECTION OF DRAINS.

It is by no means a simple matter to disinfect a house drain, much less a sewer. The prevalent habit of adding small quantities of disinfectants from time to time is only delusive, since, owing to the dilution which they undergo, they become practically inoperative. The only approximately efficient way is to fill a bath with water, then to charge it with a concentrated solution of some non-corrosive disinfectant, such as Jeyes' Fluid or Sanitas, mix the contents, and then suddenly discharge it by the waste pipe into the drain. It ought always to be remembered that certain disinfectants, when used too strong, such as corrosive sublimate or chlorinated lime, attack the metal of the pipes, the former especially acting as a solvent of the solder. But of this more will be said when dealing with the disinfection of infective discharges.

The best and cheapest disinfectants of drains, however, are *fresh air* and a plentiful supply of water, and if these channels are well flushed with both, no consideration need be given to chemical disinfection.

CHAPTER XXXVII.

SEWAGE DISPOSAL AND PURIFICATION—PRECIPITATION — IRRIGATION — FILTRATION — BACTERIOLYSIS—HOUSE REFUSE DISPOSAL—CONSERVANCY SYSTEMS — PRACTICAL HINTS FOR HOUSEHOLDERS AND NURSES.

DISPOSAL OF SEWAGE.

The proper disposal and purification of the water-borne sewage of a populous place ought to be a matter of solicitude on the part of sanitary authorities. Hitherto, in many cases, but little attention has been paid to the fitness of place and mode of *disposal*. Not infrequently, if the populous place be situated on a river, a canal, or by the seashore, the main outlet sewers are simply turned into the waterway to pollute the river, canal, or foreshore, which is a contravention of the Rivers' Pollution Act. The Clyde at Glasgow, the Liffey at Dublin, the Seine below Paris, and other rivers, have become converted into elongated sewers, seething with fermenting corruption. It has often been alleged that such practice and results are not positively injurious to health. This is, however, contrary both to common-sense and fact; the only difficulty is to bring the proof home. In certain favourably situated populous places on the sea-board, sewage may be disposed of without purifying treatment by

passing it into the sea, some distance from the foreshores of the town, at a point where, on ebb-tide, it is carried wholly seaward by currents which carry it directly thither. But now-a-days, most populous places have to combine with the problem of disposal the additional task of purification. That sewage can be satisfactorily disposed of and purified in relation to a river has been demonstrated in the case of London and elsewhere. The chief objection to the initiation of large purification schemes in other cities is the financial one; but what citizens spend in this way they are likely to save by healthier and longer lives.

All applied methods for sewage purification may be divided into four kinds, viz. (1) by chemical treatment or *precipitation;* (2) by *irrigation;* (3) by *filtration;* and (4) by *lacteriolysis*, or *bacterial treatment.*

The first mode consists in mixing with the sewage by mechanical means certain chemical substances in certain definite proportions, allowing the mixture to settle in settling-ponds, running off the clear supernatant fluid, sometimes passing this through filter beds, and ultimately discharging the clear effluent into a river or other waterway. Lime, alumina, and iron are the principal precipitants now employed, and they act both chemically and mechanically. The solid portion or sludge is, if possible, sold as manure, either in bulk or compressed in the form of cakes. If not disposed of in this way for agricultural purposes, it is conveyed in the semi-liquid form out to sea in barges, and emptied there.

The second mode is adopted where, in the neighbourhood of a town, suitable land is easily and cheaply procurable. The sewage is conveyed to this land, and is run upon the surface of the sloping ground in channels which

distribute it equally. Porous sandy soil is the best, since percolation quickly occurs. The solids are incorporated into the soil by agricultural operations. The percolated water finds its way into natural channels, just as the rain does. The land, so enriched, is utilised for the cultivation of certain kinds of crops. This system is called *broad irrigation.*

The third mode is by filtration. To a considerable extent this happens also in the second mode. But in this process, where filtration is the principal feature in the clarification of the sewage, suitable land must be prepared after the fashion of a large filter bed, which is divided into a series of plots. The bottom of the bed—six feet from the surface—is laid at intervals with agricultural drain pipes; on top of this are placed large broken stones, over that gravel, and on the top of all the natural sandy soil. The sewage is distributed over these plots by surface channels, and in such rotation that each plot works for six, and rests for eighteen hours, by which means the soil is prevented from becoming clogged, and re-aeration is established. The percolated water finds its way into the artificially prepared channels at the bottom of the filter bed, and thence to a water-way. The solids are incorporated with the soil. This is known as *intermittent downward filtration.*

The bacteriological, biological, or bacterial system of purifying sewage, which is the latest development in sewage treatment, may be said to have had its origin in the observations made by Abbé Moigno, the parish priest of Vesoul in France, an account of which he published in a pamphlet in 1883. The rationale of the system is that sewage, being a composite fluid richly charged with organic matter, and containing initially microbes of

varied kinds and in large numbers, is attacked under favourable circumstances by these microbes, and by their action complex organic bodies are reduced to simpler bodies, and ultimately are transformed into harmless inorganic salts.

Between 1892-96, Dibdin, who was then chemist to the London County Council, carried out a series of experimental investigations as to the efficiency of bacterial action in purifying sewage. He constructed open beds, filled with coke and other materials, into which crude sewage was passed and allowed to remain for a time in contact with the bed-material, during which time microbic action on the sewage took place. These beds were subjected to alternate periods of active work and complete rest, the latter, that is while the bed was empty, to permit re-aeration of the contents of the bed. The results obtained from such treatment showed that a considerable degree of purification had been achieved.

In 1895-96, a large installation was laid down in Exeter by Cameron, on lines identical in principle, and almost in detail, to those described by Abbé Moigno. In this installation, however, the sewage was subjected to different procedure from that of Dibdin. The sewage was first passed through a "grit chamber" to allow of sedimentation of the grosser solids, then into what was called a "septic tank"—a closed, dark, practically air-free chamber—thence to the filter beds, or "contact beds" as they are now more commonly called, in which, after being filled with the effluent from the septic tank, the sewage was allowed to lie in contact with the contents of the bed, and thence, after filtration through the bed-contents, it passed by an effluent channel to the nearest stream or water-way. From the time the sewage entered

the grit chamber until it reached the filter or contact bed, it flowed through the works in a slow but continuous stream.

A still later development in the process, a modification, in short, of the Exeter process, was that experimentally investigated and instituted first at Manchester, viz. the substitution of an "open" for a "closed" septic tank. In the closed tank of the Exeter process, it was found after the process had been in operation for some months, that a thick, dark-coloured, tough scum gathered on the surface of the sewage within the tank. This modification was based on the assumption that this scum would form on the surface of the sewage in an open tank also, and if so, preventing as it did the entrance of light, and to some extent also, of air, to the subnatant column of sewage, the scum would practically play the part of the roof of the closed tank. After experimentation, such was found to be the case; but precautions were found necessary to be taken to prevent dislocation of the scum by high winds.

To these different systems, different names have been given, depending upon the kind or class of microbes which had mainly to do with the work of purification. The systems have, therefore, come to be known as the Aerobic and the Anaerobic-aerobic systems, because in the former the microbes which only live and grow in presence of air chiefly operate, and in the latter, first, the microbes which can only live and grow in the absence of air, and second, the aerobic microbes, act in turn upon the sewage. It may be explained here that the aerobic microbes chiefly act in the contact beds, and the anaerobes in the septic tank, whether closed or open. Dibdin's experimental methods may be taken as examples of the former method; and to these may be added as further

examples, the Ducat, Scott-Moncrieff, the Stoddart, and the Candy-Caink methods. The Exeter and Manchester methods are examples of the latter method.

In the systems in which the septic tank plays an important part, the object of the tank is to enable the anaerobic organisms to operate actively, their work being to reduce or break down complex albuminous and other organic bodies into elementary gaseous bodies. The purpose of the filter or contact beds is to enable the aerobic organisms to construct out of these gaseous bodies which are held in solution in the fluid, chemical substances of a harmless character. In other words, the anaerobic organisms exercise a resolvant or analytic action, and the aerobic organisms, a constructive or synthetic action. The gases which are generated by the anaerobic organisms are hydrogen, nitrogen, hydrogen sulphide, carbonic acid, marsh gas, and other carbon gases, and, probably, in addition, ammonia and ammonium sulphide. The aerobic organisms build out of these nitrogenous gases—first, nitrous acid, which forms nitrites with alkaline or other bases, and, second, nitric acid, which, uniting with similar bases, form nitrates. Much experimental investigation has been made regarding the chemistry and bacteriology of the process with a view to understand its efficiency, which is now well-established.

From a careful consideration of what has been said, it will be apparent that while bacterial action is the predominant feature of the process, certain value must be attached to the filtering action of the beds. This is evident when we contrast the clearness of the effluent—that is, the freedom of the effluent from suspended matter, after the sewage from the septic tank has been passed through two beds instead of one. Indeed, it was soon

found in the early stages of working the system that one filter bed was insufficient to ensure freedom of the effluent from suspended matter. Consequently, closer attention came to be paid not only to the material used in these beds, but to the effect upon the effluent, in order to befit it to pass into a stream. To this end, the effluent from the septic tank is now usually passed through two beds in sequence, called the *primary* and *secondary* beds, the constituents of the former being of coarser, and the latter of finer, material.

Construction of Filter or Contact Beds.—These beds are made in one of two ways: (1) either by constructing artificial walls round an excavated area, or (2), where the ground is composed of clay, by simple excavation of the clay bank to the required depth. Thereafter on the bottom of the bed are laid loose-jointed, tile drain-pipes, which are connected with the channel from the bed by which the effluent passes. Upon these is placed the filtering or contact material. In the primary or coarse contact bed, the component pieces of material are regulated in size by being screened through a sieve or screen, the meshes of which will pass any size under two inches, but pieces of less than half an inch are kept out. In the secondary or fine contact bed, the materials are in size anything under a quarter of an inch, but not smaller than one-sixteenth of an inch. Apart, therefore, from microbic action, the primary bed acts as a coarse mechanical strainer, whereas the secondary bed acts as a fairly efficient fine filter, and both are calculated to arrest any passing suspended matter. In certain places, however, instead of having two separate beds as above described, attempt has been made to combine in one bed the joint action of the two. This is done by filling the lower part

of the bed with the coarser, and the upper part with the finer, material. In such cases, however, the coarse material is not so coarse as in the coarse bed of the double system. At Barrhead, near Glasgow, for example, the depth of the beds is four feet, the lower three feet nine inches of which are filled with pieces of engine-ashes of three-quarters of an inch and not less than a quarter of an inch in size, and the upper three inches of finer material than the lower stratum.

Kinds of materials used in Beds.—The materials to be used in these beds must possess certain properties if they are to be of permanent efficiency. For example, they must be hard, and not subject to easy disintegration, and they must present a relatively large superficies for microbic action. It is because, therefore, they possess in greater or lesser measure such properties, that broken clinker, coke, pan-breeze, burnt ashes, and small, washed, but unburnt coal, have come to be used.

Depth of Beds.—The depth of beds, and, consequently, of the contact or filtering layer, varies. In certain places it is six feet, in others four feet, and in others three and a half feet.

Area of Beds to Population.—Some difference of opinion exists as to the ratio of filter-bed area to population. Some are of opinion that for a previously clarified sewage, two acres of filter area are required for every million gallons of sewage per day. A reasonable area may be put at half an acre of bed for a population of 2000 persons.

Working of Beds.—As in the intermittent downward filtration system, the filter beds are so arranged in series that each bed, after a term of work, has a long period of rest daily, in order to establish re-aeration of the bed.

Of the other systems which have been named as belonging to the Aerobic class, some passing attention must be given to the Ducat, the Stoddart and the Candy-Caink systems. The principle of them all is to oxidise or oxygenate the sewage by subdividing it into drops; they differ from each other only in the manner in which this is accomplished.

In the Ducat system, the sewage is distributed over the filter bed, which is composed of any coarse material, such as stone-chips, gravel, cinders, etc., by means of patent automatic tipping troughs. This system has been installed at Hendon, and seems to act efficiently. In the Stoddart system, the bed is composed of coarse rubble or any like rough material, laid upon a concrete bed or floor, which slopes down toward one end. The sewage is applied to the filtering medium by means of distributors, made of iron, of alternate ridge-and-gutter form, so arranged that the sewage drips upon the material in the bed. In the Candy-Caink system, the sewage, after passing through a grit chamber, is evenly distributed in drops by a revolving sprinkler over a contact bed composed as in the Stoddart system. In each of these processes, aerobic organisms mainly perform the work of purification.

Probably the one outstanding advantage of the bacteriological over the precipitation process is the absence of the formation of sludge. It cannot be said, however, that there is an entire absence of sludge even in this process. It forms in the septic tank; but its amount, shown after some years' continuous working of the process, is so comparatively small as to render it a practically negligible quantity. As to the efficiency of the bacterial system, sufficient time has now elapsed to

demonstrate that, when it is properly worked, it is an effective method of purifying sewage, and not merely domestic sewage, but also sewage which is largely composed of varied trade effluents. Where primary and secondary contact beds are installed, the effluent is practically freed from suspended matter, but it cannot be pretended that even such relatively pure effluents are free from pathogenic organisms, since certain of them have been proved to survive the treatment.

CONSERVANCY METHODS.

Whether or not a water-borne system of sewerage prevails in any populous place, a considerable amount of solid refuse from ash-pits, etc., remains to be disposed of. In place of ash-pits, a daily dust-bin service has been established in many towns. In smaller places, where the privy system obtains, and where the water supply is obtained from shallow wells often in proximity to these offices, pollution of the water sooner or later occurs with serious consequences to the consumers. In connection with farms and milk supplies this is a matter of the greatest moment, since nothing in sanitary science has been more clearly demonstrated than that milk is probably the most common vehicle of enteric fever. In Glasgow, alone, during the past twenty-five years, almost every epidemic of this disease has been traced to in-brought milk from insanitary farms. Where the ash-pit and privy system prevails the contents should be removed at short intervals. Earth is one of the most efficient of absorbents and deodorants; hence the earth closet is of practical value in such districts (Fig. 74). In isolated country houses, fitted up with modern sanitary conveniences,

the usual ultimate destination of the sewage is either a cesspool or a small stream. The latter outlet is wholly objectionable. A cesspool built of brick, set in cement, and founded on concrete, at some distance from the house in a field or in the garden, is a more preferable destination, for, in the latter case, its contents can be used for

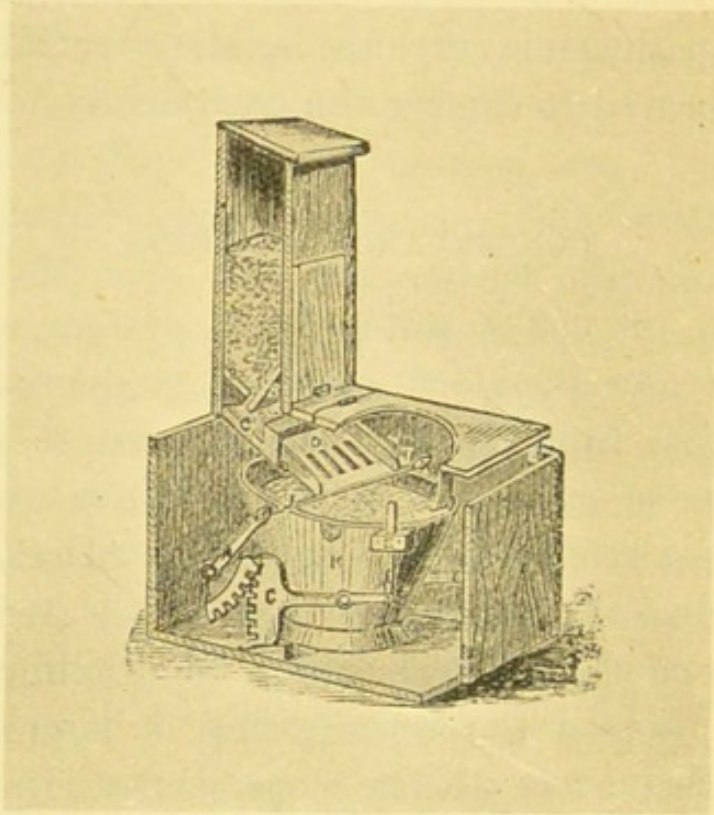


FIG. 74.—The Earth-Closet, British Sanitary Company's Model. The earth, preferably a dry loam, is placed in the receiver, from which a regulated quantity is projected into the closet-pail by the action of the lever.

horticultural purposes, and, in the former, irrigation may be carried out.

In populous places the problem of the disposal of house and ash-pit refuse, street sweepings, offal, and miscellaneous débris, has been solved by the establishment of municipal depots, wherein manurial products are collected and sold, and ash-pit and other refuse burned in destructors. In this way hundreds of thousands of tons are got rid of yearly. Such works, too, may be

carried on at comparatively small expenditure. All the power for steam and electric lighting in the works is generated from the cinders from the ash-pits; the solder recovered from tins, and the manure, are sold, in this way reducing expenditure. With smoke-consuming apparatus, such a work can be carried on with no offence to the neighbourhood. In smaller towns, such refuse is usually carted to some piece of common land in the vicinity, and, in the open, is there set on fire, but the smoke which results therefrom is a distinct nuisance, being very malodorous.

HINTS TO HOUSEHOLDERS AND NURSES RESPECTING THE DISPOSAL OF HOUSE REFUSE.

In the first place, nothing except ashes, soot, and inorganic débris should be consigned to the ash-pit. From the mistaken practice of throwing food-waste into that receptacle, a plague of rats is apt to follow. This may be avoided by following the foregoing advice. In the second place, food-scraps, which cannot be charitably disposed of, ought to be consumed in the kitchen fire; and in the third place, by sifting cinders, and by drying food débris, economy may be effected in the cost of heat-production, and the bulk of the ash-pit refuse considerably lessened.

In respect of the use of disinfectants in closets for the disinfection of infective discharges from patients, it should be remembered that strong solutions of corrosive sublimate ought never to be put into that receptacle, or into slop closets, or sinks, unless and until they are abundantly diluted after the disinfectant has had time to do its work. This disinfectant, as also chlorinated lime, attacks the lead pipes and solder. Copious flushing

should always follow. Where a privy or earth closet takes the place of a water closet, the disinfected discharges of a patient suffering from either enteric fever, cholera, or diphtheria, should never be placed in it, but should be interred in the soil in a remote part of a garden, or other available piece of ground, but not in proximity to a well.

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

CLOTHING IN RELATION TO HEALTH—MATERIALS EMPLOYED IN MANUFACTURE—THEIR USES AND VALUES.

THE primary function of clothing, of whatever kind, is to conserve the animal heat of the body. Combined with this duty, however, are the subsidiary purposes of serving for decency, for the adornment of the person, and for protection against injury. Conservation of the body heat is especially necessary in temperate and arctic climates. In warm or equatorial climates, on the other hand, clothing fulfils chiefly the purposes of personal adornment and bodily protection. The study of clothing has received of late years closer attention than ever it did before, especially from the hygienic standpoint. The human body is capable of resisting heat and cold through a very considerable range of temperature, but it is more able to withstand extremes of heat than of cold. This might be predicated from the fact that the animal body is a great heat-producer in relation to its size, food being the fuel, and the bodily organs the furnace in which the fuel is burned by chemical action; but the total amount of heat generated within a given period is, however, limited at the best. The object of clothing, therefore, is to prevent this body heat being dissipated too rapidly from the body.

RAW MATERIALS.

The materials of which the different fabrics are composed are obtained almost equally from the animal and vegetable worlds. From the former are obtained (1) wool, mainly from the sheep species, but partly from the goat species, and from the camel, alpaca, and vicuna; (2) silk, from the cocoon of the silk-moth, and from other silk-yielding moths; (3) skins, which are used after preparation, with or without adherent fur; (4) hair; and (5) feathers of birds. From the latter are contributed (1) cotton, from cotton shrubs; (2) linen, from the flax plant; (3) jute and hemp, used for subsidiary clothing purposes; (4) guttapercha, or caoutchouc, from the india-rubber plant; and (5) straw, from wheat stalks and grasses, cut when green, and afterwards bleached.

These different stuffs are used either pure or mixed, and compose, in the main, the different fabrics of which body coverings are made. A rapid review of these coverings will show how these materials are utilised for body protection and heat conservation. For example, in the head-gear, straw, silk, satin, feathers, fur, wire, linen as artificial flowers, cotton, wool, felt, and like materials, find a place. Linen composes the collar and collarette, and it also, like cotton, wool, and silk, enters largely into the composition of underclothing. The outer person is clad in garments of wool, silk, or cotton. Leather is found in boots, shoes, vests, and other articles of attire, while guttapercha enters into the composition of foot-gear and overalls, for protection against damp. Furs serve the double purpose of adornment and heat conservation, chiefly the former in temperate climates, and solely the latter purpose in arctic climates. The

materials of which textile fabrics are made differ both as to their physical and microscopic appearances. A good hand magnifying glass will reveal these differences. Wool fibres appear as continuous stems, with circular markings, which give the edges of the fibre a notched character, owing to which they more readily lend themselves to the operations of twisting, weaving, and matting. Silk fibres look like clear threads, without any pith; cotton fibres have roughened edges, and show twistings in their length; linen fibres exhibit nodular points in their length: it is difficult, however, to distinguish between jute and hemp. Their different behaviour when treated with certain chemicals and dye stuffs further helps to distinguish between them.

PERMEABILITY IN RESPECT OF AIR.

Different cloth stuffs, of exactly similar size, when subjected to the same test, exhibit differences in the respective amounts of air which may be passed through them in a given time. Suppose flannel, linen, silk, and leather to be taken for the test. The result will show that 100 parts of air will pass through the flannel for 60 of the linen, 40 of the silk, and about 30 of the leather. The porosity or permeability of these substances will, therefore, be in the order named.

WATER-ABSORPTIVE CAPACITY.

If pieces of new silk, linen, cotton, and flannel of exactly similar size be taken and placed flat-ways and lightly upon the surface of cold water, they do not float for equal periods of time. Silk sinks almost at once, linen in about one minute, cotton in about four

and a quarter hours, and flannel does not sink at all. This experiment shows, approximately, the rate at which garments made of these respective stuffs will become saturated with damp. If worn materials be used in the experiment, and warm instead of cold water, absorption is relatively more rapid.

THERMIC PROPERTIES.

The heat-conducting capacity of different textile fabrics is by no means the same. Cotton and linen, especially the latter, feel colder to the touch than silken or woollen articles. They are, therefore, better heat-conductors than the latter; that is to say, in the same time they rob the body of more heat. This conductivity does not, however, depend so much upon the materials themselves as upon the closeness or openness of the woven texture. The "fluffier" the material the more air is held within the interstices of the fabric, and hence the heat of the body is conducted away less rapidly.

The roughness of the fibres of wool as compared with those of linen, or cotton, or silk, by setting up some degree of irritation of the skin, and, therefore, a greater supply of blood to that part than usual, doubtless contributes in some measure to the greater sense of warmth of a woollen garment, and, for a like reason, is ill-borne by hyper-sensitive persons.

BEHAVIOUR TO SENSIBLE PERSPIRATION.

This is a matter of considerable practical importance. Cotton, linen, and wool behave differently. Experience amply demonstrates that, when garments worn next the body, and composed of these materials respectively, become wet with sweat, a feeling of chilliness is more

quickly perceived in the case of cotton and linen than of wool. Heat, therefore, is more rapidly abstracted from the body in the case of the two first than of the last. Hence chills are more liable to happen when cotton or linen is so worn. It may safely be reckoned that, in the same time, damp cotton or linen abstracts not less than 30 per cent more heat from the body than does damp wool. They also act differently in regard to the solid and liquid portions of sweat. Cotton and linen retain more of the solids than flannel or wool, and, therefore, more quickly become apparently soiled than wool, whereas wool permits the "solids" to pass through, to soil the garment worn next above, while it itself remains apparently longer clean.

COLOUR AND ITS RELATION TO HEAT.

The colour of a garment has an important bearing on the amounts of radiant heat absorbed and reflected. White and the lighter coloured fabrics absorb less radiant heat than dark coloured or black, and reflect more; and the differences in amounts are graded by the tones of colour between white and black.

The dust-carrying capacity of clothing, and, therefore, facility for convection of infective material, depends in a large degree on the roughness or smoothness, and the openness or closeness, of texture of the fabric. The rougher and more porous the garment is the greater the capacity for carriage of dust or contagia; and the converse is equally true. Therefore, the dresses of nurses, while tending the sick, ought to consist of close-textured material, capable of being frequently washed and ironed, so that a glazed smooth surface may be formed, and thus a less suitable resting place for microbes be offered.

The colour of a garment has no relation to the odour-absorbing capacity of the fabric, as has been asserted. This view has probably arisen from the fact that the average colour of the dress in cities is of a dark shade, and is usually associated with woollen fabrics, which, because of their porosity, absorb more odour than close-textured stuffs.

What should be worn to preserve health? This is a most important consideration, as no one dress standard is equally suitable for all points of the globe. The discussion of the question will be simplified if we deal with it in reference to typical climatic conditions. There are four such typical kinds of climate, the intervening grades being but modifications of one or other type, viz. (1) the cold or arctic climate; (2) the hot, dry climate; (3) the hot, moist climate; and (4) the so-called temperate climate. These are but arbitrary divisions, and must not be confounded with the meteorological definitions of climate. In the first-named, the greatest struggle to maintain the body heat is experienced. This is not difficult to understand when it is remembered that such temperatures as 69° Fahr. and 81° Fahr. below freezing point have been recorded in places where, even in July, the thermometer hardly rises above freezing point. Experience has shown that the cold can only be overcome by wearing woollen garments next the body, and over these the skins of animals with the furry side inwards. No other forms of clothing will adequately conserve the body heat. In the second, the nature of the clothing is entirely different. The air being dry and greedy of watery vapour, sensible perspiration is usually absent. Comfort, therefore, will more likely ensue from the wearing of white, grey, or other light-coloured garments composed of

cotton, linen, or wool, made loose fitting; light coloured the better to reflect the sun's radiant heat, and lined, preferably with a dark-coloured lining, to prevent the scorching effect of the solar heat rays, and loose fitting, to enable free interchange of air. Sunstroke is avoided by the pith hat, puggaree, or sombrero, or Panama straw hat. Where the climate is hot but moist—the third type—where the air is commonly saturated with watery vapour, and where, consequently, sensible perspiration is almost never absent from the body, except when in absolute repose, woollen garments are absolutely indispensable both for night and day wear. Loose fitting they may be, but of wool they must be. In the fourth type—the so-called temperate climate—more difficulty is experienced in regulating the proper clothing than in any of the previous, solely due to the unexpected fluctuations of temperature. Thus we may have summer temperatures in winter, and winter temperatures in summer. In these islands there is also the additional fact that the atmosphere is largely charged with watery vapour, and particularly on the west coast. These disadvantages, however, are compensated for by our proximity to the Gulf Stream, which alone prevents our winters from being of arctic severity. There is no season of our average year in which woollen underclothing can without risk be dispensed with. It may be thicker or thinner in make, close or open in texture, as the weather permits, but it must be constantly worn, consistent with the safety of the person. Indeed, nothing too strong can be said in urging this upon our populations, as attention to it would considerably minimise illness and temper its severity.

CHAPTER XXXIX.

CLOTHING IN TEMPERATE CLIMATES—OF CHILDREN—AND OF THE SEXES CONSIDERED GENERALLY.

As was stated in the previous chapter, woollen undergarments are an absolute necessity in a climate like ours, and for summer as for winter, for the reasons already given. The objections urged against their use are usually (1) personal discomfort, and (2) effeminacy. It is true that certain hyper-sensitive skins cannot comfortably bear the friction of ordinary wool, but for these the finer vicuna wool acts as an excellent and comfortable substitute. The second reason is urged only by those who are ignorant of physiological laws, and it is one which ought to be combated whenever it is put forward. For those persons who are not robust, those who are predisposed to rheumatism or chills, those who are convalescent from illness, and for the infirm, they are indispensable; and for those who enjoy ordinary health they act as preventives of illness.

CLOTHING OF CHILDREN.

Very erroneous opinions are entertained by some parents respecting the clothing of children. These have their origin in the desire to rear "hardy" offspring. While the desire is praiseworthy, the modes adopted to

effect it are entirely wrong. It is pitiful to see children of well-to-do families imperfectly clothed as to their limbs and, in addition also, as to the upper part of their bodies. Children are peculiarly sensitive to temperature changes, and bear the loss of body heat very badly, with the consequence, when clothed as indicated, that they are more liable to contract illnesses. The equilibrium between heat production and heat dissipation is easily disturbed in their case. The safest underwear for children is that which is composed entirely of wool, and it ought to cover the trunk and limbs of the body almost entirely. This applies equally to children of both sexes, and to all seasons of the year. An objectionable habit commonly prevails of differentiating between the underwear of a female and that of a male child. This is unwarranted by nature, and is unphysiological. It is apt, too, to be perpetuated and accentuated as the girl grows into the woman. This must be protested against; for the difference in the bodily functions of the sexes demands greater protection for the trunk of the female body than of the male. Undervests which are usually sleeveless, and which leave the upper part of the chest entirely unprotected, are but too common, but they are none the less harmful. Much has been made of late years of the substitution of "flannelette" for wool. Probably cheapness has had to do with its popularity. But when it is remembered that it is made solely of cotton, loosely wound and woven, it is not safe, where perspiration is a bodily habit, for reasons already given; moreover, it is very inflammable.

Let us now consider in what respects our modern modes of dressing are compatible or incompatible with health. Beginning with the head-gear, we find certain

errors ready to hand. Fashion is largely to blame for these. The airy creations of the milliner may be "things of beauty," but in many cases they do not contribute to "joy for ever." Nature has compensated the gentle sex for the absence of adequate artificial head covering by providing an ample natural covering. This, probably, in a large measure, results from the airiness of the artificial covering permitting the hair to grow more luxuriantly. When, however, a woman comes to the shady side of forty years, penalties are often the result of a continuance of this fashion in the form of headaches, neuralgias, etc., which might be prevented by a judicious addition of less permeable material to the head-gear. Male head-gear also calls for criticism. Hard hats, undoubtedly, do not contribute to the comfort of the wearer for two reasons, viz. want of adequate ventilation, and compression of the arterial blood vessels of the scalp at the fitting parts. There is little doubt that baldness is a common result from constant use of such hats, and from these causes much of the increasing baldness arises. That such hats are not worn from choice is shown by the alacrity with which, upon opportunity, they are cast aside in favour of head-gear of a softer and more pliant type.

BODY CLOTHING.

Compatible with health and the relative functions of the sexes, it cannot be gainsaid that the body clothing of the male is more suitable than that of the female. In the former the trunk and limbs of the body are more uniformly covered, and there is less constriction of the trunk than in the latter. In the female the arms and upper part of the chest are imperfectly protected, and

the lower part of the trunk is over-covered. Besides, the mode of suspending the lower garments is decidedly objectionable, as an unequal strain is put on the muscles of the back and abdomen. Considerable advantage would result if part of this weight could be suspended from the shoulder, after the manner of male attire, or from bodices. The "rational dress" movement is a distinct advance upon the older mode of clothing. Much has been written against the corset, and probably its general use has been too much condemned, but it will be a necessity so long as the under-garments are suspended from the trunk. At the same time, not a word too much has been said against "tight-lacing," which is provocative of much internal mischief, and tends to cripple healthy motherhood. By the substitution of lighter, but equally warm skirts, and by the use of the divided skirt, the corset need no longer remain of the unyielding character it possesses.

FOOT-GEAR.

Here, also, some measure of reform is needed. Hitherto the anatomy of the foot would appear to have been totally neglected. Indeed, we take much better care of the feet of our horses than of our own. The pointed boot —that which tapers to a rounded point, like the very square-toed boot—is based upon a total misconception of the shape of the foot. A happy medium between the two is what is needed—a boot which, in other respects also, fits the foot as a glove does the hand, and which enables the foot to perform its various movements comfortably. High-heeled boots are also to be condemned. Nature intended that man should walk on the sole of the foot, not upon the heel or the toes, and that the foot should bear equally the body weight. The curves of the

spinal column were intended for this purpose, but the high-heeled boot, in throwing the weight of the body on the front of the foot, distorts the proportion of these curves. To satisfy hygienic needs, the boot ought to be fitted when the foot is placed on the ground supporting the body weight, and shaped in front as the foot is shaped. It should possess a broad heel situated under the heel of the foot, and of sufficient height to enable the foot to bear equally the weight of the body, and it should be capable of ventilation. This last point is difficult to attain, for where air can get out damp can come in, and modern polishes do but help to clog the pores of the leather; hence ventilation only occurs at the lacing, or at the gussets in elastic-sided boots. Much has been urged against the use of guttapercha for boot soles. In our view much of the criticism is only theoretical. Experimentally we have used boots the soles of which are made of alternate layers of canvas and guttapercha, and have found them equally as comfortable as leather-soled boots. They exclude damp better than leather, but they are not quite so yielding as leather. Were it not, indeed, for this objection, the "clogged" boot—the boot with wooden sole—is about the healthiest form. Special attention ought to be given to the foot-gear of children during the period of growth, as boots then very quickly become too small, from which deformed feet, or, at least, bunions, callosities, or corns may result.

DRESS FOR NURSES ON DUTY.

The dress of the nurse ought to combine cheerfulness of colour-tone, personal comfort to the wearer, ease of washing, and be made of a material which has the

minimum liability to carry septic or infective matter. Cotton fabrics of fast colour, therefore, combine these conditions better than any other material, for they can be boiled and ironed, or pressed frequently, without harm to the fabric, which cannot be said of woollen gowns. Made plain, and presenting a glazed surface from the pressing, they afford a less suitable resting ground for microbes than do woollen ones. In nursing infective or septic cases, more than ordinary precautions must be taken. A linen, or thin *rubber* overall is very useful, as it can easily be put aside or put on when leaving or entering the sick-room. A nurse should never be allowed to pass from an infective atmosphere to the outside before her nursing uniform has been changed, a bath has been taken, and special precautions made in respect of her hair. Hitherto, too little attention has been given to the hair as a medium of carrying infection, and while we scrub and polish, and asepticise our hands and arms, we are too apt to forget the toilette of the hair. The hair of the head and face of the physician or surgeon, and the hair of the head of the nurse, have been rightly blamed as the occasional vehicles of contagion of puerperal fever; therefore the hair ought to receive special attention. By wearing a loosely fitting, ventilated cap of thin rubber, much after trouble might be prevented. If, in short, the "preventability" of preventable diseases is to become an accomplished fact, it is only in some such manner as the foregoing that this end will be secured.

CHAPTER XL.

PREVENTABLE DISEASES—EPIDEMIC—ENDEMIC—PANDEMIC—THEIR PRIME CAUSES.

THE term "preventable" applied to diseases is one of comparatively modern application, just as the word "preventive" has been prefixed to medicine as a synonym of sanitary science. Preventive medicine deals with the prevention of disease *ab initio*, and of the spread of certain diseases, by removing the conditions by which they may be generated, or propagated. In its practical application, it implies some measure of State control. The class of infective diseases, and, indeed, other general preventable diseases, have compelled the attention of the Legislature, which has passed a series of Acts of Parliament, from which has arisen a huge network of sanitary machinery. It may be said that, to some extent, all diseases may be prevented or avoided by proper care being exercised on the part of individuals. But this implies a knowledge which the average person does not ordinarily possess. However, errors of eating and drinking, objectionable physical habits, abuse of the body in any form, undue or careless exposure to chills, etc., are a few instances of causes of illness which are well within the power of individuals to avert. On the other hand, there are certain diseases, the causes of which are beyond ordinary control, but which may be controlled or regulated by

proper regulations laid down by a controlling authority, and carried out faithfully by individuals. The object of such is the protection of the people *en masse*, and to frustrate the negligence of the careless and ignorant. To this category, therefore, belong the preventable diseases, those due to combined overcrowding and filth, as typhus fever, or to overcrowding alone, as phthisis and other lung affections, or to insanitary conditions of the sewage-disposal system, as diphtheria and enteric fever, or to polluted water, or milk; and like diseases from like causes. To this class also belong those diseases which are communicable from animal to animal, and from animals to man. The principal characteristic of the specific preventable diseases is their communicability from man to man, and from animals to man, either by infection or contagion. This has been realised for ages, and long before their causes were known. Then, the causal factors were mysterious entities which were looked upon as inflictions of punishment by God for the sins of the people, the appropriate remedies for which were prayers and fastings. In the word influenza, we still retain evidence of the mystery of the cause of the disease—the *influence* which struck down the people. The last twenty-five years have done more to clear up the mystery regarding prime causes than the previous two centuries, and to-day we are able to lay our finger on the causes of several of the scourges of humanity.

Communicable diseases present themselves in one of three forms, viz. the *epidemic*, the *endemic*, and the *pandemic*. The word epidemic (Gr., *epi*, upon; *demos*, the people) literally means something that comes upon the people. An epidemic disease is, therefore, one which, independent originally of local causes, attacks a number of

persons in a population within a short time. The cause belongs more to the people than to the place. The word endemic (Gr., *en*, among; *demos*, the people) means something that prevails among the people—usually, however, as isolated cases. It is dependent upon local causes, and belongs more to the place than the people. The word pandemic (Gr., *pan*, all; *demos*, the people) means something that attacks all the people of a country, or the peoples of all countries, about one time; and the infective material is conveyed very largely by atmospheric agency, and also follows trade routes. Influenza is a typical pandemic disease, and its recent widespread visitation of the nations of the earth demonstrates its pandemicity. The following are the principal preventable diseases, viz. small-pox, chicken-pox, scarlet fever, measles, rötheln or German measles, typhus, enteric, relapsing and yellow fevers, cholera, influenza, whooping-cough, diphtheria, erysipelas, puerperal fever, pneumonia, and mumps; and, with a limited infectivity, tuberculosis. These may be called the infective type. Glanders, anthrax (known as wool-sorters' disease and malignant pustule in man), foot and mouth disease, venereal diseases, Egyptian and other forms of ophthalmia, leprosy, and rabies may be taken as instances of the contagious type. There are other diseases which may be deemed preventable, but which are due either to mal-nutrition or local climatic conditions, such as rickets, scurvy, malaria, gout, and rheumatism.

Let us now consider the causal factors of infective and contagious diseases. From time to time these have given rise to a large amount of speculation, and various theories have been propounded to account for the phenomena which result from their malign action. The three principal theories are those with which the names of

Bastian, Béchamp, and Pasteur are associated, and in that order they demonstrate the evolutionary stages towards truth. Bastian's view was that, when fermentation occurred in any liquid contained in a vessel from which air was excluded, the fermentative action was due to the chemical condition of the substances in the vessel, and not to anything that was introduced from without. The classical experiments of Tyndall and Pasteur, however, entirely demolished this idea. They conclusively proved that if an organic liquid was rendered sterile by boiling, and the vessel sealed against the entrance of air, the liquid would keep "sweet" for an indefinite time, thereby showing that the cause of the fermentative change was not in the sterilised fluid, but in something that came from the air, viz. living micro-organisms. Béchamp thought that diseases of the fermentative type, *i.e.*, specific infective diseases, were the result of an organised and solid blastema (as he called it), microscopic in size, to which he gave the name microzyme (Gr., *mikros*, small; *zyme*, yeast); that these microzymes in the course of their development within the body generated a ferment which he called zymase, and that the two together formed protoplasm. He did not believe that infective diseases were caused by micro-parasites introduced into the body from without, but by the microzymes themselves, which, acting abnormally, produced a vitiated ferment, and became transformed into microbes. He further thought that these microbes should not be looked upon as foreign bodies, but as entities existing normally in the body having abnormal action.

The doctrine of Pasteur and Tyndall, which came to be called the microbic theory, is, that the specific causes of these diseases are living micro-organisms, which, when introduced into the body, cause a series of phenomena to

develop, the most prominent of which, due to the growth and multiplication of these organisms in the tissues or blood of the affected person, is fever. These organisms are, therefore, parasites, in respect that they live and thrive and multiply solely at the expense of their host.

Based upon these facts, Koch formulated the following test rules, whereby an infective disease should be so designated, viz. (1) a microbe must be found in the blood or tissues of the person or animal that is suffering, or has died, from the disease; (2) this microbe, taken from the body, must be artificially cultivated in a suitable culture medium out of the body, in a series of generations, with no possibility of any other microbe being introduced during the process; (3) the microbe from one of these cultures, on being inoculated into the body of a healthy animal, ought to reproduce the same phenomena of disease as those exhibited in the animal or person from whom it was taken; and (4) the microbe must be proved to have multiplied in the body of the animal inoculated.

So far as our knowledge goes at present microbes breed true; that is to say, one does not become transformed into another form which has a totally different action. Inasmuch as after sowing turnip seed we can calculate only on a crop of turnips, and not carrots, so does the microbe of tubercle, or cholera, or leprosy, cause tubercular disease, or cholera, or leprosy, and is not metamorphosed to cause pneumonia, or enteric fever, or small-pox. There are, at the same time, strong grounds for believing that different breeds or strains of microbes vary as to their virulent potentiality, and, also, reasons for concluding that some of them, at least, may assume or be endowed with specially malignant powers under certain suitable conditions.

CHAPTER XLI.

MICROBES—THEIR PLACE, POWER, AND EFFECTS —FORMS OF MICROBES—THEIR NATURAL HISTORY—MODE OF PROPAGATION—NATURE OF INFECTIVE MATERIAL—CONTAGIUM—INFECTIVE MICROBES—THEIR INTIMATE ACTION ON THE HUMAN BODY.

THE microscopic parasites which cause diseases of the infective and contagious types have been the victims of a shifting nomenclature. They have been called *microzoaria* (Gr., *mikros*, small; *zoa*, animals) by De Blainville; *microphyta* (Gr., *mikros*, small; *phyton*, a plant); *microzyma*, by Béchamp; *protista* (Gr., *protistos*, the very first), by Haeckel, from which *protophyta* and *protozoa* are derivatives; and since 1878, *microbes* (Gr., *mikros*, small; *bios*, life), by Sédillot; *bacteria* (Gr., *baktron*, a stick), by Cornil and Babés; *schizomycetes* (Gr., *schizo*, to cleave; *mykēs*, a fungus), by Wunsche; *micro-organisms*; and *germs*. The name microbe has this advantage, that it does not commit the user to any theory regarding its genesis, or to the view whether it belongs to the animal or vegetable kingdom. This name will be, therefore, adhered to by us.

Microbes are found everywhere in nature; in air, earth, water, food, and within and without our bodies. They operate in curious ways and in diverse places, conserva-

tively and destructively, and are both the friend and foe of man. They rid the earth of dead and decaying matter which they themselves have brought into this condition; they produce profound chemical changes during these operations; in their grosser forms they produce alcoholic and acetous fermentations, they make our sweet milk turn sour, our butter to become rancid, our bread to become mouldy; they produce food for the growth and sustenance of plants, and they cause various plant diseases; and they are the prime causes of all the so-called zymotic or infective and contagious diseases of man and the lower animals. Some knowledge of them is, therefore, of the greatest importance.

They are beyond the ken of ordinary vision; indeed, to study them aright, it is necessary to call to our aid the highest powers of the microscope. They require to be magnified from 800 to 1500 times before we can understand how they grow, and what they are like. A fair average size of microbe measures 1-20,000th part of an inch, and it has been calculated that 400 millions of them could be comfortably accommodated side by side on one square inch of surface. It is only by using the most delicate scientific measuring apparatus that they can be measured.

They are extremely fastidious regarding the kind of nutriment upon which they will grow and thrive. One will live healthily on one form of food which would starve another. Some demand albuminous material, others can only thrive when this substance is excluded. So, also, with other conditions. One, for instance, grows best at a low temperature, another, when the temperature is higher. Some can only grow where air is abundant (the *aerobic* kinds), others will only grow when air is excluded (the

anaerobic kinds). Their detection in the body or elsewhere is rendered easier by their susceptibility to dyeing or staining by aniline dyes; and even in this respect they differ, since one is susceptible to one colour of dye and mode of staining, and another to a different. From the foregoing facts, therefore, it will be apparent that their investigation demands laborious and painstaking research.

The forms of microbes also vary, upon which fact working classifications have been based. Such a classification is as follows, viz. (1) The dot-like form, called *micrococcus* (Gr., *mikros*, small; *kokkos*, a cell or berry). They may appear as single dots (*cocci*), as double dots (*diplococci*), as four dots, like a wool-pack tied cross-ways with string (*tetracoccus*), as beads strung on a string (*streptococci*), or arranged like a bunch of grapes (*staphylococcus*). (2) The rod-like form, called *bacillus* (Gr., *baculum*, a stick or rod). Some of them, however, show sufficient departure from the rod-like form to entitle them to separate names; thus the bacillus of glanders is called *b. mallei*, from *malleus*, a hammer, being hammer-shaped; and that of cholera, *bacillus comma*, from its likeness to that mark of punctuation. (3) The spiral, or corkscrew form, called *spirillum*. To the first form belong the microbes of fowl cholera, swine fever, measles, scarlet fever, small-pox, cow-pox, foot and mouth disease, pneumonia, erysipelas, puerperal fever and others. To the second, those of anthrax, tubercle, glanders, enteric fever, cholera, diphtheria, tetanus or lock-jaw, leprosy and others. And to the third, that of relapsing fever.

MODE OF PROPAGATION.

They propagate by throwing off seeds or spores. In the dot-like form, the original cell simply divides, called *fission*. In the other forms, spores form in the interior of the mature microbe, and, roughly speaking, are shed as peas from a pod. The spores are even less in size than the parent microbes, but are more resistant to means employed for destroying them. For example, while the microbe is usually destroyed in boiling water, the spores may survive unless the boiling process be kept up for a time. What, therefore, used to be called the microbe theory is now substantiated into a well-established fact which must be reckoned with at many points.

INFECTIVE MATERIAL.

It is by infective material that diseases are spread. It has been characterised by different names. From early ages, it was known that there existed a something by which disease was conveyed from one person or place to another. To this, various names have been given. It has been called *effluvium* (something which flowed forth), *miasma* (something which defiles), *influence* (as in influenza), *virus* (poison), *fomites* (fuel or touchwood), *infection* (Lat., *inficio*, to corrupt), and *contagium* (Lat., *con*, with; *tango*, I touch). These latter terms are used indiscriminately, and often synonymously. This is confusing and wrong. Nomenclature in this requires to be made definite. Infective material, however, is essentially particulate in character, and may be borne by the air, or carried upon clothing or other media. So long as they are in contact with moisture, microbes are held in retention and cannot be liberated into the atmosphere until

the dampness is dispelled. Aerial diffusion is, therefore, only possible in the case of dried microbes or spores. Being particulate, infective matter cannot penetrate any interposing barrier, even of paper, and much less through walls and doors.

The length of time after infective material has left the body of an infected person during which it is capable of doing mischief is largely determined by its environment. Abundance of fresh air and sunlight quickly destroys it, absence of these tends to keep it active; hence microbes are most plentiful in the dust of darkest corners. Destruction of infective material, therefore, resolves itself into annihilation of microbes and their spores.

The microbes of the different infective diseases have elect seats of operative activity within and upon the body, from which, too, the infective matter is chiefly shed. Upon this basis they may roughly be divided into three classes, viz. (1) those in which the skin is chiefly involved; (2) those in which the upper internal mucous tract (the air passages, etc.) is involved; and (3) those in which the lower mucous tract (intestines, etc.) is implicated. To the first class belong erysipelas, scarlet fever, measles, German measles, small-pox, chicken-pox; to the second, scarlet fever, measles, diphtheria, whooping-cough, mumps, ophthalmia, influenza, pneumonia, and tubercle of lung; and to the third, cholera, enteric fever, yellow fever, and puerperal fever. While the infective material in each infective disease may be found in all the discharges of the patient, it is most abundant at the elect seats of operation. It is shed from the body not only during the febrile, but also in the post-febrile, stages of the disease.

The evil effects which result from the action of microbes within the body are due to certain poisonous

substances which are produced in the course of their growth and multiplication. Microbes live upon the albuminous fluids of the body, and hence the new substances formed—being derivatives of albumen—are called *albumoses*, or because of their poisonous action, *toxins*. It is these toxins which, formed directly in the blood itself, or absorbed into the blood from the tissues, are the cause of the symptoms. For example, the bacillus of diphtheria is located solely in the throat, nasal, or air passages, and it is there that the toxins are formed; which toxins, however, on being absorbed into the blood of the patient, produce the profound physical depression, and, not infrequently, after-paralysis. The toxin of the tetanus microbe causes convulsive contractions of the muscles of the lower jaw. They are, therefore, as lethal in their action as strychnia or morphia.

CHAPTER XLII.

INFLUENCE OF CLIMATE, SEASON, LOCALITY, ETC., ON INFECTIVE AND CONTAGIOUS DISEASES—MODES OF CONVECTION OF INFECTIVE MATERIAL.

CLIMATE may be defined as a resultant of the following factors, viz. annual range and extremes of temperature, atmospheric pressure, humidity, prevalent winds, exposure, and certain other local conditions. In respect of diseases generally, it may be said that, in winter and spring, pulmonary ailments are most prevalent, and in summer and autumn those of the abdominal type. In respect, however, of influence of climate on zymotic diseases, we will follow the order of the list of these already given. Small-pox prevails most in winter and spring, least in the other seasons. The temperature has a notable effect on its spread and decline. Below 50° Fahr. the disease tends to spread, above that it tends to decline. Scarlet fever prevails most in the last six months of the year, the maximum being in the December quarter. A temperature of about 60° Fahr. favours the disease, a fall to 50° Fahr. tends at once to arrest it. Measles is a disease chiefly of November, December, January, May, and June months. The most favourable temperature for its spread is between 45° and 55° Fahr., while above 60° Fahr. or below 40° Fahr. it receives a check. In 1880 Babés

isolated a micro-organism—a micro-coccus—which he believed to be the prime cause of the disease. Typhus fever—largely due for its inception to overcrowding and filth—is most prevalent at those seasons when the poor and uncleanly herd most closely together. It is, therefore, more common in the winter months than in summer, although there is a rise in the mortality from it in July, due to the same fact. The infective matter, although very virulent within close range of the affected person, quickly succumbs before fresh air and sunlight. From the patient a characteristic odour is given off, which is apt to adhere to clothing. The micro-organism of typhus has not yet been isolated. There is no disease of the infective type which has receded before the march of sanitary measures more than typhus; whereas formerly victims could be counted by the thousand, they do not now number beyond the tens. Enteric fever is most prevalent in the autumn months. It would appear as if the climatic conditions were then most favourable for the development of the Gaffky-Eberth bacillus. It is more a disease of rural than urban communities, and epidemics in the latter are usually imported from the former. October is the month of its maximum prevalence. The bacillus of the disease is usually conveyed by infected milk or water; hence the necessity for close supervision of milk and water supplies. The infective matter is thrown off from the body of the patient chiefly in the stools; hence great care should be exercised in their disinfection. Yellow fever is confined to climates very different from that of these islands. Its range of distribution over the earth's surface is limited to the West Coast of Africa, the West Indies and Gulf of Mexico, some parts of South America, and to limited tracts of the Atlantic and Pacific sea-boards of North

America. Within these limits it is usually endemic. Strangers are more liable to be seized than natives, since the latter have become acclimatised. Immunity is only established after long residence, and even then is imperfect at best. Second attacks, however, are rare. A temperature below 20° Cent. (68° Fahr.) prevents the diffusion of the disease. It is not a contagious disease; that is to say, a person who is suffering from it, or the body of a person who has died from it, will not convey the disease to others. It is communicable, however, all the same, by infected houses, ships, and localities. It follows sea trade routes. It has only prevailed once in Great Britain. A small epidemic occurred during a spell of exceptionally warm weather in Swansea in 1865, in which twenty persons were attacked, some of them being members of the crew of a ship by which it was believed to have been imported. It has now been established, chiefly by the labours of an American Commission, that it is a mosquito-borne disease, that it is microbic, but that the microbe is so small as to be beyond the present focal powers of the microscope. The micro-organism has not yet been isolated. Relapsing fever—sometimes also called bilious typhoid—is a disease which, of late years, has not been prevalent in this country. Its last visit was about twenty-five years ago. It has a remarkable coincidence, both as to time and place, with typhus, and seems, like it, to be contingent upon privation and overcrowding. Its prime cause—the *spirillum Obermeierii*—is named after Obermeyer, who discovered it. It cannot be successfully inoculated in the lower animals, except in the anthropoid apes. It is both contagious and infectious. In some epidemics laundry-women who washed the clothing of those affected were seized. Cholera is, in this and most other countries, essentially an epidemic

disease, although in certain countries it is endemic. It produces a high mortality. This country has sustained four several sieges from it, viz. in 1831, 1848, 1853, and 1866, with a few isolated cases in 1894-5. The freedom of this country during the last twenty to thirty years must be mainly attributed to better water supplies and improved sanitation. It is essentially a water-borne disease. The intestinal discharges contain almost solely the infective matter. Stools, therefore, must be thoroughly disinfected, either by being mixed with sawdust and burned, or by chemical agents, the former method being the better. The Finkler-Prior microbe and the "*comma*" bacillus of Koch have each, in turn, been blamed as the prime cause. Careful and prolonged research by various observers in different countries has established beyond reasonable doubt that the latter is the source of the mischief. Influenza has comparatively recently ravaged the countries of the world. It would appear to be uninfluenced by meteorological conditions, and that climate has as little effect as weather or seasons. It spreads with as much facility in Iceland as at the Equator, and knows no boundary by zones. It is often coincident with a disease called "pink-eye" in horses, which veterinarians believe to be influenza of horses. It would seem as if there was, at times, a causal relationship between, or, at least, a coincidence in outbreak of, these diseases in animals and man. It is both contagious and infectious. A microbe, said to be peculiar to the disease, has been isolated, but future research is necessary to verify or disprove this claim. Whooping-cough is commonly a disease of tender years, although by no means unknown to attack those of maturer years. Its mortality is highest among children; under one year, it amounts to about 60 per cent of those

attacked. It and measles kill more children than all the other zymotic diseases put together, and, not uncommonly, one is the sequel of the other. It is both contagious and infectious. In one isolated island in the West of Scotland, for twenty years before 1892 the disease was unknown. In that year, however, it was conveyed thither, and out of a total population of 380 persons, 114 were attacked, at all ages up to twenty. An interesting fact, as bearing upon the contagious character of a common cold, has been frequently observed among the inhabitants of the remote island of St. Kilda, which is only approachable once or twice a year. Whenever a visit is paid by a ship, a large number of the islanders are seized with what they call "the strangers' cold." The micro-organism of whooping-cough has not yet been isolated. The mortality is highest in the first three and a half months of the year, and lowest in the summer months. This is doubtless due to the pulmonary complications which are more likely to arise from the inclemency of the winter months.

CHAPTER XLIII.

INFLUENCE OF CLIMATE, ETC., ON INFECTIVE AND CONTAGIOUS DISEASES (*Continued*).

DIPHTHERIA is a microbic disease which chiefly attacks the surfaces of the throat and air passages, although it may also appear on abraded surfaces on other parts of the body. Its connection with a microbe was long suspected before the specific organism was discovered and isolated. Laycock, so far back as 1858, first made the suggestion. A committee, appointed by the Royal Medical and Chirurgical Society of London to inquire into the nature and cause of membranous croup and diphtheria, reported in 1879 that while certain micro-organisms were found in the false membrane, they did not regard them as the causative agents. Oertel, in Germany, next found a microbe of the *coccus* form, which he believed to be the prime cause. Klebs, in 1873, discovered a bacillus in the throat of affected patients, but he failed to isolate it. Friedrich Löffler next investigated the cause, found the bacillus described by Klebs, and succeeded in isolating and cultivating it outside the body. He also proved the presence of the organism described by Oertel, and established that it was not the prime factor. The bacillus of this disease, therefore, came to be called the *Klebs-Löffler* bacillus. Koch did much to substantiate Löffler's conclusions. It principally attacks those of tender years, but also those

of riper years. It attacks the female more than the male sex, and the death-rate of the former is higher than that of the latter. It prevails more in rural than in urban districts, although in the latter it would appear to be increasing, whether due to increased facilities for intercommunication or from drain causes, or both, has not yet been definitely determined. It attacks the lower animals also, notably cats, and there are reasons for believing that it is associated with certain ulcerated conditions of the udder of the cow; hence it may be propagated by milk.

The toxin which the bacilli produce during their growth in the air passages is absorbed into the circulation of the patient, and gives rise to serious symptoms, such as profound physical depression, and paralysis; indeed, this latter effect is sometimes very marked, even where the throat mischief has been but slight or unobserved. Localities, and even single houses, sometimes attain unenviable notoriety as being causative of the disease.

ERYSIPELAS, the microbe of which has been isolated as a streptococcus, is a disease which differs from the type of zymotics in that one attack does not confer immunity against a second; indeed, it would appear as if a person once attacked is rather the more predisposed to subsequent attacks. The same or a kindred microbe has to do with the genesis of puerperal fever. The incidence of erysipelas is upon the skin of exposed portions of the body, and the organism gains an entrance by means of an abraded surface, sometimes very trifling in size. Popularly it is called *the rose*, from the inflamed condition of the skin. It attacks, by preference, the male sex, probably owing to the fact that males are more exposed to causes producing skin abrasions. It is most fatal in the winter months. It has practically disappeared from hospital practice before antiseptic and

aseptic precautions. The infective matter is chiefly found in the affected skin.

Puerperal Fever (Lat., *puer*, a boy; *pario*, I bear) is a communicable disease associated with lying-in women. The term embraces a variety of conditions, having one feature in common, viz. septic poisoning. It is caused by the absorption of the above microbe, or of one of an allied type. Its infective character is most marked, and the infective matter clings tenaciously to the clothing and person of attendants; hence the most scrupulous care and thoroughness must characterise the disinfection of everything and every person associated with the case. It may arise from sewer air, which carries the specific micro-organisms; hence the sanitary equipment of the lying-in room must be carefully supervised. Careful aseptic toilet of the patient, absolute cleanliness of hands and instruments, and attention to the ordinary rules of sanitation will do much to prevent its inception and check its progress.

Pneumonia, in one of its forms, must be classed among the zymotic diseases. Friedlander and Talamon, in 1882, discovered in "croupous" pneumonia a certain micro-organism, and Gamaleia has proved that this "pneumococcus," called the *streptococcus lanceolatus*, must be reckoned as the prime cause. An epidemic of this disease prevailed in Middlesborough in the first half of 1888, of which 369 persons died. Klein, who investigated the cause of this epidemic, associated it with a bacillus, called the *b. pneumoniæ*. In several particulars, epidemic pneumonia is identical with the pleuro-pneumonia of cattle.

Of other diseases of the microbic type, such as rabies, tetanus, leprosy, and malaria, much might be said. The two first are only conveyed by direct inoculation—rabies from

the bite of a rabid animal, tetanus from infected earth, or other form of "dirt." They are not communicable as scarlet fever or measles is. Leprosy—due to a specific microbe—is communicable from one person to another by contagion. It is endemic in certain countries, as Norway, China, Palestine, etc. It chiefly invades the skin, in the first instance. Attempts to cultivate the bacillus out of the body have only recently succeeded. Malaria is due to blood-parasites or hæmatozoa which are borne by mosquitoes. It prevails along river routes, on borders of lakes, and in certain districts of certain countries, which have one feature in common, viz. extensive areas of marshy land. It used to be endemic in the Fen districts of England, as it is to-day in the Campagna near Rome. Malarial fever has different types. Much investigation has been made as to the causes. The bacillus of Klebs and of Tommasi-Crudelli, the corpuscles of Laveran, and the amœbæ of Marchiafava, have all been considered blameworthy. The disease is not directly communicable from person to person. The parasite usually gains entrance into the body by inoculation, and the usual vehicle is the mosquito. The researches of recent years have thrown a flood of illumination upon the cause of malaria and the agency by which it is propagated. To Lavēran—a French army surgeon—who worked at the etiology of malaria in Algiers in 1880, must be credited the discovery of the blood-parasites. To these has been given the name of Laveran's corpuscles. The more recent discoveries of Major Ronald Ross—a British army surgeon—in India in 1895, revealed much of the relation of the parasites to the mosquito and to man. To these have, from time to time, been added important details by M'Callum of Baltimore, by other British observers, as

well as by certain Italian observers—notably Grassi and Celli. These observations prove that the hæmatozoa enter the bodies of persons who are bitten by infected mosquitoes, and that the parasites require to live in and pass through the bodies of two animals, viz. man and mosquito, before the complete sexual cycle of their development is completed. It is within the body of the mosquito that sexual maturity takes place. By the proboscis or sting of the infected mosquito, therefore, the spores or blasts of the parasites are inoculated into the body of man. Malaria, therefore, only prevails where infected insects abound; and it follows, that if a malarious patient enters a district in which malaria formerly did not prevail, but in which the parasite-bearing mosquito exists, he may be the source of its spread within that district. The forms of malarial fever which are recognised are three in number, viz. the tertian, the quartan, and the æstivo-autumnal or pernicious type. The parasite of the first has been named by Ross, *Hæmamœba vivax*; of the second, *Hæmamœba malariæ*; and of the third, *Hæmomenas præcox*. In the first type, the attacks of fever appear every second, or if the day of the previous attack is counted, on the *third* day—hence the name *tertian*; in the second, every third, or on a similar reckoning, on the *fourth* day—hence the name *quartan*; whereas in the last, the periodicity of attack is not so well marked. Prevention of malaria resolves itself into (1) Attack upon the breeding-grounds of the mosquito (*a*) by draining marshy ground, (*b*) by filling ground-depressions to prevent formation of water-puddles, and (*c*) the use of insecticides in water-areas; (2) Use of mosquito-proof dwellings; (3) Regular distribution of quinine. The prime endeavour should be the extinction of the mosquito which is especially

inimical to man, in respect that it is the parasite-bearer, viz. *Anopheles maculipennis, vel claviger, vel funestus,* or the spotted-wing mosquito.

GLANDERS is a disease of horses. It is due to the *b. mallei.* When it appears in a stud it quickly spreads, and necessitates, by law, the destruction of the affected animals, in order that the plague may be stayed. It is communicable to man by direct contagion, in whom it is ordinarily fatal, as in the case of Dr. Hoffmann, of Vienna, in 1889. Mallein, a preparation of the toxin formed by the growth of the microbe in a suitable medium, is used as an injection into horses for diagnostic purposes. If a rise of temperature follows after injection, it is inferred that the animal is affected by the disease.

ANTHRAX, or SPLENIC FEVER—so called in the lower animals, or *wool-sorters' disease* or *malignant pustule,* its synonyms in man—is usually a fatal disease of both. Thanks, however, to the researches of Pasteur, Koch, and others, a protective vaccine has been discovered which has prevented untold suffering to animals and has saved huge sums of money to agricultural economy. Its connection with man was first detected when an investigation was made into a strange disease of wool-sorters at Bradford, and in hair-sorters elsewhere—hence its name ; and, again, when certain individuals who deal with the hoofs and hides of animals were attacked by an angry-looking boil, or pustule, due to inoculation, which often proved fatal—hence the second name. Their common identity was established by the presence in each of the *bacillus anthracis* in the blood or discharges of those attacked. The spores are most resistant of means of destruction. All the parts of the body of the infected animal carry the bacillus; hence blood-smeared hides, hair, or hoofs,

when dried, convey the disease. For this reason, stinging or biting foul-feeding insects may carry the disease and infect man, as in the island of Cyprus. Owing to risks to employees in wool-sorting and hair-weaving works from infected wool or hair, special protective provisions have to be made, such as preliminary steeping in water of bales of the raw wool or hair, in order to prevent the spores of the organism passing into the air.

TUBERCULOSIS is a disease common to man and many of the lower animals, and is caused by a specific bacillus, *b. tuberculosis*. To a limited degree it may be considered contagious, and to a lesser degree infectious. In cases where contagion has been proved to be the cause, two conditions have been found to prevail, viz. unhygienic apartments and propinquity of persons, as husband and wife, sisters or brothers. It is popularly reckoned to be an hereditary disease, but it is so only in an extremely limited degree. Existence of the disease in newly-born offspring has been observed in very rare instances only, and even then, only in the offspring of the cow. Usually it is not directly transmitted from parent to offspring, but the predisposition is. The bacillus is found abundantly in the expectoration of phthisical persons, and in the milk of tuberculous cows when the udder is attacked by the disease; hence such dried sputa and milk may be sources of infection. A third possible source is the use of imperfectly-cooked flesh of tuberculous animals. Opinion is still much divided on this point. Some opine that the whole carcase of the animal affected even by limited tubercle is dangerous to health; others, that after extirpation of the affected organ it may be used as food quite safely. The recent report of the Commission on Tuberculosis supports the latter view, as did also that of the

Victorian Commission, while the Congress on Tuberculosis held in Paris sustained the former view. In consequence of this diversity of expert opinion, the action of sanitary authorities has been divided. In Berlin, where dead-meat inspection is practically perfect, a middle course is adopted. By a Ministerial decree of 1892 it was enacted that when the flesh of animals contained generalised tubercle the whole carcase was to be condemned; where, again, only one organ was affected, or two organs lying contiguous in the same cavity, the carcase was not to be deemed unfit for human food, but to be deemed flesh defective in quality. It was then thoroughly cooked under police supervision, and sold at a reduced price. This procedure, therefore, protects the consumer, while, at the same time, it restores to the municipal economy what, under the more rigorous view, would have been lost to the food-supply. This course is at once reasonable and safe from any point of view.

The propagation of tubercular disease in our infantile population must be largely attributed to tuberculosed milk. Cows confined to sheds in towns or cities are more liable to this disease than those fed in the open. Experience abundantly proves this. Hence the necessity for constant and careful supervision of cows in town cowsheds by the sanitary authorities, as is prevalent in certain cities of Denmark and other countries.

Again, from the desiccated expectoration of phthisical persons, infection is likely to arise by reason that the microbes are then capable of being air-borne, and those susceptible of being attacked. These become important considerations when it is recollected that over the world one-seventh of the total number of annual deaths is due to the action of this microbe. Of recent years attempts

have been made in various countries—limitedly, it is true—to cause disinfection of infected sputa; but many obvious difficulties emerge. In Germany, France, America, and in certain of our own cities, public attention has been called to this danger, and instructions have been printed and publicly distributed, in order to aid in minimising the danger, the main points of which are as follows: (1) That the infective material of the consumptive is located in the sputum; (2) that it is only capable of doing harm when the sputum becomes dry; (3) therefore such sputum should be received on pieces of paper, or old cotton or linen, and should be burned, or received into small spittoons and mixed with sawdust before burning; and (4) when phthisis begins, the patient is to be warned not to swallow the expectoration. A consumptive patient should sleep alone in a room occupied by himself solely, and the expectoration should be treated as described. We have no sympathy with the proposal to shut up within the wards of an isolation hospital every one who is the pitiful victim of tuberculous disease, but we advocate strongly the disinfection of the personal and bed clothing, and room of every person whose death has been registered as due to tubercular phthisis. Such measures, coupled with an increase of open spaces in our cities, closer attention to ventilation of occupied rooms, greater insistence on smoke consumption, and rigorous periodic examination of the milch cows of town sheds, would undoubtedly assist in lowering the spread of this baneful malady.

CHAPTER XLIV.

CHARACTERISTICS OF INFECTIVE MATERIALS OF ZYMOTIC DISEASES—INCUBATION—INVASION—INFECTIVITY—INFECTIOUS DISEASES IN RELATION TO SCHOOLS.

As we have already shown, the infective material of zymotic diseases consists of the microbe or its spores, or both. Each infectious disease has what is termed its striking distance, *i.e.* the area from the infected person within which the infective material will operate prejudicially on a predisposed person. But in this respect these diseases vary. For example, one has a short striking distance, another a long, and a third an intermediate. Typhus fever is illustrative of the first class. The zone of infection is confined to the immediate person of the sufferer. Small-pox is an example of the second class. It seems well established that a small-pox hospital situated at too close proximity to populated houses may be a menace to the occupants of the latter. If propagation by direct means be eliminated, it would appear as if a spread of infection in the neighbourhood can only be accounted for by air-borne infection. A critical study of the facts of several epidemics during the last quarter of a century, in which aerial convection from a small-pox hospital was believed to play an important part in the spread of disease within a mile of the hospital, has led us

to the conclusion, however, that the doctrine and existence of air-borne infection has not reasonably been proved.[1]

The factor which more than all others determines this area of infectivity is the mode or channel by which the infective substance leaves the body. In typhus it is eliminated by the mucous discharges and by the skin, and in a form readily destroyed by the atmosphere. In erysipelas, scarlet fever, measles, and some others, it is thrown off in the exfoliated scurf-skin during convalescence, but in the febrile stage by the mucous discharges from mouth and nasal passages. In diphtheria it does not spread far from the body of the patient, being discharged in the moist mucous throat discharges, and is consequently held in retention. This is still more marked in enteric fever and cholera; hence the non-contagious character of these diseases is well established both in theory and in experience: when, however, these discharges become dry, they are in a position to be dangerous. Indeed, it may be concluded as a general principle that where the infective material is eliminated in a dry medium, its infectivity is more pronounced, because being more easily air borne than where it is thrown off in a moist or distinctly wet medium; and, in like manner, contagiousness is increased or decreased.

All infective diseases pass through three stages, which have been called respectively *incubation, invasion, infectivity*. These are, however, but academic, sometimes too arbitrarily applied, terms, and by no means indicate sequential conditions, since in certain diseases infectivity is coincident with incubation and invasion. The duration of these periods differs in different diseases. Cholera probably has the shortest incubation period, and rabies

[1] *Trans. San. Instit.* vol. xxv. part. ii., 1904, pp. 218-269.

one of the longest. Infectivity may be said to be existent in any given case from the time the microbe multiplies in the body until it has been expelled.

INCUBATION may be defined as that period which comes between the growth of the specific microbe in the body and the production of fever, which is the result of its growth and multiplication within the body. It may be divided into two stages: first, the latent stage, during which the presence of the microbe is not marked; and second, the invasive stage, during which the harmful effects of the micro-organism become apparent. The former has to do with the growth of the microbe itself, the latter with the effects of its growth upon the health of the patient. These, however, are only useful academic terms. Whatever view we take of incubation—in other words, of the "hatching" or "brewing" stage, as it has been called—experience shows that its duration varies in different diseases. Some have short, some long, and others intermediate incubation periods.

TABLE IX.

SHORT INCUBATION PERIODS (one to six days).

Anthrax (in man)	1 to 1½ days
Cholera	1 to 3 „
Diphtheria	2 to 5 „
Erysipelas	1 to 4 „
Glanders (in man)	1 to 4 „
Influenza	1 to 6 „
Foot and mouth disease	3 to 5 „
Puerperal fever	3 to 5 „
Scarlet fever	2 to 4 „
Relapsing fever	about 5 „
Plague	3 to 6 „

Table X.

LONG INCUBATION PERIODS (seven to twenty-one days).

Whooping-cough	7 to 14 days
Typhus fever	7 to 14 „
Small-pox	10 to 15 „
Chicken-pox	10 to 15 „
Rabies (in animals)	6 to 24 „
Enteric fever	12 to 20 „
Measles	8 to 12 „
German measles	10 to 14 „
Mumps	14 to 21 „
Yellow fever	2 to 10 „

VARIABLE INCUBATION PERIODS.

Malaria	6 to 20 days, or longer.
Rabies (man)	3 to 70 „ „
Tuberculosis	very variable, usually long.
Tetanus	„ „ within 10 days.

INVASION is the period between the intervention of the febrile symptoms and the appearance of the rash—where a skin eruption is a usual phenomenon. In scarlet fever it is from one to two days; in small-pox and typhus from two to three days; and in measles from three to five days.

INFECTIVITY is that period during which the infected person discharges from his body infective material which is capable, under suitable conditions, of causing the same disease in others. Its duration is, to some extent, limited by the intensity of the attack, and the time which elapses before the complete restoration to health of the person attacked. In olden times it was held to last for forty

days. From this our word quarantine is derived (Ital., *quarantana*, a space of forty days). This was a workable and fairly safe general conclusion, as, with but few exceptions, forty days would cover the infective period of the known infectious diseases. But the period of infectivity of any given case should not be regulated so much by a fixed time-limit, as by the time when the body has got rid of the débris which usually carries the infective material. This is especially true of the eruptive infectious diseases, and of diphtheria.

Table XI.

THE INFECTIVE PERIOD MAY BE TAKEN TO LAST IN

Cholera—during the whole period of discharges and for a week thereafter.

Small-pox—during the whole illness till after the last particle of the last crust has fallen from the body, and for ten days thereafter.

Chicken-pox—the same.

Scarlet fever—during the whole illness until last particle of exfoliated skin has been shed—six to eight weeks.

Measles—during period of incubation, through febrile and eruptive stages, till all skin has fallen—twenty-one to twenty-eight days.

German measles—the same.

Whooping-cough—during the whole period of attack, even before "whooping" is noted—six to eight weeks.

Mumps—during whole illness, till ten days after the glands have fallen—not less than twenty-eight days.

Enteric fever—during whole illness, until restoration to health.

Diphtheria—during whole illness, till ten days after the

bacillus has disappeared from throat or nasal discharges—four to six weeks.

Erysipelas—from beginning of "rose" appearance of skin till ten days after peeling of skin has ceased—not less than four weeks.

Before a patient can be safely restored to his friends, his person and clothing must have undergone adequate disinfection, and before the room can be considered habitable, it, and its contents, must also be suitably disinfected.

These questions become of considerable importance in relation to school attendance. How soon, after exposure to an infectious disease, may a child who has not before had the disease be permitted to return to school? It is to be deplored that definite opinions do not obtain generally on this point, and that the legislature has done nothing to produce uniformity. In England the Medical Officers of Schools Association has helped on a forward movement in this direction by the code which it published some years ago. If carried out, it would at least secure uniformity of action, and even in this respect its object would be praiseworthy. We heartily concur in its provisions, the substance of which answers the above query, and which are as follow:—

After thorough disinfection of the person and clothing of a child, he or she may be permitted to return to school—In diphtheria, after 12 days; measles, 16; German measles, 16; small-pox, 18; chicken-pox, 18; scarlet fever, 14; whooping-cough, 21; and mumps, 24 days, after exposure to infection.

CHAPTER XLV.

INFECTIOUS DISEASES—MODES OF SPREAD—MODES OF PREVENTION OF SPREAD—PROPHYLAXIS — NOTIFICATION — ISOLATION — QUARANTINE—DISINFECTION.

STARTING from the universally acknowledged fact that infective diseases are transmissible from person to person, the liability to attack is determined, first, by the person coming within the area of infection, either from a patient or material which has been in contact with a patient; and second, by his predisposition, susceptibility, or vulnerability. Those infective materials which succumb quickly to fresh air and sunlight have a limited infectivity; while, on the other hand, those which are most resistant are capable of existing in suitable media outside of the body, as in soil, food, water, etc., and have, therefore, a larger field of infectivity.

The modes by which infection may be transported are as follow: (1) by direct contact with the infective person —hence called contagion; (2) by contact with anything which has been in contact with the infective person, or which proceeds from the apartment in which he is treated; (3) by intercommunication between infected animals and man; (4) transportation by insects, as mosquitoes, gnats, house-flies, etc.; (5) in water or food; and (6) by the air.

Visitation to the houses of the infected sick, or the

wilful exposure of children to others who are suffering from a mild type of disease (in the erroneous assumption that all children must sooner or later contract the disease, and the sooner it is over, and of a mild type, the better), is chiefly to blame for the spread of infective diseases. Advancing education, however, is altering both practices. There is no guarantee that exposure to a mild type of disease will be followed by an equally mild seizure in the exposed child, for it is a common experience that children, even of the same family, do not contract attacks of equal severity; and this is equally true of children of different parents. Under the second head, the clothing, school-slates, books, or toys of the infective person may act as vehicles of infection. While the clothing may be disinfected, it is always safer to consign to the flames such toys and books as are admitted into the sick-room. For the above reason, Public Health Acts make it penal to expose in a public place any child who is suffering from infective disease, or for any person so to expose himself, or to sell or pawn any article of infective clothing. The room occupied by the infective sick is deemed infective until disinfection has been accomplished; and what applies to a room applies to vehicles used for the transportation of such persons, and to the contents of the room or vehicle. Under the third head are included such diseases, already spoken of, which are communicable from animal to man. The agency of insects in the transportation of this class of diseases is now well established, particularly insects which seek their food in excrementitious matter, or which suck the blood of the person. Mosquitoes are the hosts of the blood-parasites which cause malaria, filaria, and yellow fever in man. The domestic house-fly did much to spread enteric fever among the troops during the South African

War, as it is believed also to do among the residents of privy-midden towns. Other insects have been proved to be the vehicles of trypanosoma—the parasite of sleeping-sickness, of anthrax, and of other diseases. Under the fifth head are included such infective diseases as are generated from the partaking of infected water or food. Cholera and enteric fever are typical of this class. It ought to be well known that milk, being an organic fluid, is one of the best natural absorbents of infective or septic matter, and, moreover, offers an excellent nutrient medium to many microbes. Unused milk from a sick-room, therefore, ought to be treated as slops, and should not be partaken by healthy persons. In impending or prevailing epidemics of cholera or enteric fever, a simple and effective plan to render milk or water harmless is to boil it before use, and to re-aerate the latter as previously described. Considering also the possibility of the transmission of scarlet fever and diphtheria by milk, this precaution becomes of greater importance. Indeed, it is a question whether the boiling of milk should not be done as a routine practice. The chief objection to boiled milk is its taste; this, however, would be minimised by the use of milk-sterilisers, in which the milk is rendered sterile at a temperature short of boiling-point. Sterilisation of milk is now carried out on the large scale in Copenhagen, Berlin, and other places on the Continent, before it is sold. The operation of temporary sterilisation, called "Pasteurisation," is easily carried out by placing the milk in a large bottle, placing the bottle in another vessel containing water, and heating until the temperature of the milk reaches 170° Fahr., at which temperature it ought to be maintained for, at least, fifteen minutes; then stoppering the milk bottle, allow its contents to gradually

cool, when it becomes absolutely safe for use. For children, and, indeed, for all persons who use milk largely, this practice has much to commend it. Milk thus pasteurised will keep sweet for thirty-six to forty-eight hours. To sterilise milk thoroughly, however,—that is, to destroy microbes and spores,—it is necessary to subject it to a temperature of 216° Fahr., under pressure, for about an hour. Thereafter, the milk so treated, and kept from contact with the air, will keep sweet for weeks. The last mode of conveying infection is by atmospheric currents. A necessary condition to infective material being air-borne is that it must exist in the dried particulate condition. As we have pointed out, when it is enveloped in a moist or wet medium it cannot easily become air-borne. The convection of infective material by the air is clearly demonstrated in different zymotic diseases.

The proximate modes by which infective material enters the body of a susceptible person are (1) *inoculation;* (2) *inhalation;* (3) *absorption;* and (4) *ingestion.*

The means by which the spread of infective diseases is prevented are the following, viz. (1) *prophylaxis* (Gr., *prophylasso,* to prevent); (2) *notification;* (3) *isolation* and *quarantine;* and (4) *disinfection.*

Prophylaxis, or the prevention of disease, is operative generally during health, but especially during the interval between a threatened epidemic and its actual outbreak. Prophylactic measures include (1) general instructions to the people as to means whereby the attack may be avoided; (2) special attention to the working efficiency of sanitary measures; and (3), if deemed advisable, the establishment of a cordon between infected and non-infected countries and districts. The other modes come into operation immediately the first case of the outbreak

appears, and they aid in checking or limiting further extension of the disease.

Notification of infectious diseases supplies a powerful instrument to sanitary authorities, first, in enabling them to "locate" the area of the disease, and to ascertain the names and number of persons affected; and, second, to concert suitable measures of isolation and disinfection to prevent its extension. In some populous places the duty is laid solely upon the parent or guardian, or solely upon the medical attendant, while in the Notification Act of 1889 the duty is laid equally upon both—failure to notify, after knowledge of the fact, carrying with it a penalty.

Isolation and quarantine are means of prevention, which, although they do not mean the same thing, subserve the same purpose. The former means the separation of the infective sick from the healthy, in such circumstances as will prevent, as far as can be, the spread of the disease, and for such periods of time as infectivity prevails; quarantine, the separation from the healthy of persons or things which, although themselves not yet actively infected, may be the passive carriers of infection from an infected area, for such space of time as will demonstrate whether or not the former will become actively infected, and as will enable disinfection to be employed in respect of the latter. The practice of quarantine nowadays does not cover the period of time involved in the literal meaning of the word, and is usually, although not solely, carried out in respect of sea-going traffic. Ships which come from an infected port are required to lie out at sea, or in the port roadway, within a prescribed anchorage, until crew and passengers have been examined by the port sanitary authority, and until—if sickness has occurred during the voyage—the ship and cargo have been dis-

infected. If, on the other hand, a clean bill of health be presented, and the number of days which have elapsed between the date of sailing from the infected port and the date of arrival at the quarantine station be in excess of the incubation period of the disease, the introduction of which is feared, all that remains to be done is disinfection of ship and cargo. If the number of days be less, and if a sick bill be presented, then the crew and passengers are not allowed on shore till the period of incubation is past, or if permitted, they are bound to report themselves to the sanitary authorities of the town, city, or district which is to be their temporary or permanent destination. It has been found desirable in populous places to provide retaining or "reception" houses, which are practically quarantine stations, wherein to place persons occupying small houses in which infective disease has broken out, and where they may be retained at municipal expense, until the disinfection of the infected premises has been overtaken, and until the incubation period of the disease is over. This, in our view, is an important item of sanitary equipment, for it deals with that population amongst which insanitary conditions most likely prevail, and which, therefore, demands most supervision.

Isolation is either effected at home or in special hospitals for the reception of the infective sick. The possibility of adequate isolation in the home depends (1) upon adequacy of room space; (2) efficient separation of sick-room from the rest of the occupied rooms; (3) proper nursing by one whose sole duty is in the sick-room; and (4) suitable means of disinfection of clothing during the currency of the illness. Under ordinary circumstances, it is impossible to have adequate isolation in houses of

three apartments, or fewer. It is, in these circumstances, a safer practice to send the patient to an isolation hospital. Even in larger houses the problem is difficult.

Disinfection, as the word implies, means the operations which are carried out against the infection (so as to destroy it), whether it be of the body of the infected person, his clothing, bed-clothing, or of the room he has occupied, and its contents. Efficient disinfection includes them all. From the imperfect carrying out of such measures in regard to any one of these, disease may be disseminated. Disinfecting measures more usually err on the side of inefficiency than of over-carefulness.

CHAPTER XLVI.

DISINFECTION AND DISINFECTANTS.

DISINFECTION includes those processes the object of which is, in one way or another, to destroy infective matter, the nature of the process being largely regulated by the material which encloses or bears the infective matter. A disinfectant is an agent which destroys the power of infective matter to do further mischief. This term, unfortunately, has been used with but little discrimination to cover a number of agents of the most valuable and, at the same time, of the most valueless character. This has doubtless arisen from the nebulous conceptions which existed regarding the entity of infective matter. Often associated with disagreeable odours, it was supposed to be rendered inert by the use of deodorants. Since, however, the microbic constitution of infective matter became established, all such views have had to undergo revision, and the disinfecting power of any substance to be determined by its capability of destroying micro-organisms and their spores.

Disinfectants ought to be divided into three classes, viz. *deodorants, antiseptics* and *germicides.* A deodorant (Lat., *de,* from ; *odor,* an odour) is something which destroys an odour, and is generally used to express that which deprives a bad odour of its disagreeableness. To this class belong camphor, musk, lavender, and like volatile odorous

substances, tobacco, vinegar, eau de cologne, toilet vinegar, turpentine, terebene, permanganate of potash, or soda, as in Condy's Fluid, and others. In it may also be placed certain chemical substances which unite with their deodorant properties that of acting germicidally or antiseptically, according to their strength. All deodorants act in one of three ways, viz. (1) by submerging a bad odour by their superabundance, or by their more penetrating odour; (2) by oxidising odours, and converting them into new chemical substances; or (3) by changing a chemical substance having a bad odour into another substance which is odourless. Tobacco is a good illustration of the first; camphor, turpentine, and the essential oils, of the second; and copper and iron sulphates (blue and green vitriol), of the third. The two former classes operate best in gaseous media, the last in liquids.

Antiseptics (Gr., *anti*, against; *sepo*, to make putrid) are substances which, added to a putrescible substance, prevent the onset of putrefaction by lowering the virulency of the microbes contained in it. The length of time during which the condition of asepsis will continue depends upon the original strength of the antiseptic used. Usually the strength used is insufficient to do more than merely weaken the vitality of the organisms themselves, while it does not minimise the potency of their spores. If the strength, however, be sufficient, the substance acts as a germicide, whereas less strong as an antiseptic, and still less strong as a deodorant. To this class belong carbolic acid and its allies, since it is not sufficiently soluble in water to act as a germicide.

Germicides, or germ-killers, destroy the microbes of disease, some of them also destroying the spores. The potency of the germicidal agent depends entirely upon the

strength in which it is used, and upon its applicability for this purpose, in the medium in which the microbes are located. To this class belong, of chemical substances, perchloride of mercury (corrosive sublimate), biniodide of mercury, chlorine gas, chloride of lime (so called), bromine vapour, cresol, lysol, izal, and possibly chloride of zinc (as in Burnett's Fluid). In addition, and when used in sufficient volume for aerial disinfection, may be named sulphurous acid gas, iodine vapour, and in the disinfection of liquid or semi-solid substances, the sulphates of iron, copper, and zinc, cupralum, carbolic acid, sanitas, thymol, menthol, creosote, and the mineral acids, in sufficient strength.

Boric acid, boroglyceride, glacialine, sulphocarbolates of zinc and other metals, the sulphites and hyposulphites, are, at best, mild antiseptics.

Since our objective point in disinfection is the annihilation of microbes and their spores, it is essential that we should be acquainted with the substances which will, and those which will not, so act, since the market has been flooded with so-called disinfectants which often by no means effect what is claimed for them. Indeed, seeing that effective disinfectants are of such public importance, they should be brought under the schedule of the Foods and Drugs Adulteration Acts, so that the public may be protected.

The following substances act efficiently as germicides when used of the named strengths:—

Table XII.

Table of Efficient Strengths of Disinfectants as Germicides.

Disinfecting Substance.	Strength and Medium in which to be used.
Mercuric chloride (corrosive sublimate)	1 in 1000 of water (70 grains per gallon). Solution to be aided by addition of common salt, and coloured with laundry blue. This may be used for disinfection of linen and liquid excreta. When used for disinfecting stools, to be mixed mechanically therewith, since if albuminous matter be present and the disinfectant be not mixed, the albuminate of mercury is apt to be formed on the outside, the sublimate solution does not penetrate the mass, and thus the stool is not efficiently disinfected. In 1 in 4000 for washing woodwork and floors.
Mercuric iodide	1 in 1000 of water for infected linen and stools. 1 in 2000 for hands and liquid excretions. 1 in 4000 for woodwork and floors. Solutions ought to be rendered odorous by addition of small quantity of thymol, menthol, eucalyptol, or wood-naphtha.
Chloride of lime or bleaching powder	4 parts per 100 of water (6 oz. to 1 gallon of water) for solid and liquid excreta. When used for the former, to be permitted to soak for about one hour or to be mixed mechanically before vessel is emptied. 1 part per 100 of water is excellent for washing of hands after visitation to sick-room and handling of patient.
Carbolic acid	5 per cent solution in water (1 in 20). Official strength used in Berlin, 1 in 18. To destroy bacteria a 10 per cent solution is needed. Water, however, will not dissolve so much.

Disinfecting Substance.	Strength and Medium in which to be used.
Copper sulphate	5 per cent solution in water. To be used for disinfecting stools. Contact not less than one hour.
Zinc chloride (Burnett's Fluid)	1 in 10 of water (for stools), and as above.
Sulphurous acid gas (compressed in cylinders at three atmospheres)	Exposure for twelve hours to 4 volumes per cent in a moist medium. $1\frac{1}{2}$ lbs. of sulphur per 1000 cubic feet of air space $=1{\cdot}75$ per cent.
Chlorine gas	·5 to 1 volume per 100 volumes of air.
Hydrochloric acid vapour	·05 to ·1 volume per 100 volumes of air.
Bromine	1 in 2000 of water for solid excreta. Objectionable to user by reason of irritancy of vapour given off.

The utmost care must be exercised in the use of most of the above disinfectants, as they are all poisonous in the strengths indicated.

CHAPTER XLVII.

DISINFECTION AND DISINFECTANTS (*Continued*)—HEAT AS A DISINFECTING AGENT.

In addition to chemical germicides, which act either by oxidation, or deoxidation, we have in heat a very valuable disinfector and bactericide, when applied either as dry air, moist air, or water. Heat is best adapted for the disinfection of personal clothing, bed clothing, and room furnishings, such as carpets, rugs, cushions, etc., which have inadvertently been left in the infected room during the currency of the illness. For clothing which will not be injured, boiling in water for a space of twenty minutes at least is one of the best modes of disinfection. This is suitable for cotton and linen fabrics. For woollen fabrics, feathers, hair mattresses, etc., exposure to moist heated air, or steam, is the most suitable. This is usually done in a specially constructed apparatus, which is commonly provided by the local sanitary authority. Dry heated air alone, or even under pressure, has been found by different experimenters in different countries to be ineffectual for this purpose, unless at such a temperature as would be likely to scorch the materials. Consensus of opinion, arrived at by direct experimentation, is now solely in favour of moist heat. In an efficient disinfector, where moist steam, superheated or not, is used, the following are essential points, viz. (1) that the steam under pressure

should permeate every pore of the article to be disinfected; (2) that the temperature of the steam should be between 221° and 250° Fahr.; and (3) that the apparatus be so arranged that, alternately, hot dry air and moist steam, within the foregoing range of temperature, be passed into the chamber containing the articles to be disinfected. The machine, or disinfector, constructed by Messrs. Manlove, Alliott and Co., of Nottingham, is one of the best, and a description of the mode of using it will suffice for this class

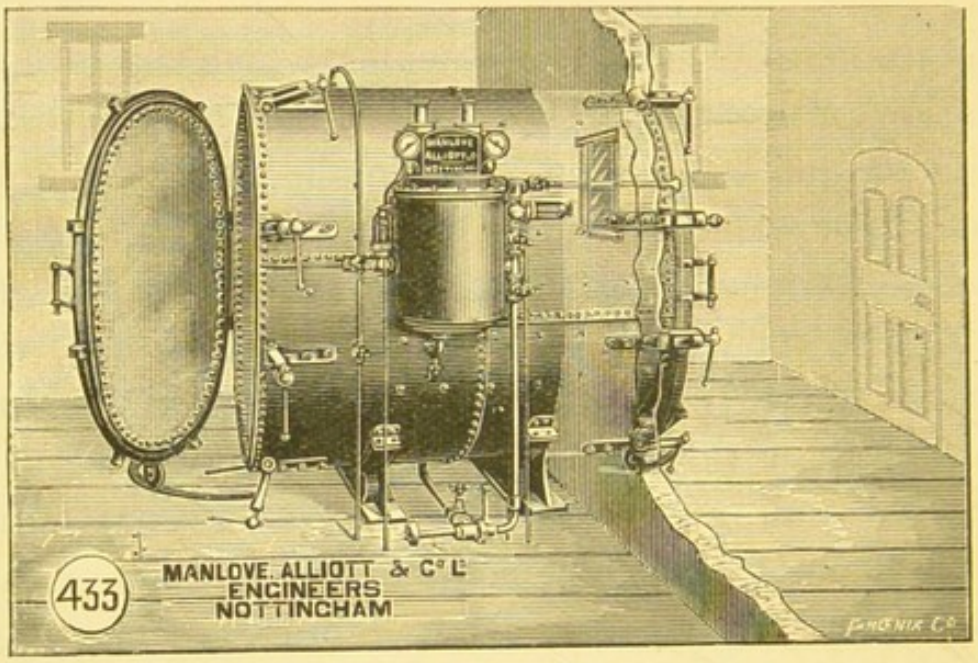


Fig. 75.—Alliott and Patons' Patent.

of apparatus, of which there are several kinds with insignificant differences, and many makers (Fig. 75). The disinfector, which is oval in shape, and constructed of steel, consists of an outer and an inner chamber. The former is called the "jacket" of the latter, inasmuch as it envelops the inner chamber. When the apparatus is working, it is filled with steam at a pressure of 20 lbs. per square inch, and of a temperature of 267° Fahr. In the inner chamber is a movable cradle or basket, constructed of galvanised iron wire, in which the articles to be disin-

fected are placed. By means of suitable mechanical arrangements, communication may be established between the outer and inner chamber, both for filling the latter with steam and for emptying it partially of air. The disinfector, then, being in working order, let us follow from beginning to end of the process the mode of disinfecting, say, mattresses, pillows, etc. The inner chamber door is opened, the cradle is pulled out, and the articles are placed in it. It is again pushed back into the chamber, and the steam-tight doors are closed. Steam, under the conditions already mentioned, having been meanwhile circulating in the outer chamber, the air of the inner chamber is partially exhausted by the action of a steam nozzle, the effect being to create a partial vacuum in the inner chamber. At this stage the communication between outer and inner chamber is opened, and the steam rushes into the latter under considerable pressure, and forces itself into the interstices of the mattresses, etc. This part of the process lasts for not less than twenty minutes, the time being extended if the nature of the articles to be disinfected demands it. The communication between the two chambers is now closed, the steam in the inner chamber is now blown out, a partial vacuum is again established, and hot air takes the place of the steam. This hot air takes up any moisture which may have become condensed on the articles, which hereafter are taken out of the disinfector, the process of disinfection having been completed. Where large quantities of materials require to be disinfected daily, it becomes important that there should be no commingling of the infective with the disinfected articles (Fig. 76). This is arranged by separating the inlet side of the machine from the outlet side (which are at opposite ends of the machine in this case) by a partitional

wall, extending from floor to roof, which is built at right angles to the length of the machine. Into the inlet opening the infective clothing is placed, which, after the process of disinfection is complete, is taken out by the outlet opening on the other side of the wall. In this way, effectual separation of the infective from the disinfected material is ensured. Another form of pressure disinfector, working with a constant current of pure saturated steam, but not superheated, at a temperature of from 220° Fahr.

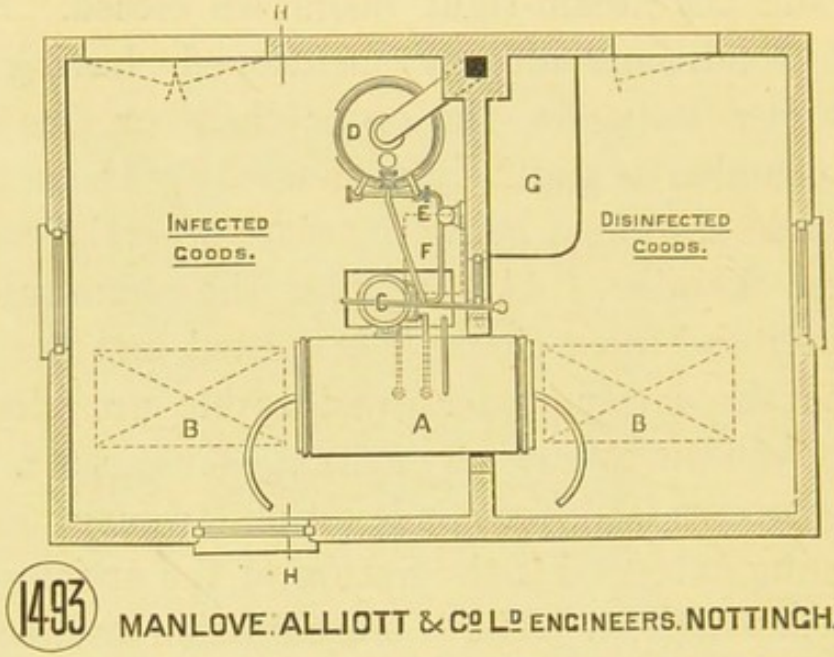


Fig. 76.—Section of Disinfecting Hall, showing arrangement of disinfecting apparatus and partition in relation to infected and disinfected material.

to 230° Fahr., is that of Reck. After having been subjected to crucial tests, it has proved itself to be an effective machine, and is now in use in many places in this country. It may be had as a stationary machine connected with a hospital or disinfecting station, or as a portable machine, transportable from place to place by road to any district in a rural community, as its need is requisitioned.

Another kind of disinfector, Fig. 77, based upon a different principle, has been invented by Dr. Thresh, medical officer of health for Essex, which is worthy of

some attention, inasmuch as there are claimed for the machine efficiency, simplicity, and the non-requirement of skilled labour, coupled with safety. The principle upon which its construction is based is that water, containing a saline substance in solution, boils at a higher temperature, although at the same pressure, than pure water. The saline substance used in this machine is calcium

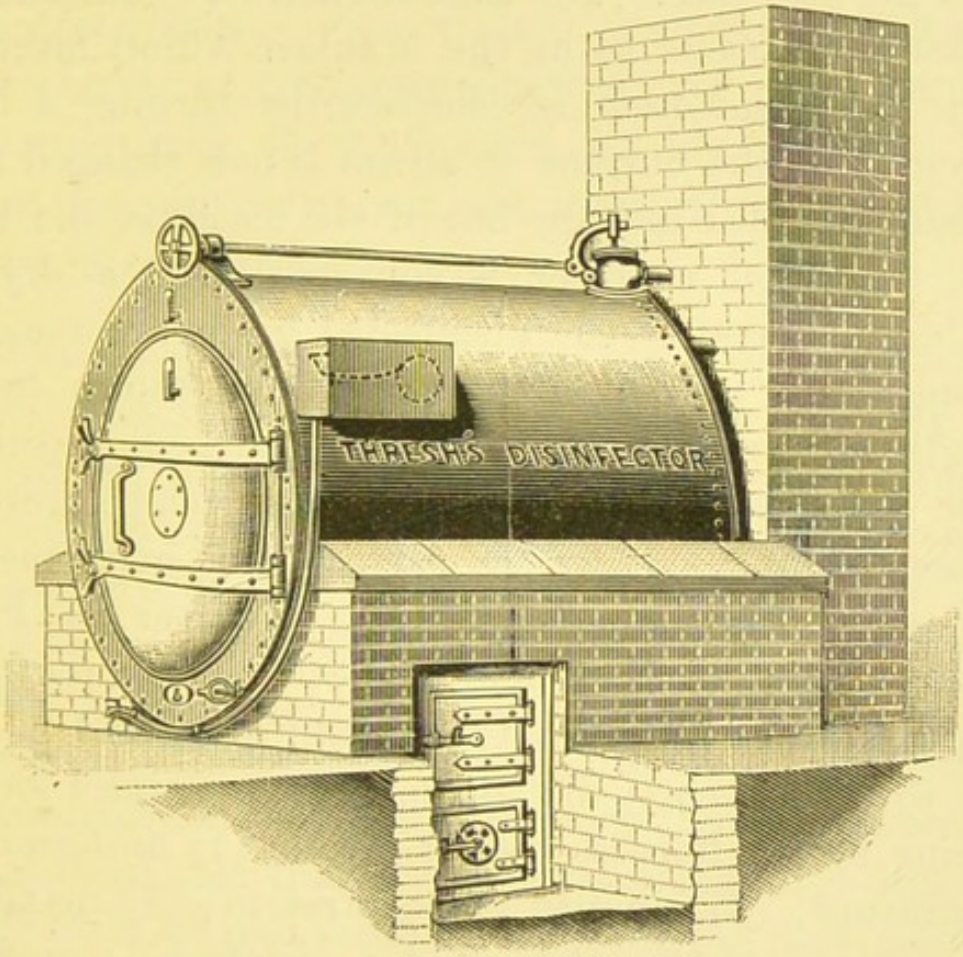


FIG. 77.—Thresh's Disinfector.

chloride, and the machine is so contrived that the calcium salt originally put in may be used over and over again for a considerable time, water being gradually added to it by an automatic feed cistern. The temperature at which this saline solution boils is 225° Fahr., and the steam which is generated is made to circulate in a pipe which passes through this boiling solution. The machine itself, like

the one already described, consists of an outer and inner chamber. The outer chamber contains the boiling saline solution and the pipe already mentioned. Into the inner chamber are placed the articles to be disinfected. When the temperature of this inner chamber reaches the temperature of the boiling solution, viz. 225° Fahr., the steam at the same temperature is made to enter, and thus it disinfects the materials. The time allowed for disinfection is practically the same as in the Manlove-Alliott machine. When the disinfection is complete, by turning a lever the course of the current of steam is now changed from the inner chamber into the flue of the machine, and thus, again, the inner chamber is converted into a dry air chamber. Thereafter the disinfected goods are removed. The ingenuity of the inventor has been shown in the strength of the saline solution used, the boiling-point of which is constant at 225° Fahr. This temperature, as has been pointed out by Dr. Barwise (who experimented practically with the apparatus) in a paper in *Public Health*, "is not high enough to prevent condensation of the steam on the articles to be disinfected, and is sufficient to subsequently dry them." It is claimed for this machine by Dr. Barwise that it attains (1) uniformity of temperature; (2) rapidity of penetration; (3) maximum temperatures within the articles disinfected; and (4) dryness of articles disinfected. And the *Lancet* Special Sanitary Commissioners report of it that "the machine fulfils the conditions of a really efficient disinfector for all practical purposes."[1]

[1] *Lancet*, 11th January 1896.

CHAPTER XLVIII.

DISINFECTION — NATURAL DISINFECTANTS — PRACTICAL DISINFECTION OF EXCRETORY PRODUCTS OF PATIENT, OF CLOTHING, AND OF ROOM—GERMAN AND FRENCH MODES OF DISINFECTION.

SOMETHING now remains to be said regarding natural disinfectants or germicides. It is very probably true that in our anxiety to accomplish the destruction of micro-organisms by artificial means we have somewhat overlooked those natural processes which effect the same end, and in a kindred fashion. Considering the omnipresence of disease-producing micro-organisms, the wonder is, not that these diseases are produced, but speaking comparatively, that they prevail in so light a manner. It is undoubted that this is brought about in large degree by the effects of air and sunlight in destroying such microbes. Of air as a germicidal agent it may at once be said that when fresh and abundant it so dilutes and oxidises infective matter as to reduce the virulency of many of these organisms, if not, indeed, to destroy them. The presence of ozone in the air materially assists such oxidation processes, but, unfortunately, it is but rarely to be found in the air of populous places. It is well known that micro-organisms are found in fewest numbers out at sea, and, doubtless, this is owing in large part to the

existence of ozone. As has been already shown, the area of infectivity of certain diseases is limited by the presence of air, and for the reason that the oxygen of the air renders the infective matter inert. This is notably the case in typhus and some other diseases. The anærobic forms of microbes cannot exist alongside of air, while the aerobic forms cannot exist without it. The microbe of tetanus is an example of the former class, that of diphtheria of the latter. Light is a valuable adjuvant to air in microbe destruction. Experiments have proved that exposure to light is fatal to several microbes, notably those of erysipelas, enteric fever, and others; while exposure to sunlight destroys that of tubercle in a few hours, and that of anthrax in a short time. If others be not actually destroyed, their vitality and virulency are at least minimised. These facts teach the necessity for good ventilation and lighting of our homes, and indicate the value of open spaces, good building regulations, and the prevention of smoke-production in our populous places.

The practical application of the principle of disinfection next falls to be considered. Given a patient suffering from an infective disease in a sick-room, the process of disinfection must not only be concurrent with the illness, but it must succeed the vacation of the room by the patient. As a leading, guiding, and safe principle, it may be said that everything that proceeds from the body of such a patient during the currency of the illness must be deemed infective, and be accordingly disinfected.

Let us consider in some detail the discharges from each disease which demand disinfection, and the measures to be adopted for that purpose.

Small-pox.—All discharges are infective. Nasal and

throat discharges ought to be received on cotton or linen rags, and burned. Stools, vomited matters, and urine ought to be disinfected with one pint of 4 per cent solution of chloride of lime, or a like quantity of 1 to 1000 solution of corrosive sublimate. The virus being concentrated in the skin eruption, the pustules ought to be daily coated with benzoated lard or eucalyptolised vaseline, especially during the "scabbing" stage. Crusts, when shed, to be carefully burned.

CHICKEN-POX.—As in small-pox.

SCARLET FEVER.—In acute stage, throat and nasal discharges ought to be treated as above. In "peeling" stage, body of patient to be sponged daily with equal parts of sanitas and tepid water, and to be washed twice weekly, at least, with carbolised soap and warm water. Special attention to be paid to toilet of hair, ears, and flexures of limbs.

MEASLES.—In acute stage, throat, nasal, and bronchial discharges are to be treated as above. In convalescent stage, the skin, as in scarlet fever.

GERMAN MEASLES.—As in ordinary measles.

TYPHUS FEVER.—All discharges must be considered to be infective. To be treated as above, in respect of skin, and other bodily products.

ENTERIC FEVER.—Stools are chiefly infective, and must be disinfected with solution of chloride of lime or corrosive sublimate of above strengths. Carbolic acid is not an efficient disinfectant of the bacillus of this disease, unless used very strong.

CHOLERA.—To be dealt with as in enteric fever.

INFLUENZA.—Generally as in measles, especially as to mucous discharges.

WHOOPING-COUGH.—Nasal, throat, and bronchial dis-

charges chiefly contain infective matter. To be treated as above.

Diphtheria.—Nasal and throat discharges, which are chiefly infective, ought to be burned.

Erysipelas.—Chiefly in skin; disinfection accomplished usually if iodine treatment has been adopted. "Peeled" skin to be burned.

Puerperal Fever.—Specially located in discharges from genital tract; ought to be received on antiseptic wood-wool pads, and burned; local antisepsis and lavements under advice of physician; other discharges disinfected with solution of corrosive sublimate.

Tubercular Phthisis.—Sputum ought to be received on paper or rags, or into a spittoon containing sawdust, and burned.

In order to properly disinfect solid, semi-solid, or viscous discharges it is necessary either to mix mechanically the disinfectant with the discharge, or allow the disinfectant to soak for at least half an hour, in order that germicidal action may the better operate, before emptying into the slop or water closet, which, after flushing, ought each time to be subsequently disinfected. The quantities and strengths of disinfectants to be used have already been indicated.

When the period of infectivity is safely over, the convalescent patient must be transferred into another room, in order that the apartment he has quitted, and its contents, may undergo disinfection. If care has been exercised during the illness, little risk to the other members of the household is likely to happen. But immediately prior to removal, the patient must be washed all over, and after having been carefully dried, ought to be wrapped in a fresh-warmed blanket, which has been

handed into the room just when needed. The patient should then be received by another person at the door of the room, and conveyed to his new apartment, which previously has been suitably warmed to prevent chills. In scarlet fever, and in diphtheria especially, the patient should continue to use for some time after apparent recovery some antiseptic gargle.

The room just vacated and its contents now demand attention. The clothing which the patient has left behind, that of the nurse, bed clothing, and room furnishings, must be disinfected either *in situ* or be removed by the sanitary authority for that purpose. In rural and smaller urban districts, where no provision is made for this by the sanitary authority, the disinfection must be dealt with by the householder. The plan to carry out this in isolated houses in such circumstances is as follows: Articles of clothing, bed clothing, etc., should be steeped in the room for a couple of hours in a solution of 1 to 2000 corrosive sublimate, should then be roughly wrung, and, in a covered vessel, be removed to the wash-house, to there undergo the usual cleansing process, after which they should be hung in the open air, or laid upon the grass for twenty-four hours. Mattresses, pillows, etc., should be freely sponged with the same solution, removed to a place at some distance from the house, and then left exposed to the air, under cover if need be, for several days. All old articles may be, and in small-pox, whether old or new, ought to be, burned.

The woodwork, floor, furniture of the room, and the walls and ceiling still remain to be disinfected. The first three named are usually left untouched until the air of the room has been disinfected. This so-called aerial disinfection is, however, an entire misnomer; indeed, at best,

it is but a delusion. If ventilation during the currency of the illness has been attended to, little fear need be entertained of the infectivity of the room atmosphere. What do require attention, however, are the microbes and their spores, which by this time have become constituent parts of the dust which has settled in the crevices and corners and other points of lodgment in the room. In other countries than ours, little or no attention is given to aerial disinfection, while much has been paid to the deposited dust. Hence, two main plans of room disinfection prevail: one, devoted mainly to aerial disinfection as in our own country; the other, devoted entirely to disinfection of room dust, chiefly in France and Germany. Each plan demands some explanation.

The English Local Government Board recommends that 1½ lbs. of sulphur mixed with a liquid combustible, as alcohol, —some add nitre—should be burned for every 1000 cubic feet of air space in a room (which has been made as air-tight as possible), and the resultant sulphurous acid gas be allowed to operate for 12 to 24 hours. It has, however, been clearly pointed out that this amount of sulphur only gives in the space named 1·75 per cent of gas, whereas 4 per cent is necessary for bactericidal effect. Apart from this, however, the burning of sulphur is by no means an easy matter. This uncertainty of action is easily overcome, if, instead of solid sulphur, cylinders or siphons of compressed liquid sulphurous acid gas are used. Fig. 78 shows such a cylinder, and Fig. 79 a siphon.

The gas is compressed at a pressure of about 45 lbs. per square inch, and when a cylinder is to be used all that is necessary to liberate the gas is to cut the projecting soft lead pipe with a knife.

Before using sulphurous acid gas, however generated,

and in order to render it more efficient in action, the walls and ceiling of the room ought to be moistened with water; otherwise much, if not, indeed, most of its potency is lost.

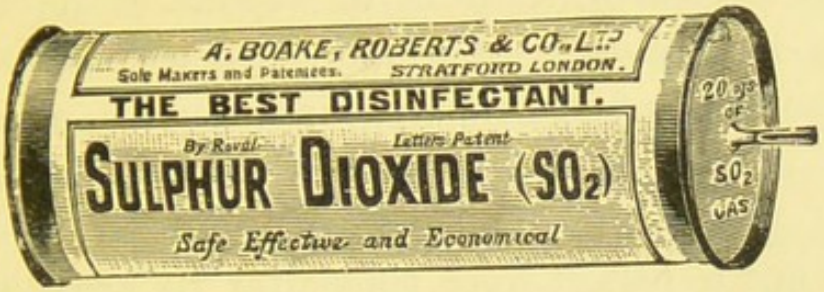


FIG. 78.

When cylinder-contents are to be used in a room, the liquid gas is liberated by cutting with one stroke of a knife the piece of lead pipe which is seen to project from the left-side of the Fig.; thereafter the cylinder, pipe end up, should be placed in an earthenware basin, and the operator should at once leave the room.

Instead of this gas, chlorine gas is sometimes substituted. It is even more effective than the former, but it acts corrosively on metallic substances, and its fumes are exceedingly pungent and irritating. Doubtless, when it can be put up in the compressed liquid form, its use will be revived because of its greater potency.

FIG. 79.

After the room has been subjected to the influence of sulphurous acid or chlorine gas for eighteen to twenty-four hours, it may be entered by a person wearing a damp flannel cloth over mouth and nostrils, who should then throw wide open the window and the damper of the grate. The room should then be left until the irritating fumes have sufficiently disappeared to enable persons to work therein. Whereupon the floor, woodwork, and furniture ought to be freely washed with 1 in 4000 corrosive sublimate solution, the wall

paper stripped, and the ceiling lime-washed, the windows remaining wide open all the while, night and day. Of late years, however, room disinfection by *formaldehyde* or *formalin*, in form of vapour or liquid spray, has been largely used. Formalin, which consists of a 40 per cent solution of formaldehyde in water, has no markedly offensive odour, but the vapour of formaldehyde is very pungent, penetrating, and irritant, and, in a room, its odour is apt to persist some time after its use. This may be got quickly rid of by placing shallow vessels in the room containing ammonia. Neither in the liquid nor vaporous form does formaldehyde attack metals, bleach colours of fabrics, or act prejudicially on delicate articles of clothing or furniture. Formalin may be used as a spray upon walls, floor, and furniture of apartments, dispersed thereupon by means of a spraying-pump, such as that devised by Leslie Mackenzie, or by a *pulverisateur*. The vapour may be generated from a lamp or generator, of which several kinds have now been devised for the purpose. The vapour may be generated either from formalin liquid or from solid *paraformaldehyde*. When the former is employed, 20 ounces of the 40 per cent solution, sold commercially as formalin, should be used, and when the latter, 60 grammes of the solid tabloids, for every 1000 cubic feet of room space. The strength of the solution for spraying purposes should be one part of formalin to 49 parts of water, enough of this solution being used to distribute freely the spray over the entire room. Opinions differ, even now, as to the penetrating efficiency of the disinfectant when used as vapour, but most observers are agreed that in the form of spray it is an efficient germicide.

The other main line of treatment is directed against the deposited dust of the room, on the principle that the

infective microbes and spores are there located. In Paris, disinfection of the room is carried out by spraying the apartment, including the furniture, with a fine spray of 1 in 1000 corrosive sublimate solution, which is ejected from a machine called a *pulverisateur*, not unlike in appearance to a small fire extinguisher. It is either carried on the back of the operator, or is set on the floor on wheels. The workman, during the operation, wears an overall uniform, which, when the work is done, is taken off, packed in a small tin case, and returned to the disinfecting station. The charwoman does the rest.

In Berlin a dry method of dealing with the deposited dust is first carried out. The material used consists of chunks of ordinary German bread, forty-eight hours old; and the workman, using the crust side of the bread as a handle, rubs systematically the walls and ceiling of the room. The dust becomes detached from the rubbed surface on to the bread, which is then burned. The walls are next sprayed with a $2\frac{1}{2}$-5 per cent solution of carbolic acid, the floor, woodwork, and furniture with the same solution, and thus room disinfection is completed.

These appear to us to be more rational and more effective modes of disinfection than is ours of aerial disinfection. The cost may be somewhat greater, but that is not worthy consideration when efficiency is our object. The chief objection to the free use of corrosive sublimate solution is its possible harmful effect on those who work with it, and on the inmates of the room after rehabitation. Experience in Paris has, however, shown that if the workmen are instructed as to its nature and effects, such risks are reduced to a minimum; and no harmful effects on the inmates have been recorded after reoccupation of a room so treated.

CHAPTER XLIX.

SANITARY LAW RELATING TO INFECTIVE DISEASES.

IGNORANCE of the law is no plea for its contravention, therefore every householder and every nurse should be acquainted with at least its general principles. A district nurse may have many opportunities of combating the ignorance which prevails in this respect, and will thus become of great assistance to the sanitary administration. Most of the sanitary legislation that presently is on the statute book has been passed by Parliament during the last fifty years, and is contained in different Acts of Parliament for England, Scotland, and Ireland. London, however, has special sanitary Acts of its own. At the same time, the same general principles of sanitary law obtain all over the kingdom. The main provisions of all these Acts are intended to conserve the public health by the removal of anything which may imperil it, and to prevent the origin and the spread of infective diseases. Our attention will be especially directed to the latter. In none of the Public Health Acts is there any definition of what constitutes an infectious disease, and up till 1889, when the Notification of Infectious Diseases Act was passed, there was no attempt even to give a list of these diseases. In that Act—at first a permissive Act—the diseases scheduled were small-pox, cholera, diphtheria,

membranous croup, erysipelas, scarlet fever or scarlatina, and typhus, typhoid, enteric, relapsing, continued, and puerperal fevers. It will be observed that some diseases, as measles, whooping-cough, chicken-pox, influenza, plague, British cholera, and mumps, are omitted from the list, but a Local Authority may, by provision of the Act, after due resolution and publication of its intention, add these or others to the scheduled list; and it must be remembered that the provisions of the Public Health Acts equally apply to these as to those embraced in the former list. Under the foregoing Act, the duty of certification falls upon (1) the head of a family, or guardian of a person, and (2) upon the medical practitioner in attendance. Failure on the part of either to perform this duty, after conviction, is followed by a fine not exceeding forty shillings. By the Public Health (Scotland) Act, 1897, the Notification Act became compulsory on Local Authorities in Scotland.

The provisions of Public Health Acts deal (1) with the infective person; (2) with the infective place; and (3) with infective things. They may, therefore, be considered in this order.

I. In Respect of the Infective Person.—It is forbidden, under a penalty, (1) for any person suffering from an infectious disease to wilfully expose himself in any public place or conveyance, without taking proper precautions against spreading the disease; (2) for such person to enter a public conveyance without giving the owner, or person in charge, due notice, when it shall be within the option of the owner, etc., to refuse; but the owner, if he conveys such person, is entitled to be indemnified by said person against loss incurred thereby, and for expenses of disinfection; (3) to expose any person who suffers from

an infectious disease in any public place, etc. All these provisions are most necessary, and every sanitary authority ought to make examples of all transgressors. On one occasion we found a person who was convalescent from small-pox, but whose body was still marked with "crusts," promoting his convalescence by journeying to and from the city and one of the suburbs of Glasgow in an omnibus. It is needless to say that he received smart punishment. A person living in an infected house cannot legally engage in the occupation of milking animals, picking fruit, or, indeed, take part in any trade or business, the products or materials of which are calculated to spread disease.

In respect of school attendance, it is an offence for a parent or person in charge of any child who is suffering from infective disease, or who resides in a house where such disease exists or has existed within six months, to knowingly or negligently permit such child to attend school, without producing a medical certificate which states that the child is free from disease and infection, and that the house has been properly disinfected; and it is made equally penal for a teacher or person in charge of any school to knowingly permit such a child to attend school.

Removal of Infective Persons.—Where an isolation hospital has been provided, any person suffering from an infective disease who is without proper lodging or accommodation, or who is lodged in a room occupied by others besides those in attendance, or who is on board any ship or vessel within three miles of the coast, may, on a warrant of a magistrate, be removed to such hospital. In like manner a person in a common lodging-house may be so removed. Again, persons who have occupied

or who occupy the same room with an infective person, may be removed to other suitable accommodation provided for them by the sanitary authority. These provisions are to be interpreted by the existence or non-existence of means of efficient isolation and facilities for disinfection. It is forbidden for any one, who himself is suffering from an infectious disease, or who himself directly, or by others indirectly, has come in contact with an infective person, to be concerned in the production, distribution, or storage of milk; and in London, an infected person is forbidden to follow or take part in any occupation which is connected with any food-production, the products of which are likely to spread the disease. All of the foregoing provisions apply to the living infective person only. What of the dead? No precautionary or prohibitory provisions exist in any of the Public Health Acts regarding the removal, in a public conveyance set apart for this purpose, of an infective dead body for burial. In England and Ireland, however, the Infectious Diseases (Prevention) Act requires that due notice shall be given to the owner or driver, and the person giving notice shall be bound to pay the costs of disinfection of the vehicle used. It is illegal to transport for burial, or for other legalised means of disposal, by rail or water, the body of any person who has died of an infective disease, unless and until a doctor has certified that due precautions against the spread of infection have been taken. Such precautions may be held to have been taken by the liberal use of chlorinated lime in the coffin, or by wrapping the body entirely in a sheet steeped in 1 to 1000 corrosive sublimate solution. If any person dies in a hospital from an infective disease, and if a doctor certifies that in order to prevent risk of spread

of infection the body should not be removed therefrom except for burial or cremation, such body shall not be removed except to be taken direct to place of interment or to crematorium. Where a public mortuary has been provided, and where any dead body in any room is certified to be inimical to the health of the occupants of the room, such body, on a warrant, may be removed to the mortuary. Again, in view of the Irish custom of "waking" the dead, and of the danger which may arise therefrom, such a practice is prohibited in Scotland by the Public Health Act, when the death has resulted from an infectious disease.

II. In Respect of the Infective Place.—As we have already seen, public conveyances used for the carrying of the infective sick must undergo disinfection. In like manner, the room occupied during an infective illness must also be disinfected—(1) either at the expense of the householder, or (2) from the public rates. While it is common for the latter mode to be carried out, it ought to be remembered that the duty, according to the Acts, devolves upon the householder. At the same time, no sanitary authority which does not provide the necessary facilities and materials can ever expect disinfection by private persons to be thorough. Again, any person who knowingly lets any house, room, or part of a house or shop which has not been properly disinfected after occupation by an infective person, or who withholds such information on being asked, or who makes any false statement regarding the same, shall be liable to heavy penalties. Ships become infective places under the Cholera, Yellow Fever, and Plague Regulations, whenever any of these diseases break out during a voyage, and on entering port they must fly the yellow flag and be subject to the control of the Port Sanitary Authority.

III. In Respect of Infective Things.—Any one who, without previous disinfection, knowingly gives, lends, sells, pawns, transmits, or exposes, or removes any bedding, clothing, rags, or *other things* which have been exposed to infection from infectious disorders, or permits clothing, etc., to be washed or exposed in any wash-house or washing-green which is used in common by persons other than the family or household to which the infected person belongs, without previous disinfection, shall be liable to a penalty. This does not apply to articles transmitted under proper precautions for purposes of disinfection. The following may be taken as illustrative cases, viz. (1) trafficking in anything from an infected room; (2) carrying infected articles through the public streets, or sending such in a public conveyance; (3) washing infected clothing in a wash-house which is common to other houses, or sending such clothing to a public laundry; (4) making fabrics for warehouses or for private persons in an infected house, and carrying the same to the warehouse or private person when made; (5) pawning infective articles; (6) selling food of any kind in a shop attached to a dwelling-house in which infective disease is present; and (7) transmitting infected bedding or furniture to upholsterers or public cleaning establishments.

The term "other things" would include infected rubbish, such as excreta, poultices, wall paper, or vomited matters cast into a receptacle in a public place without previous disinfection. But to make this perfectly clear the Infectious Diseases (Prevention) Act contains a special provision to the above effect.

Where the Medical Officer of Health has evidence that diseases prevail in his district which are attributable to the milk supplied from any dairy, he is empowered to

visit the dairy, and to examine every person connected therewith, and the veterinary inspector, appointed by the Local Authority, to examine the cows therein. A dairyman may be ordered by the Local Authority to cease the sale of milk for such time as may be deemed necessary, and from him may be demanded a full and complete list of the names and addresses of his customers, on payment made to him for said list, where it is certified by the Medical Officer of Health that an outbreak, or the spread, of infectious disease is attributable to milk supplied by him. A like provision exists with regard to public laundries.

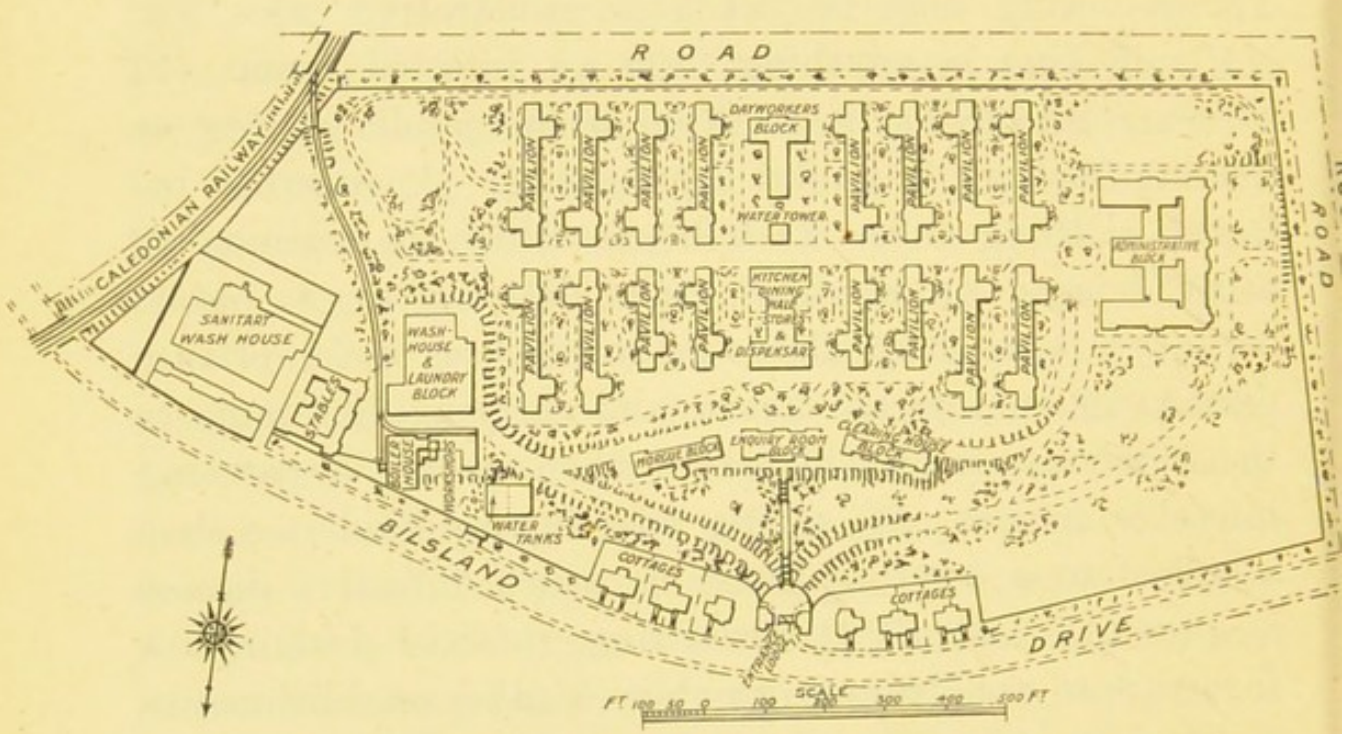


FIG. 80.—Ruchill Hospital. Plan showing the general arrangements.

CHAPTER L.

ISOLATION HOSPITALS.

GENERAL CONSIDERATIONS.

Local Authorities in Scotland are not bound to establish isolation hospitals except after Order of the Local Government Board. The Acts simply declare that they "may provide" such hospitals or temporary places for the reception of the sick. In England and Wales, however, the County Council can compel their erection when necessary under the Isolation Hospitals Act, 1893. Experience has amply demonstrated that without these hospitals no Local Authority can adequately cope with the repression of infective diseases or fulfil modern demands. The points to be considered in the establishment of an isolation hospital, when its erection has been determined, are, briefly, as follows, viz. (1) size; (2) situation and site; and (3) incidence of accommodation, both as respects sex and disease.

SIZE.

Generally speaking, they should be of such a size as will provide *one* bed per 1000 of population, but this ratio may be increased or diminished in respect of the capability of the population to provide efficient home-isolation. Glasgow, for example, for a population of nearly 780,000,

meanwhile provides 1065 beds. The ratio of beds to population is more difficult to determine in rural than in urban districts, and especially in the former where the inhabitants are widely scattered. The number of hospitals and their localities in rural districts, therefore, must be largely determined by the distances to be traversed by removed patients. Hitherto, this has been met by the erection, during panic, of temporary wooden structures, most of which are unsuitable, and which, moreover, never can be of the utility of permanent buildings.

It is better for small-pox hospitals to be entirely separate and apart from general isolation hospitals. Hitherto, this has not always been the case. Owing to the recent outbreaks of small-pox throughout the country, and its wide-spread distribution, it has become incumbent not only upon burghal local authorities, but also upon rural authorities, County Councils and District Committees, to make hospital provision against such outbreaks within their jurisdiction. It can hardly be expected of these, however, to provide permanent buildings, on account of the expense of erection and up-keep, and in view of the fitful character of the outbreaks. It would, probably, be sufficient if they had sites prepared, whereupon, at the shortest notice, might be erected portable buildings, which, in the intervals of non-use, might be stored in sections ready for erection. Such a plan in certain Scottish counties has had the approval and sanction of the Local Government Board.

SITUATION AND SITE.

Obviously, to serve the needs of a populous community, the hospital must be situated within easy distance of the centre of population to minimise the risks of removal,

and yet be sufficiently removed to overcome objections, such as nearness to inhabited houses, and the risks of infection thereto. The outskirts of a city, therefore, indicate generally the situation to be chosen, as likely to afford a more open site, and consequently, unconfined air-space, and more "elbow-room." The close propinquity of an isolation hospital to dwelling-houses has been proved to be prejudicial to the inhabitants of the latter. This has been shown in respect of most of the infective diseases, but especially of small-pox. Dr. Thorne Thorne gives an example of the former in the case of the Children's Hospital at Pendlebury—an excellent modern hospital—which has its main hospital devoted to the treatment of the ordinary diseases of children, and a separate pavilion for infective diseases. He showed that children in the ordinary wards contracted infective diseases, apparently from the infective pavilion. This has been also shown in respect of small-pox hospitals; and there can be no doubt whatever that they are sources of direct and indirect infection of those resident in their immediate neighbourhoods. To avoid this risk, the Local Government Boards of England and Scotland demand that no building which is a constituent part of an isolation hospital shall be nearer than *forty* feet to the boundary wall. In respect of small-pox, a larger zone is necessary, viz. from 120 to 150 feet (Fig. 81).

The site chosen, while to some extent dependent upon local circumstances, ought to combine, as far as possible, the following conditions, viz. (1) an open subsoil; (2) a gentle sloping ground surface; and (3) an exposure protected from the east and north, and open to the south and west. These conditions, coupled with abundance of good water and pure air, will go far to contribute to the

healthiness of the hospital. The *area* of the site ought to bear a direct relation to the proposed number of beds. The Local Government of England suggests, as a typical relation, eight beds per acre. Hitherto, this has seldom been realised. The maximum, however, ought not to

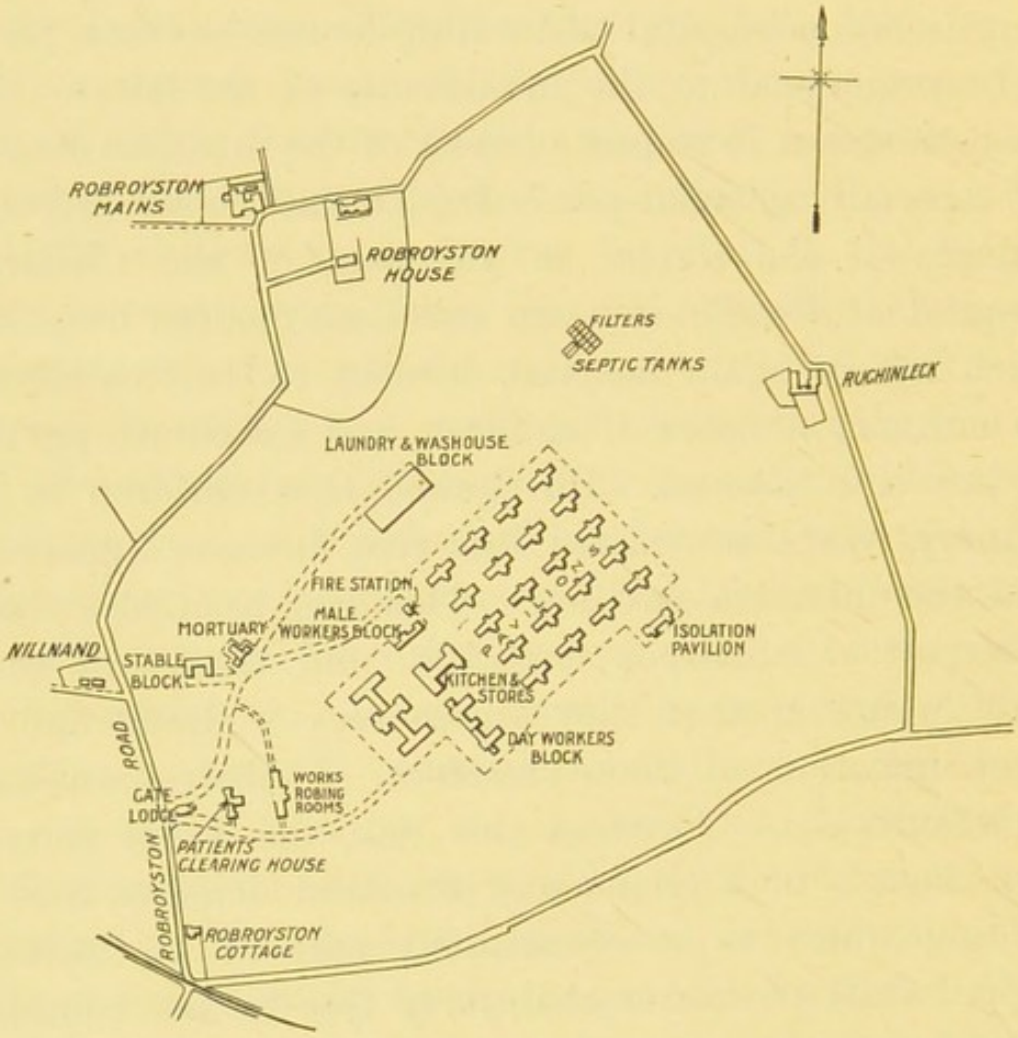


FIG. 81.—Glasgow proposed New Small-pox Hospital, Robroyston.

exceed twenty beds per acre. Taking a few well-known hospitals at random, we find that the Glasgow Belvidere has thirteen per acre; Heathcote, Leamington, eleven; Ealing, twelve; Sheffield, forty-eight; Dunfermline Combination, fourteen and a half; Willesden, six; and Glasgow Ruchill, twelve.

INCIDENCE OF ACCOMMODATION.

In rural hospitals, facilities must be provided for the treatment of at least three different diseases at the same time, and in urban institutions for a larger number than this. In both, this accommodation must be duplicated for the sexes. The total number of beds to be provided will be regulated by the number of population for the needs of which the hospital is erected.

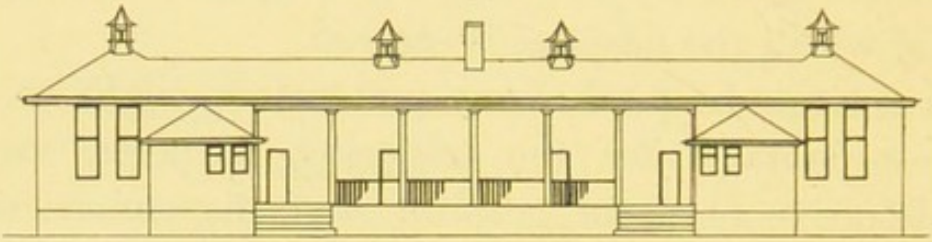
An isolation hospital of any pretensions ought to have buildings suitable for the following purposes, viz. (1) administrative block for hospital staff, dispensary, stores, etc.; (2) wards for the treatment of different diseases during acute illness and during convalescence, for the separation of the sexes, and for probation of doubtful and non-infective cases; and (3) accessory buildings, which include laundry, wash-house, mortuary, stables, disinfecting apparatus, offices and inquiry room.

Of the administrative department nothing need be said, except that it should provide commodious space for residents, nurses, etc., and should occupy a central or convenient position to the wards.

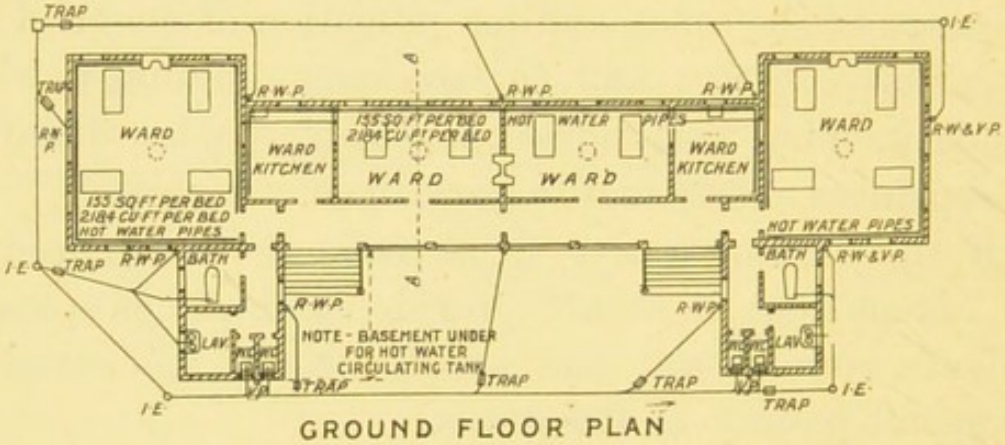
WARDS.

These are now built of the pavilion type, and mostly one storey in height. Sometimes exigencies of space, economy, and other considerations compel wards to be erected of two storeys, but, whenever possible, this should be avoided. One pavilion ought to be distant not less than fifty to sixty feet from the next. In the opinion of some, each should be connected with the rest by connecting corridors, which should consist merely of covered ways entirely open at the sides. In our opinion, these are

neither advisable nor necessary, although, when of the above type, little can be said against them. Should the small-pox department be included within the general hospital area, it ought to be separated by a boundary wall, in addition to the sanitary zone of 150 feet already mentioned. Compatible with reasonable economy, the small-pox pavilions ought to be separated farther from each



FRONT ELEVATION



GROUND FLOOR PLAN

FIG. 82.—Small-pox Hospital, Robroyston. Isolation Pavilion. Each patient in this pavilion has 156 square feet of superficial space, and 2184 cubic feet air space.

other than those of the other infective diseases. Such an arrangement, however, is best avoided. The small-pox hospital would be better built on a separate site (Fig. 81.)

WARD SPACE.

The cubic and superficial or floor space allotted per patient ought to be considerably greater than in a general hospital, on the principle that free dilution with fresh

air diminishes the virulency of infective matter. The minimum amount of cubic space per patient should be 2000 feet; a still more desirable amount is 2500 feet. The minimum amount of floor space should be 144 square feet, and if possible, 156 square feet. The minimum requirements are secured in a ward of the following dimensions, viz. twenty-four feet in width, fourteen feet in height, with twelve feet of wall space per bed; and the larger requirements in one, twenty-six feet wide, fourteen feet high, with fourteen feet wall space per bed.

LIGHTING.

Efficient light is a *sine qua non* of every hospital, but especially of isolation hospitals, by reason of the fact that light, and more particularly sunlight, is one of the best natural germicides. Window space should, therefore, have a distinct relation to total cubic space of a ward, and the proportion between the former and the latter should not be more than one square foot of window space to forty cubic feet of the latter, and not less than one to seventy. Unless special measures be taken for the conservation of heat, the ratio of one to fifty-five makes the heating of a ward difficult. This, however, may be overcome by having double window casements, or double glazed plate-glass windows. In temporary wooden hospitals, even with a ratio of one to seventy, it is practically impossible to sustain adequate temperatures.

HEATING.

Heating is usually effected either (1) by hot-water pipes at ordinary pressure; (2) by open fires; or (3) by a combination of both. Where a hot-water system is to be installed, the heating engineer has to carefully calculate

the extent of piping necessary. Hood, in his treatise on warming and ventilation, shows that one foot length of a four inch pipe, containing water at a temperature 125° Fahr. above that of the surrounding air, will elevate 222 cubic feet of air one degree of temperature per minute; that is, about 190 cubic feet for every superficial foot of surface of pipe. Thereupon, in order to calculate the necessary extent of piping required to heat any given confined space, he recommends that the total cubic space in feet be multiplied by the number of degrees of temperature desired, and that the product be divided by 190 into the time, reduced to minutes, within which the desired temperature is to be attained; the answer will be the number of superficial feet of pipe required. In addition to this, however, careful estimation must be made for windows and open ceilings. A general rule, when a temperature of 60° Fahr. above that of the external air is wanted, is to provide one foot of piping for every two and a half feet of glass superficies.

VENTILATION.

In many hospitals, heating and ventilation are combined, whereas, in others, provision is only made for the entrance of fresh air at the outside temperature, and heating is effected by the means already spoken of. There can be no doubt that the best mode to attain efficient ventilation is to purify, warm, and impel fresh air into the wards of a hospital, since, by previous warming, the air can be introduced at a greater velocity with comfort and safety. Another mode is to first warm the incoming cold air by passing it over hot-water pipes, and to exhaust the foul air by the ward chimneys, or by special exhaust flues built around or alongside the smoke flues, and by

roof-ridge fixed ventilators; while a third mode is to permit the entering air to pass by special openings, as Sheringham valves or Tobin tubes, aided, if necessary, by cross window ventilation when required, and to leave the heating to the hot-water piping and the ward fires. The recent tendency in the building of new hospitals to combine a scheme of heating and ventilation is unquestionably in the right direction, and probably the Key system is the best at the present day. The essential features of this system are the purification, warming, and impulsion under some degree of pressure of the air so treated into the different apartments of the hospital. The apparatus for filtering and washing the air consists of thousands of cords of suitable material stretched on a frame which reaches from the top to the bottom of the incoming air chamber, and which fills the whole width of the chamber. These cords touch one another, and are interlaced with copper wire so as to give to the entering air a flat surface to impinge against. This screen is kept constantly moist by water trickling down the series of cords, and thus the rough fibres of the cords, together with the water, largely free the air of sooty particles, and to some extent, of aerial microbes. Another form of screen has, however, been more recently devised. It is composed of tiers of sloping glass tubes, laid in alternate layers. Where great purity of air is desired, this may be used in addition to the fibre screen. It possesses this advantage over the fibre screen, that it may be more readily cleansed of adhering solid matter. Such a method of screening the air entirely prevents a foggy atmosphere within the wards, and we have seen on a day when a dense fog prevailed outside, the ward atmospheres of the Victoria Infirmary, Glasgow, where the system is in

operation, perfectly clear. After the washed air passes through the screen, it next comes in contact with coils of piping containing steam, by which it is warmed. Immediately behind these pipe coils are fans or propellers by which the warmed air is impelled into the cement-lined air ducts which pass into the hospital basement, and thence into the wards by special air shafts.

By means of subsidiary or ancillary pipe coils placed at various points of the air ducts, the air to any special ward, or to the operating theatre, may be raised in temperature as desired. The fresh air shaft enters each ward, close to the ceiling, and after serving the needs of the inmates, passes into the foul air shafts, which have their openings near the floor level; so that the person in the erect attitude receives the pure air before it may be contaminated from patients lying in bed. The air enters the ward under some pressure, and therefore, itself being warmed, forces downwards toward the exit shafts the respiratory impurities of the ward occupants. The windows are made not to open, and the swing doors are double, in order to minimise disturbance in the air current. Chemical and bacteriological experiments carried on continuously over a considerable period of time amply demonstrate the greater purity of the ward air as compared with the outside atmosphere. Another advantage of this system, compared with others, is that in warm weather the temperature of the ward atmosphere may be cooled. Thermometric experiments, too, carried on continuously, show a remarkable evenness of ward temperatures, a desideratum of the utmost importance in all diseases, but especially in those of the respiratory type. The system has been installed in the new Birmingham Infirmary, the Belfast Royal Victoria Infirmary, and others. The diagram

on p. 59 illustrates the arrangements for the purification, warming, and impulsion of air in this *plenum* system.

TYPICAL ISOLATION HOSPITALS.

The following may be taken as typical isolation hospitals on the large and small scale, for an urban and a rural community. They have been selected because they are excellent types, and possess the most modern requirements, viz. Ruchill Hospital, which was lately constructed by the Corporation of Glasgow in addition to the present Belvidere Hospital; the Dunfermline Combination Hospital; and the Glasgow proposed New Small-pox Hospital.

The illustration on p. 368 will give the reader a bird's eye view of the general plan of Ruchill Hospital.

Situated in the northern outskirts of the city, of easy access by road and rail, and planted upon a rising ground, it is intended to provide accommodation for over 400 beds.

It is composed of the following blocks, viz. (1) administrative; (2) isolation wards; (3) inquiry; (4) wash-houses and disinfecting; (5) kitchen and stores; (6) day-workers'; (7) clearing-house and fire-engine station; (8) morgue; (9) boiler-house and workshops; (10) stables; (11) cottages for principal non-professional officials. The hospital has been arranged in entire conformity to the requirements of the Scottish Local Government Board.

The isolation pavilions number sixteen in all, twelve large and four small. At the sunny end of each, a balcony or verandah for convalescents is a prominent and novel feature. Each large pavilion embraces two acute and two convalescent wards, the former for ten beds each, the latter

for five beds each. The dimensions of an acute ward are as follows: Length, 66 feet; breadth, 22 feet; height 15¾ feet; total superficies of floor, 1452 square feet; total cubic space, 23,100 cubic feet; window space, 391 square feet; ratio of window space to total cubic space, about 1 to 60.

The dimensions of a convalescent ward are exactly the same as for the small pavilion convalescent ward, as will be seen below. Each small pavilion contains two acute wards and two convalescent wards. The dimensions of each ward are as follows: Length, 33 feet; breadth, 22 feet; height 15¾ feet; total superficies of floor, 726 square feet; total cubic space, 11,550 cubic feet; window space (in acute ward), 187 square feet, and in convalescent ward, 255 square feet; ratio of window space to cubic space (in acute ward), 1 to 62, and (in convalescent ward), 1 to 45. The total number of beds in the hospital amounts to 408.

The ground-floor plan of a small pavilion shows the following accommodation, viz. four wards with five beds each, two nurses' rooms, two pantries, two bath-rooms, two lavatories and water closets for patients, like accommodation for those on duty, two steep rooms for soiled linen, etc. The wards are disconnected from the annexes, which contain the sanitary fittings, by a hall having opposite doorways into the outer air, and the nurses' room and pantries are situated between each pair of wards.

A like plan of a large pavilion shows a similar disposition of arrangements, but on a correspondingly larger scale.

All angles in ward walls are rounded off in Parian cement, so as to prevent lodgment of microbic dust. The heating of the wards is effected by hot-water pipes at ordinary pressure, aided by open central fires; and ventila-

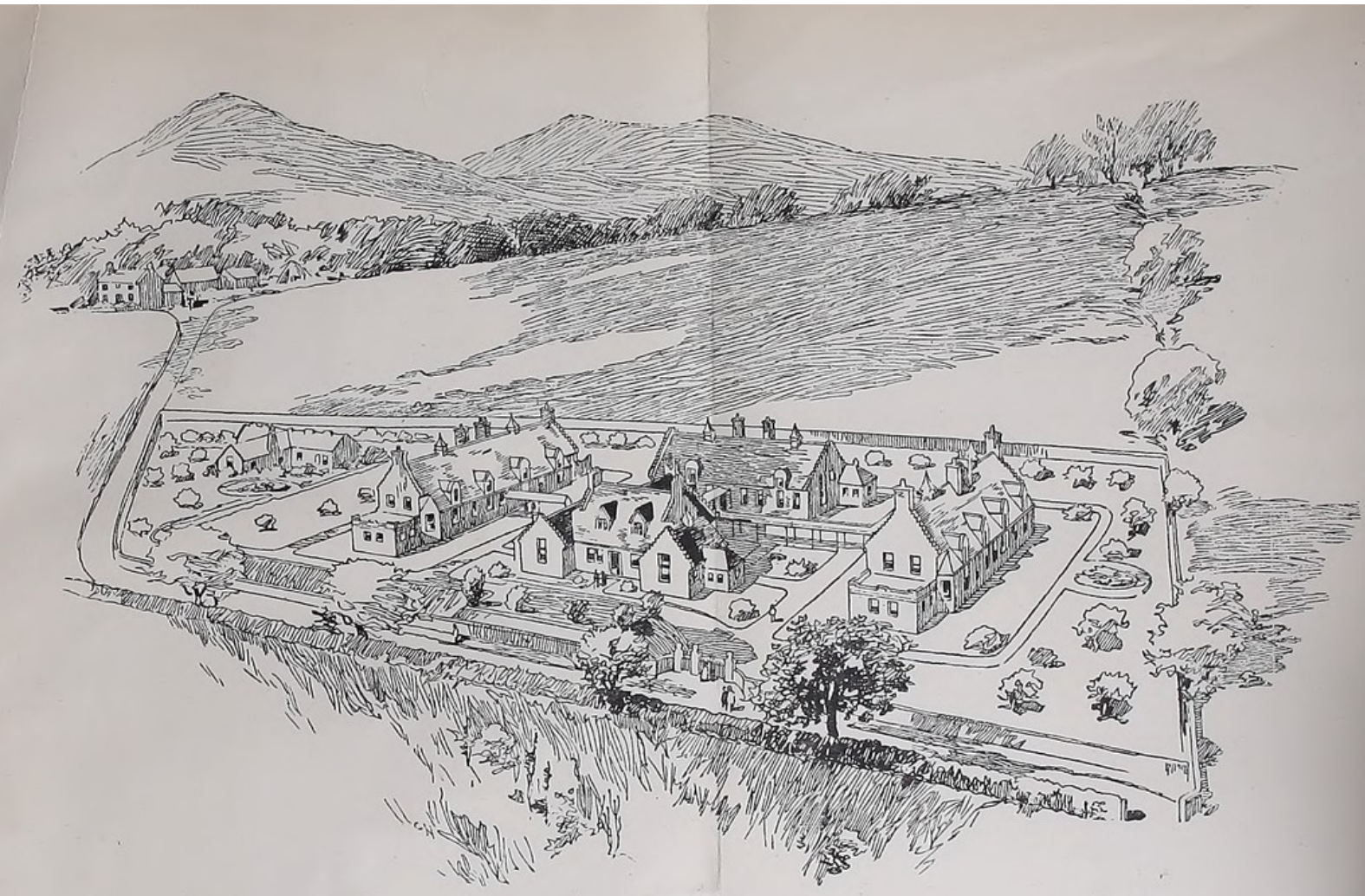


FIG. 83.

DUNFERMLINE COMBINATION ISOLATION HOSPITAL.

Offices. Western Pavilion. Northern Pavilion. Eastern Pavilion.

Probationary Ward. Administrative Block. Probationary Ward.

[*To face p.* 381.

tion by fixed roof-ridge cowls, hopper-sashed windows, and by concentric outlet air shafts round ward chimneys.

The hospital is entirely devoted to the treatment of infective diseases other than small-pox, for the treatment of which ample provision already exists at Belvidere Hospital, and in the new hospital about to be erected in the neighbourhood of the city.

A very excellent type of a rural hospital is the Dunfermline Combination Isolation Hospital, which has been erected on a site of two and a half acres with a good fall for drainage, and which has a southern exposure. The illustration on page facing this gives a clear idea of the disposition of the buildings, for the use of which we are indebted to the editor of the *Dunfermline Press.*

It consists of a central administrative building which is flanked by two semi-detached "quarantine" wards for the reception of doubtful cases. Behind this block, and on each side—west and east—is an isolation pavilion, which is distant from 40 to 60 feet from the administrative block, which, however, communicates with each pavilion by means of open covered ways. The "offices" are placed in the extreme west angle of the site—shown in the diagram in the upper left corner—between which and the western pavilion sufficient space is left whereupon to build another pavilion, if such an extension be required. In the lower right angle of the site it is proposed to erect accommodation for the engineer, caretaker, and other resident officials.

A sanitary zone of 40 feet separates at all points the hospital buildings from the public road.

The fever pavilions are situated north and south. They are simple in design, being based largely on the plan of the Warrington Fever Hospital, and are so

arranged that every window in each ward may receive the rays of the sun during several hours of a sunny day.

The administrative building placed on the southern side of the site contains the kitchen, scullery, larder, storerooms, rooms for physician and matron on the ground floor, and three large bedrooms, with bathroom and napery stores, upstairs; while, in the basement, the air-warming chamber, air-propelling fan, and steam engine for the fan are located. The quarantine or "probationary" wards, while they flank the administrative building, are wholly isolated from it and from each other. They are overlooked, however, by air-tight windows from the administrative building. They are entered by separate doorways outside of the administrative block. Each ward—one for each sex—measures 24 feet in length, 12 feet in breadth, and 14½ feet in height, and thus contains 4176 cubic feet of air space. Each is intended for two beds, so that each occupant has 2000 odd cubic feet air space, 12 feet wall space, and 144 superficial feet of floor space, allotted to him. Each isolation block contains a ward for males, and one for females. Each ward, on either side of the administrative block, has six beds, while those in the block behind, being smaller than the others, have only four beds; the latter are intended for convalescent patients when circumstances suit. In each of these wards the measurements provide the following spaces per bed, viz. 2000 cubic feet of air space, 144 square feet of floor space, and 12 feet of wall space. The present total number of beds in the hospital is 36; the number of beds per acre is, therefore, about 14.

All the outer walls of the hospital wards are of hollow construction, the inner lining being of brick

plastered with "adamant" plaster, the outer of stone, with an air space between of three inches. All the internal corners of walls, floor, and ceiling are rounded, so as to prevent lodgment of dust. Woodwork has been sparingly used because of its absorptive character, and had it not been objected to by the Local Government Board, the floor would have been laid in granolithic instead of wood.

The offices consist of wash-house, laundry, ambulance shed, mortuary, and a small disinfecting chamber for the use of sulphurous-acid gas. Disinfection, however, by heat is more adequately provided for in a separate apartment by a Washington-Lyon Disinfector of the type formerly described. The heating and ventilation of the whole hospital are combined in one scheme, viz. by Key's system, already described. The air of the administrative block is changed six times, and of the isolation pavilions, eight times per hour, night and day, and the system is guaranteed to supply air at a uniform temperature of 62° Fahr.

The drainage system and sanitary fittings have been designed by Messrs. Thomson and Wright, sanitary engineers. The drain pipes are laid in straight lines, are of as small size as possible, and are provided with manholes and inspection openings at all angles and junctions. The drains of each block of buildings are entirely disconnected from one another and from the main drain, while the main drain is ventilated by the exhaust power of the heated air of the chimney stalk at the offices, by which a current of fresh air with a velocity of 700 feet per minute is passed through.

It will, therefore, be apparent that the hospital combines all the important modern improvements in con-

struction, with some points of novelty, and that in respect of ventilation and drainage arrangements it is in advance of many larger hospitals.

Glasgow Small-pox Hospital, Robroyston.—This hospital, which it is proposed to erect on part of the lands of Robroyston, which were bought by the Corporation for a variety of purposes, will be situated four miles from the centre of the city in a north-easterly direction. During the last twenty years the small-pox hospital has been accommodated in the same grounds as Belvidere Fever Hospital, but separated from the latter by a boundary wall, although in close proximity. In the new hospital, small-pox will alone be treated, and under circumstances of isolation which may be deemed practically perfect when considered from all points of view.

The area of land to be devoted to the hospital and its grounds amounts to 153½ acres, and may be deemed to be divided into three zones. The outermost zone, that of the space above named, is bounded merely by ordinary fences from the public roads. The middle zone, consisting of 57 acres around the hospital, and containing all the hospital buildings and sewage purification system, is separated from the outermost by a closed palisade of over 6 feet high. The inner zone, which encloses only the wards for the treatment of patients and contains 18½ acres, is also bounded by a palisade, distant on the average from the outer palisade by a space of 70 feet. The distance of any ward, save the isolation ward, from the nearest point of the outer palisade is not less than 130 feet, and from the nearest public road, 750 feet. The mortuary is distant 380 feet from the public road.

General Block Plan of Hospital and Accessory Build-

ings.—The following description will be easily followed by reference to Fig. 81. In the gate-lodge, a building of two storeys which guards the entrance, accommodation has been provided for the living-rooms and office of the gate-man, and for offices for the medical superintendent and house steward, as well as for clerks. Here the roadway divides. The right branch leads to (1) the clearing-house for patients; (2) the clearing-house or robing-rooms and baths for nurses; (3) the administrative block; (4) a row of separate blocks, viz. (*a*) day-workers' or cleaners' block, (*b*) kitchen and stores block, (*c*) male-workers' block, and (*d*) fire-station block; and (5) to the hospital pavilions and isolation pavilion. The left branch of the roadway leads to (1) stable block, (2) mortuary, from which an intersecting roadway leads to the wards, and (3) to the laundry and wash-houses block. In the grounds, at some distance north of the pavilions, is the sewage purification system—the bacterial system—which is composed of two septic tanks each of a capacity of 45,000 gallons, and eight sets of contact beds for primary and secondary contact. The capacities of tanks and contact beds have been devised for a hospital population of 1000 persons per day, each contributing 60 gallons of sewage per day, including rainfall. On the assumption that the contact beds will deal with three charges per day, the ratio of area of beds to volume of sewage will be one square foot to 4·68 gallons per day, or 14·04 gallons per day. The maximum volume of flow provided for before storm overflow comes into operation is 180,000 gallons per day, or three times the normal daily volume. When this amount is exceeded, the first overflow is accommodated in storm-water beds, which will deal with an equal volume to that named; but when the storm-water exceeds six times the initial

normal volume, a portion of it will pass through the second overflow into the small stream which receives the effluent. The effluent enters this stream, which runs into the river Kelvin.

Contact Beds.—The material used is hard, screened ashes. The depths of the different strata in the primary and secondary beds are as follows :—

PRIMARY BEDS. TOTAL DEPTH = 4 FEET 6 INCHES.

Lowest stratum, 1 foot 3 inches of $\frac{3}{4}$-inch ashes.
Middle stratum, 2 feet 3 inches of $\frac{1}{2}$ „ „
Upper stratum, 1 foot 0 inches of $\frac{1}{4}$ „ „

SECONDARY BEDS. TOTAL DEPTH = 4 FEET 6 INCHES.

Lowest stratum, 1 foot 3 inches of $\frac{1}{2}$-inch ashes.
Middle stratum, 1 foot 0 inches of $\frac{1}{4}$ „ „
Upper stratum, 2 feet 3 inches of $\frac{1}{8}$ „ „

Prevention of Out-borne Infection.—In addition to the usual measures adopted in all well-regulated small-pox hospitals to prevent the convection of infection directly to the outside, the following provisions have been made in the nurses' clearing-house to lessen further this possibility. It was felt that as in many hospitals the ward and out-of-door attire of nurses has to be kept together in their rooms, the possibility of communicating infection by nurses on leave was not entirely overcome. To prevent this, the arrangements of the clearing-house were devised as follows: One end of the building contains a series of eleven rooms for undressing, the centre, a series of baths, and the other end a series of re-dressing or robing-rooms. When a nurse is about to go out of the hospital on leave, she enters the first part of the clearing-

house in her ward attire, undresses in one of the undressing rooms, is provided by an attendant with a bath-gown, enters the bath-room, emerges therefrom on the other side of the building, enters a robing-room where her out-of-door attire is kept and where she dresses, and thereafter is fitted to leave the building. It is proposed to store in this building the out-of-door attire of all the nurses, so that the infected ward attire shall never be in contact with the former.

Wards.—The number of pavilions to be erected is twenty. From Fig. 81 it will be seen that the pavilions are marshalled in four rows of five each, the main direction of each pavilion being south-west. Only two rows of pavilions, however, are to be erected in the meantime. Each row is separated from the other by a distance of 100 feet, and the gable of one ward from the other by 50 feet. Each pavilion represents a separate ward, each containing a section for acute cases and another for convalescent cases, the proportion of beds of the former to the latter being ten to eight. Fig. 82 shows elevation and ground plans of the isolation pavilion which contains twelve beds only, separated into two sections of two rooms each for division of the sexes, these rooms, as seen in the ground plan, containing four and two beds respectively. The position of this pavilion is seen in Fig. 81, on the right in front of the rows of pavilions.

Ward Measurements.—The internal measurements of an ordinary pavilion are as follows: I. Acute Ward.—Length, 70 feet; width, 26 feet; height to ceiling-level, 14 feet; height to roof-ridge, 22 feet; number of windows, 10; window dimensions, 10 feet by 4 feet; total window space, 400 square feet; total floor area, 1820 square feet; cubic space per bed, 2500 cubic feet; ratio of window

space to floor space, 1 to $4\frac{1}{2}$; ratio of same to cubic space, 1 square foot to 63 cubic feet; space between beds from centre to centre, 14 feet; floor area per bed, 182 square feet. II. Convalescent Ward.—Cubic space per bed, and ratios of window space to floor and cubic spaces, are the same as in the ward for acute cases.

Structure of Wards.—The foundations are to be of brick, and the superstructure of walls of wood placed on brick foundations. There will be an air-space of four feet between the ground and floor-level. The wall framework will consist of wooden standards lined on each side with wood, or the inner wall of fibrous plaster.

Ventilation.—This is on the roof-ridge principle, five of Boyle's ventilators being placed on each roof.

Heating.—The Reck system is to be introduced; in addition, each ward will be provided with two central fireplaces with brick chimneys.

The Reck system combines the low-pressure hot-water and low-pressure steam-heating systems, and overcomes the disadvantages of both. The essential parts of apparatus in the system are (*a*) the steam boiler; (*b*) the "re-heater"; (*c*) the condenser; (*d*) the "circulator"; (*e*) the expansion tank; and (*f*) the circulatory pipes and radiators. This, like the ordinary hot-water system, is a closed system.

The following is a description of the installation:—The boiler in which steam is generated is automatically controlled, and only a low pressure of steam of about 5 lbs. pressure is needed to work the system. The steam generated in the boiler is used to heat the water in the circulatory pipes and radiators, and, in addition, to accelerate the velocity of circulation of the heated water therein. From the boiler, therefore, the steam enters by a pipe into a coil contained in the "re-heater"—a small

tank filled with water connected with the water-filled circulatory pipes—and thus its water-contents are heated. From the top part of the re-heater passes the rising circulatory pipe, or rising main hot-water pipe. The water of re-heater and rising main may be raised by the steam to a temperature of 185° Fahr. The rising main hot-water pipe, in rising upwards to the expansion tank, which is the highest point of the system, passes through the condenser, which is formed like a jacket round the pipe, and then through the "circulator" before reaching the expansion tank. From the top of the re-heater passes a steam-pipe to the circulator, which is placed below the expansion tank. The steam which is thrown into the circulator is broken by a diaphragm into small streams at the point of mixing with the ascending water, raises the temperature of the water in the up-rising pipe on its way to the expansion tank, and, being mixed with the water, on reaching the expansion tank is partly disengaged from the water into the upper levels of the tank, from which it escapes by a pipe leading down to the condenser, and being condensed there returns in a pipe to the lower part of the boiler by gravity. The object of the steam-pipe to the circulator is to give additional heat, and, therefore, impetus to the hot-water flow near the highest point of the system, where the flow is apt to be slowest. By the acceleration thus given to the flow where it is most needed, the difficulties met with in low-pressure hot-water systems of sluggish flow owing to length of pipes from, and to lack of height over, the boiler are overcome. From the bottom of the expansion tank, which is a steam-tight tank, passes the flow main-pipe of the hot-water apparatus, from which branches supply the various radiators. The return water of the system is brought back to the re-heater

by a main pipe, and thus the complete circulation of flow is made. The pipes used in the system are only half the diameter of those employed in ordinary low-pressure hot-water systems. The radiators, which may vary in size according to the amount of heat desired at the required points, are placed where they are wanted.

It is claimed for the system—a claim which is now well established—(1) that no water-supply cistern at the top of the building to feed the boiler is necessary, as the boiler can be fed directly from the water-main connection at the lower level; (2) that the risk of freezing of supply is thus reduced to a minimum; (3) that over-heating of boiler and explosion are absolutely impossible; (4) that the system being entirely automatic can be worked by an unskilled attendant; and (5) that it can be installed and maintained at less cost than ordinary systems. This system is at present being installed in the new Dispensary of the Western Infirmary, Glasgow.

When complete, the hospital pavilions for small-pox patients at Robroyston will accommodate 360 patients, and the isolation pavilion 12 patients, making in all 372 beds. The number of beds per acre reckoned on the entire hospital area is 2·4, but estimated on the acreage within the outer palisade, viz. 57 acres, is 6·5 beds per acre.

INDEX.

PAGE

Abdominal diseases and climate 315
Acetylene 77
Acquired habits and health 3, 134
Acrolein 77
Acts of Parliament relating to hygiene . . 7, 12, 16
Acts of Parliament—
Foods and Drugs Act . 344
Glasgow (Local) Acts . 16
Infectious Diseases (Prevention) Act . . 365, 367
Isolation (Hospitals) Act . 369
Notification of Infectious Diseases Act . . 339, 362
Public Health Acts 12, 336, 362
Rivers' Pollution (Prevention) Act . . . 278
Aerobic microbes . . 310, 354
Age in relation to health . 4
Air-borne disease . . . 338
Air amounts inspired . . 39
— and barometric pressure 33
— composition of . . 34
— — — expired . . 36
— elasticity of . . 33
— ground . . . 11
— humidity of . 75, 91
— impurities of . 29, 35, 41
— in relation to health 31, 40
— — — detection of . 41
— odour of foul . . 41
— of sewers and drains . 261
— properties of . . 31
— velocities of currents of 40
— weight of . . . 32
Albuminate foods . . 158, 159
Albumins 160
Albuminoids . . . 161

PAGE

Albuminoids food values of . 159
Albumoses 314
Alcohol . . 134, 169, 215
— kinds of . . . 216
Alcoholic beverages . . 211
— — abuse of . 133, 221
— — dietetic value of . 219
— — forms of . . 211
Alignment of drains . . 259
Altitudes and boiling-point . 94
— and dwellings . . 15
— and pressure . . 32
Ammonia, test for . 113, 115
— — — in water . 112
Anaerobic microbes . 311, 354
Analytical table for water . 114
Ankylostomiasis and water . 109
Anthrax 325
— inoculation against . 325
— microbe of . . . 325
Antiseptics 343
— their mode of action . 343
Arnot's chimney valve . . 56
Arrowroot 206
Arsenic in water, tests for . 117
Artesian wells, principles of . 100
Ash-pit refuse . . . 289
Athletic exercises and health 139
Atmosphere of drains and sewers 272
Atmospheric pressure 33, 95, 124
— — and boiling-point . 94
— — and effects on health . . 33
— — and raising of water 124
— — in pipes . . 266
Atrophy 38
Author's window ventilation . 52

Bacillus, etymology of . . 311

PAGE
Bacillus, kinds of . . . 311
Bacteria, etymology of . . 309
Bacterial sewage treatment . 280
Baking 202
— powders . . . 202
Banner's roof ventilators . 64
Bantingism 186
Barometer, aneroid . . 34
— mercurial . . . 32
— principles of . . 32
Basins, fittings of . . . 240
— hand . . 29, 240
— kinds of . . . 241
Bastian's theory of germ life . 307
Bath heaters . . . 238
— temperatures . . 91
Bathing 91
Bath-room, fittings of . . 237
— hygiene of . . . 28
— and infective diseases . 29
Baths, kinds of . . 91, 237
Beans 204
Béchamp's theory of germ diseases 307
Beef 132, 176
Beers 216
— how made . . 165, 216
— kinds of . . . 217
Berkefeldt filter . . . 120
Bodily energy and food . 137
Body clothing . . 291, 300
— — errors of . 298, 299
— — fabrics composing 292
— — of the sexes . . 298
Body, human . . 131, 137
— — composition of 96, 167, 183
— — food-changes in . 183
— — nutrition of 137, 158, 168, 172
Boiling-point . . 69, 83, 94
Boiling, purification of water by 118
Bond's thermohydric stove . 61
Boyle's chimney valve . . 57
— ventilators . . 56, 64
Brandy 214
Bread 202
— rye 202
— unleavened . . 202
— wheaten . . 202
Brewing . . . 165, 216
PAGE
Buchan's chimney valve . 57
— inspection pipe . . 261
— traps . . . 242, 264
— ventilators . . 56, 64
Building regulations . 16, 354
Butter 192
— making . . . 192
— milk . . 181, 191, 196
— substitutes . . . 193

Caffeine 170
Calibration of thermometer . 82
Canadian school stove . . 61
Canned meats, risks from . 133
Carbohydrates . . . 164
— food-value of . . 166
Carbon monoxide gas . . 79
Carbonic acid gas . . 35, 37, 73
— — — and effects on health 39, 41
— — — in expired air 35, 39, 40
— — — in foul air 37, 41
— — — in fresh air . 35
— — — in ground air 11
— — — mode of detecting 42
Casein . . . 161, 162, 189
Caseinogen 189
Catalepsy 149
Cellulose 165
Celsius' thermometer . 83, 84
Centigrade ,, . 83, 84
Cereals as food . . . 201
Chaddock window . . 51
Chamberland filter . . 120
Cheese 177, 193
— kinds of . . . 194
— making . . . 193
Chicken-pox 332
Chicory 227
Chimney valves . . . 56
— as ventilator . 47, 56
Chloride of lime . . . 345
Chlorides in water . 112, 113
— — — tests for 113, 114
Chlorine gas . . 344, 346, 359
Chocolate . . . 223, 228
Cholera 317
— a water-borne disease 108, 318
— epidemics of . 109, 318

PAGE
Cholera, of fowls . . . 311
— microbe of . . . 318
Churning 193
Cider 218
Cisterns, flush . . . 253
— pollution of . . 128
Clark's process for softening water 105
Clay 8, 10
Clayey soils . . . 10, 11
Cleanliness of the food . . 132
— — — home . 130, 133
— — — person . . 131
Clinical thermometer . 82, 87
Climate, factors of . 296, 315
— and clothing . . 296
— and diseases . . 315
— and food . 163, 166, 171
Clothing in relation to health 291
— behaviour of, to perspiration . . . 294
— of children . . . 298
— colours of . . . 295
— disinfection of . . 349
Clothing materials . . 292
— of the sexes . . 299
— permeability of . . 293
— thermic properties of . 294
— uses and values of . 291
— water-absorptive capacity of 293
Clothing in different climates 296
Coca 170, 229
Cocoa 170, 227
— composition of . . 228
— food-value of . . 228
Coffee 170, 226
— effects of . . 219, 226
Colds 319
Colour of cloth fabrics in relation to heat . . . 295
Colour of cloth fabrics in relation to dust . . . 296
Combustion in grates . . 72
Comma bacillus of cholera 311, 318
Communicable diseases of animals . . 305, 334
— — causal factors of . 305
— — of man . . 305
Condensation . . . 94
Condiments 222
Conduction of heat . . 70
PAGE
Conductivity . . . 70
Confectionery . . . 210
Conservancy systems . . 287
Contact beds . 282, 284, 386
Contagion, nature of . 22, 312
Contagious diseases . . 335
Convection of heat . 67, 70
Cooking . . . 95, 132
Copper in water, tests for . 117
Corrosion in soil pipe 258, 277, 289
— — boilers . . . 104
Corrosive sublimate 277, 289, 345, 359, 361
Cotton in clothing . . 292
Courtyard gullies . . . 244
Cowls 63, 65
Cows and tuberculosis . . 327
Cowpox, microbe of . . 311
Cream 192, 196
— cheese . . . 194
— Devonshire . . 196
Cretinism and water supply . 110
Cubic space, measurement of 36
— — in isolation hospitals . 37, 375, 382, 388
Cubic space in schools . . 6
— — relative to ventilation 5, 22
Cubic spaces, statutory . . 6, 7
Curds 192

Damp, house . . 3, 15, 18
— proof courses . . 17
Death-rates and density . 5
Density of population and health 3
Deodorants 342
— their mode of action . 343
Dextrine 164
Dextrose 209
Diabetes 182
Diarrhœal diseases from water 108
Diastase 203
Dicksee's patent . . . 252
Diet 169, 171
— proximate principles of 173
Dietaries 171
— calculation of . . 179
— standard . . . 179
Diffusion of gases . . 44
Diphtheria 320
— causal factor of . . 320

PAGE
Diphtheria genesis of . 320
— toxins of . . 314, 321
Diplococcus 311
Dipsomania 135
Dipstone trap . . . 263
Disinfectants, chemical . 289, 343
— natural . . 277, 353
— strengths of . 343, 345
— table of efficient . . 345
Disinfection . . . 341, 342
— aerial 358
— by chemicals 343, 358, 360
— — heat . . . 347
— of clothing . . 349, 357
— French mode of . . 361
— German mode of . . 361
Disinfection of dead body . 365
— — dust of room 358, 360
— — excretory products 289, 354
— — house drain . . 277
— — patient . . 356
Disinfectors, steam . 347, 383
— Manlove and Alliott's 348
— Reck's . . . 350
— Thresh's . . . 350
— working of . . 349, 351
— — house refuse 288, 289
Disposal of night soil . 234, 290
— — sewage . . 278
Distillation, in nature . . 96
— as a means of water supply 97
Distillation, purification of water by . . . 120
Disuse of traps . . . 267
Domestic cleanliness . . 130
Doulton and Co.'s water closets 249
— — — closets . 249, 255
— — — metallo-keramic joint . 249
— — — "Simplicitas," 249
— — — trough . . 252
— — — valve . . 249
— — — wash-down . 249
— — — water heater for baths . . . 238
Doulton and Co.'s waste and overflow patent . . 240
Drains and drain-testing . 273
— conditions of good . 261
— disinfection of . . 277
PAGE
Drains, laying of . . . 259
— plan of 276
— testing of . . . 273
Drainage of house . 15, 27, 234
Dreaming 148
Dress 298
— errors of . . . 299
— for nurses on duty . 302
— in different climates . 296
Dry-rot 19
Dunfermline Isolation Hospital 381
Dust, composition of . 131, 155
Dusting, modes of . . 131
Duties of nurse . . . 81
Dysentery and impure water . 108

Earth and infective microbes 287, 290
Earth closets . . . 287
Effluvium 312
Eggs 177, 198
— cooking of . . . 198
— digestibility of . . 199
— food-value of . . 198
Elbow-room 5, 20
Energy and heat 66, 170, 231, 291
— muscular . . 180, 233
Endemic disease . . . 305
Enteric fever . . . 313
— — and impure water 108, 316
— — microbe of . . 316
— — and milk . 287, 316
— — from sewer air . 245, 273, 305
— — and climatic conditions 316
Epidemic disease . . . 305
Erysipelas 321
— causes of . . . 321
— microbe of . . . 321
Examination of water . 106, 114
Excretion and waste . 174, 182
Exercise and health . . 137
— effect of, on excretions 138
Expectoration and phthisis . 327
Experimental ventilation . 47

Fahrenheit scale . . . 85
— thermometer . . 83
Farms and milk supplies . 287
Farmyard sanitation . . 287

PAGE
Fats 162, 200
— animal . . . 163
— composition of 162, 163, 201
— vegetable . . . 163
Fatty foods 189
Fermentation by microbes . 165
— by yeast . 165, 211, 217
Filtering media . . 118, 120
Filters, kinds and values of . 119
Filtration of water supplies . 118
— intermittent downward 280
Finkler-Prior microbe . . 318
Fireplace ventilation . . 46
Fires, coal and gas . . 71
Fittings of basins . 28, 235, 240
— of baths . 28, 235, 237
— of sinks . 28, 235, 242
— of soil-pipe system 28, 235, 244
— of water closets 28, 235, 245
— sanitary . . 28, 234
— waste water 28, 235, 237
Flannelette 299
Flesh foods . . 132, 186, 188
Floor-space 36
Floors, ventilation of ground 19
Flour 202
Fogs 29, 36, 73
Fomites 312
Food accessories . . . 169
— canned . . . 133
— cooking of . 95, 132
— parasitic diseases of . 132
— uses of . . . 159
Foods 158, 186
— characteristics of . 186
— classification of . . 158
— composition of . . 176
— mineral salts in . 167, 201
— proximate principles of 158
Food-taking 181
— and bodily energy 137, 231
— rationale of . . 181
Foot-and-mouth disease . 306
— — — — microbe of 311
Foot gear 301
Formaldehyde . . . 360
Formalin 360
— disinfection by . . 360
Foundations of houses . 14, 17
Fowl cholera . . . 311
— — microbe of . . 311

PAGE
Freezing-point . . 85, 86, 92
French House of Deputies, ventilation of . . 60
Friedlander and pneumonia . 322
Frost and pipes . . 94, 243
Fruits, food-value of . . 209
— preserved . . 208, 223
— table 208
Fuels 73
Fungi, edible . . . 224
Furs 292
Fyfe and Dobson's drain-testing machine . . 275

Gaffky-Eberth microbe . . 316
Galactose . . . 194, 209
Galton's stove . . . 61
Galvanic action of metals . 258
Gamaleia and pneumonia . 322
Gases of atmosphere . . 34
— of drains and sewers . 272
— laws of . . 44, 46
Gas stoves 76
Gathering-ground of water supplies 100
Gelatin 162
George's calorigen . . . 61
Germs 309
Germicides . . . 343, 353
— effective . . . 344
— how to use . . . 345
Gin 218
Glanders 325
— microbe of . . . 325
— relation to man of . 325
Glucose . . . 164, 209
Glutin 162
Glycogen 164
Goître, causes of . . . 110
Gout 135, 306
Gradient indicator . . 259
Graduation of thermometer . 83
Grates, consumption of fuel in 73
— kinds of . . 72, 73
Gravitation, water supply by 127
Grease traps 242
Ground-air 12
— water 12
Gully traps . . . 244, 269
Gymnastic exercises . . 140

Habits in relation to health 3, 130

PAGE
Habit, occupational . . 134
— vicious . 3, 130, 133
Hair and disease . . 303, 326
Hardness of water . . 102
— — — causes of . 103
— — — and soap . 102
— — — temporary and permanent . . . 103
Hatton's ventilators . 53, 56
Head-gear 299
Heat in relation to health 65, 78
— conservation of . . 65
— as a disinfectant . . 347
— distribution of . . 65
— measurement of . . 81
— modes of propagation of . . . 67
— physical phenomena of 67
— radiant . . 69, 72
— sources of . . 29, 72
— — — artificial 29, 65
Heating of buildings . . 71
— by hot water . . 78
— by open fires . . 71
— by Reck system . . 388
— by steam . . . 80
— by stoves . . 74, 76
— of hospitals . 78, 375
— of rooms . . 29, 71
Hereditary habits . . . 135
Heredity and health . . 134
Hillhead School, ventilation . 61
Hinckes-Bird window ventilation . . . 50, 52
Hints to householders . . 286
Hobbies and health . . 142
Holidays 142
Home, cleanliness of the . 133
Honey 210
Honeyman's Somerset trap . 263
Horses and glanders . . 325
Hospitals and infection . 329
— isolation . . . 369
— smallpox . . . 329
Hot-water coils . . . 81
— — pipes . . 72, 80
House of Commons, ventilation of . . . 48, 61
House, dampness . . 17, 18
— damp-proof courses . 17
— drainage . . 27, 235
— exposure of . . 14
PAGE
House, foundations . 14, 17
— general sanitation of 1, 26, 235
— sites of . . 2, 14
— ventilation of . . 29
House drain . . . 235, 259
— — alignment of . 259
— — atmosphere . . 261
— — bed of . . . 259
— — essentials of . . 261
— — gradients . . 259
— — inspection of . 260
— — obstruction . . 260
— — pipes . . . 260
Howorth's ventilators . . 64
Humboldt 66
Humidity of atmosphere 75, 91
Humus 8, 10
Hydraulic drain test . . 274
Hydrometer, principles of . 125
Hygiene, general principles of 1
— of nursery . . . 25
— of sick-room . . 22
Hypertrophy . . . 137
Hypnotism 147

Idiosyncrasies . . . 149
Impurities of air . . 35, 39
— — water . . . 108
— — — detection of 113, 114
Incrustation of boilers . . 104
Incubation 330
— table of periods of 331, 332
India-rubber goods as clothing 292
Infant-feeding . . . 196
Infection 312
Infectious diseases . 22, 304
— — causal factors of . 306
— — law relating to 336, 362
— — modes of spread 3, 334
— — prevention of . 338
Infective discharges . 345, 355
— matter, characteristics of . 312, 330
— — convection of 312, 364
— — names of . . 312
— — nature of . 22, 312
— — disinfection of 342, 347
Infectivity . . . 330, 332
— table of durations of . 333

PAGE
Influenza 318
— and climate . . 318
— microbe of . . . 318
Inoculation 338
Inosite 165
Insects and contagion . 335, 336
Insomnia 146
Intemperance . . . 221
Intermittent downward filtration 280
Invasion in disease . 330, 332
Irrigation of sewage . . 279
Iron in water . . . 117
Isinglass 161
Isolation of infective sick 339, 340
Isolation hospitals . . 369
— — Dunfermline . 381
— — heating of . 375, 388
— — incidence of accommodation in . 373
— — lighting of . . 375
— — Robroyston, Glasgow . . 385
— — Ruchill, Glasgow . 374
— — situation, site and area . . . 370
— — size to population 369
— — statutory requirements of . . 371
— — ventilation of . 379
— — ward spaces . 38, 373
— — wards . . . 376
— — window space . 374

Jennings' closets . . . 252
Jewish hygiene . . . 130

Key's system of ventilation . 58
Kitchen sinks . . . 242
Klebs and malaria . . 323
Klebs-Löffler microbe . . 320
Klein and pneumonia . . 322
Koch and anthrax . . 325
— and diphtheria . . 320
— comma bacillus . . 318
Koch's test-rules for microbic diseases 308
Kola 170, 228
Koumiss 165

Lactometer 126

PAGE
Lakes as water supplies 97, 99
Lard 200
Laundry-workers and infection 317
Laycock and diphtheria . 320
Laveran's corpuscles . . 323
Law, sanitary . . 336, 362
Lead in water . 100, 111, 117
Leather as clothing . . 292
Legumes 204
Lentils 204
— cooking of . . . 205
Leprosy 323
— its habitats . . 323
— microbe of . . . 323
"Levern" siphonic closet . 250
Levulose 209
Lighting of hospitals . . 375
— — rooms . . . 29
— artificial, and air-fouling 39
Lime in water . . . 103
— — — tests for 103, 114
Lime-juice 167
Lime-water test . . . 42
Linen clothing . . . 292
Liqueurs 218
Loamy soils 8, 10
Lockjaw 311
Löfffler and diphtheria . . 320
Lunge-Zeckendorff apparatus 42

Macaroni 203
Magnesia in water, tests for . 114
Maize 204
Malaria 323
— habitats of . . . 323
— micro-parasites of . 324
Malignant pustule . . 325
Maltose 165
Manholes of sewers . . 275
Marchiafava and malaria . 323
Margarine 193
— manufacture of . . 193
Marriage in relation to health 135
Meal, oat . . 173, 196, 202
— wheaten . . . 202
Measles . . . 314, 319
— and climate . . 314
— German . . . 313
— microbe of . . . 314
Meats 132, 186

PAGE

Meat-extracts . . . 188
— food-value of . . 188
Membranous croup . . 363
Merulius lachrymans . . 19
Metallo-keramic joint . . 256
Miasma 312
Microbes . . . 306, 309
— action on body of . 313
— forms of . . . 311
— in air . . . 36, 309
— in sewer . . 235, 273
— names of . . . 308
— natural history of 308, 310
— propagation of . . 312
— seats of activity in body of 313
— size of . . . 310
— their place and power . 309
Microbic theories . . . 306
— — of Bastian . . 307
— — of Béchamp . . 307
— — of Pasteur . . 307
Micro-organisms . 307, 309, 353
Micro-coccus 311
Micro-parasites . . . 308
Microphyta 309
Microzoaria 309
Microzyma 309
Milk 189
— and infective disease 287, 337
— clean 190
— composition of . . 189
— condensed . . 191, 197
— desiccated . . . 192
— dietetic value of . . 195
— how to sterilise . 337, 338
— human . . 189, 195
— humanised . . . 197
— microbes of . 162, 190
— of animals . . . 189
— Pasteurised . . 337
— separated . . . 192
— skimmed . . . 192
— sour . . 189, 191, 196
— specific gravity of . 191
— sugar of . . . 194
— tuberculosed . . 327
Milking of cows . . . 190
Mineral salts . 110, 168, 201
Momentum 267
Moore's ventilators . 53, 55
Mortuaries 365

PAGE

Mosaic sanitation . . 130, 132
Mosquitoes and diseases 316, 323, 336
Mosses, as foods . . . 224
Moss-Flower's indicator . 259
Mumps 306
Mutton . . . 163, 176

Nerve-stimulants . 169, 224, 229
Nessler's test . . . 113
Nitrates in water . . 115, 116
Nitrogen of air . . . 34
Notification of Infectious Diseases Act . . . 339
Nurse, dress of . . 302, 386
Nursery, hygiene of . . 24
Nursing of infective cases . 4, 21
Nutrition, bodily 137, 158, 168, 172

Oatmeal . . . 202, 203
Oats . . . 196, 202, 204
Occupations in relation to health . . . 134, 150
Occupations, disabilities from 156
— diseases of . . 151, 154
— habits of . . . 134
— kinds of . . . 151
Occupational mortality . . 153
Odour in water . . . 107
Oertel and diphtheria . . 320
Oils as food 200
— cod liver . . . 201
— cotton-seed . . 201
— olive 200
Oil stoves 77
Oleometer 126
Ophthalmia, contagious . 306
Organic acids in food . . 166
Organic matter in air . 36, 39, 41
— — — water 112, 113, 116
Over-exercise, effects of . . 139
Oxygen of atmosphere . . 35
— in water . . . 106
Ozone 34

Pan closet 247
Pandemic diseases . . 306
Pantry sinks . . . 242
Papin's digester . . . 95
Paraformaldehyde . . 360
Parasites of water . . . 109

PAGE
Parasites of food . . . 132
Particulate matter in air . 35
Pasteur and anthrax . . 325
Pasteur's theory . . . 307
Pasteur-Chamberland filter . 120
Pastry 202
Peas 204
Peaty soils 9
— — and lead in water 100, 111
— — water from . 100, 111
Pectin 165
Pectose 165
Perflation 62
Permeability of soils . . 9
Perry 218
Personal habits and health 3, 310
Phosphates in water . . 116
Phthisis, contagiousness of . 326
— infectivity of . . 326
— microbe of . . . 326
— provisions against . 326
— sputum of . . . 327
— tubercular . . . 326
Physical appearances of water 106
"Pink-eye," 318
Plans of drains . . . 276
Plenum system of ventilation 46, 58
Pleuro-pneumonia . . 322
Pneumatic drain-test . . 275
Pneumonia, epidemic . . 322
— microbe of . . . 322
Pollution of rivers . . 99
— — water . . . 102
Population, density of . . 3
Pore-volume 9
Porosity of clothing . . 293
— — soils . . . 9
Porridge, oatmeal . . 173, 203
Potable waters . . . 99
Potatoes . . . 167, 206
Poultry, flesh of . . . 186
Precipitation treatment of sewage 279
Pressure, barometric . . 31
Preventable diseases . . 304
Preventive medicine . 1, 304
Propagation of heat . . 67
Prophylaxis 338
Proteid foods . . . 159
— — animal . . 159
PAGE
Proteid foods, classes of . 160
— — food-value of . 159
— — vegetable . . 160
Protista 309
Protophyta 309
Protozoa 309
Puerperal fever . . 30, 322
— — and insanitation 29, 322
— — disinfection in . 322
— — microbe of . . 322
Pulmonary diseases and climate 315
Pump, principles of the common 122
Purification of water . . 118

Quarantine, etymology of . 333
— modern practice of . 339

Rabies 322
Radiant heat, properties of 68, 72
Radiation 69
Radiators 79
Rainfall of British Islands . 102
Rain water . . . 97, 102
— — conductors . 235, 244
Réaumur's thermometer . 85
Reck disinfectors . . . 350
— system of heating . 388
Recreation 142
Relapsing fever . . . 311
— — epidemic of . . 317
— — microbe of . . 317
Relaxation 141
Rennet 189
Reservoirs and water supply . 100
Rest 140
Retaining houses . . . 340
Reverie 148
Rheumatism 306
Rickets . . . 168, 173, 306
Rivers as water supplies 97, 99
Rivers' Pollution (Prevention) Act 278
Robroyston Smallpox Hospital 384
Roof-ridge ventilators . . 62
Rooms for sick nursing . 4, 21, 29
— heating of . . . 30
— lighting of . . . 30
— ventilation of . 23, 45
Ross and malaria . . . 323

PAGE
Rötheln 313
Ruchill Hospital . . . 379
Rum 210,218

Saccharometer . . . 126
Sago 207
Sanitary law of infective diseases . . . 336, 362
Sanitary fittings of house . 235
Sanitation of farmyards . 287
Saturation-point . . . 75
Scarlet fever 312
— — and climate . . 315
— — microbe of . . 312
Schizomycetes . . . 309
School spaces . . . 6
Schools and infective diseases 334, 364
— heating of . . . 78
— Hillhead . . . 58
— ventilation of . 58, 60, 61
Scurvy 166, 306
Seal of traps 263
Seasons and disease . . 315
Septic tank 281
Sewage, disposal of . . 278
Sewage, bacterial methods of 280, 386
— broad irrigation . . 279
— downward filtration . 280
— precipitation . . 279
— purification . . 279
Sewers, air and gases of . 272
— and disease . . . 272
— ventilation of . . 275
Shallow wells, waters from 100, 102
Shanks and Co.'s "Aseptic" basin 241
Shanks and Co.'s combination closet 254
Shanks and Co.'s "Levern" siphonic closet . . 250
Shanks and Co.'s patent waste and overflow . . . 240
Sheringham valve . . 55
Sick-room, disinfection of . 23
— — requirements of 4, 20, 29
— — slops . . 21, 29
— — spaces of . 5, 7, 21
— — temperatures 23, 87, 89
— — ventilation of 23, 49
Silk as clothing . . . 292
Sinks, kitchen . . . 242

PAGE
Siphon, kinds of . . . 124
— principles of . . 125
Siphonic closets . . . 249
Siphoning of traps 27, 264, 265
Sites, healthy . . . 2, 14
— hospital . . . 370
Sleep and allied conditions . 143
— causation of . . 144
Slop closets 255
Small-pox . . . 313, 328
— and climate . . 315
— disinfection of 354, 357, 386
— hospital . . 370, 384
— microbe of . . . 313
Smith's test for CO_2 . . 42
Smoke cause of fogs . . 73
— consumption of . . 73
— in cities . 37, 73, 354
— test of drains . . 274
Soap, composition of . . 103
— effect of waters on . 10
Softening of water . 104, 120
Soil-pipe atmosphere . . 272
Soil-pipe system 26, 235, 244, 257
— — — fittings and connections . . 26, 256
Soils 8, 15
— and houses . . . 12
— characters of . . 8
— clay 8, 10
— colour of . . . 11
— heat-absorbing power of 11
— humus . . . 8, 10
— loam 8
— organic matter in . 11
— organisms in . . 13
— peaty 9
— permeability of . . 9
— porosity of . . . 9
— polluted . . . 12
— sandy . . . 8
— water-capacity of . 10
Somnambulism . . . 148
Space amounts . . 6, 7, 38
— cubic and superficial 5, 20, 36
— how to measure . . 37
Specific gravity . . . 126
Spices 169, 222
Spirillum, forms of . . 311
— Obermeierii . . 317
Splenic fever . . . 325

PAGE
Spores 312
Springs 98
Staphylococcus 311
Starchy foods . 164, 177, 201
— — composition of . 164, 177, 202
— — food-value of . 166
Steam pipes 80
— — and air-warming . 80
Sterilisation of water and milk 118, 338
Stimulants . 169, 211, 224, 229
Stoves, coal and gas . 74, 76
— Galton's . . . 63
— ventilating . . . 63
"Strangers' cold" of St. Kilda 319
Streets, formation of . . 16
Streptococcus . . . 311
Sucroses 164
Sugars 164, 209
— cane 209
— dietetic value of . . 210
— grape 209
— maple . . . 209
— of milk . . 194, 209
Sulphates in water, tests for . 115
Sulphides in water, tests for . 115
Sulphur dioxide gas . . 358
— — — how to disinfect with . . . 358
Sulphur dioxide gas, liquefied 358
Swine fever 311
— — microbe of . . 311

Tables of—
Analysis of water . 114 *et seq.*
Bath temperatures . . 92
Comparative mortalities from occupations . 153, 154
Cubic and superficial spaces 6, 7
Disabilities from occupations 157
Disinfectants . . . 345
Food compositions . 176 *et seq.*
Incubation periods . 331, 332
Infective periods . . 333
School spaces . . . 6
Standard diets . . . 179
Temperatures of sickness and health . . . 88
Thermometric scales . 84, 85

PAGE
Talamon and pneumonia . 322
Talmud and flesh meat . . 132
Tapioca 207
Taste of waters . . . 106
Tea 169, 225
— abuse of . . 134, 220
— composition of . . 225
— effects of . 219, 225, 230
— infusion of . . . 225
— kinds 169
— Paraguay . . . 229
Temperance 220
Temperature, definition of . 67
— how to register . . 81
— of baths . . . 91
— of human body . 66, 88
— of nursery . . . 24
— of rooms . . 23, 89
— of sick . . 83, 88
Tests for impurities in water 112 *et seq.*
— — — in air . . 43
Testing of house drainage . 273
Tetanus 311
— action of microbe of . 314
Tetracoccus 311
Theine 170
Theobromine . . . 170
Thermometers . . 81, 82
— calibration of . . 82
— graduation of . . 83
— how made . . . 82
— kinds and uses of 82, 89
— scale ranges . 82, 87
— wet and dry bulb . 89
Thresh's disinfector . . 351
Tobin's tube 55
Tommasi-Crudelli and malaria 323
Town supplies of water . . 128
Toxins 314
Trap, conditions of a good . 270
Traps . . 27, 237, 261, 269
— Buchan's . . 264, 268
— causes of failure of . 265
— dipstone . . . 263
— experimental . . 262
— grease . . . 242
— gully 244
— intercepting . . 259
— siphon . . . 269
— siphoning of . . 266
— Somerset . . . 263

PAGE
Traps, use of . . . 261
— ventilation of . . 262
Treacle 210
Tuberculosed milk and infant feeding 327
Tuberculosed milk, how to sterilise 337
Tuberculosis 326
— Commissions on . . 326
— disinfection of . . 328
— microbe of . . . 326
— of animals . . . 326
— of flesh meat . . 326
— of man . . . 326
— prevention of . . 328
Tyndall and microbes . . 307
Typhus fever . 132, 316, 329
— and climatic conditions 316
— infective matter of . 316

Urinometer, how to use . 126

Vacuum method of ventilation 45, 58, 65
Veal 187
Vegetable matter in water . 100
Vegetables 207
— composition of . 178, 207
— food-value of . . 208
Vegetarianism . . . 230
Velocities of air in ventilation 41
Venereal diseases . . . 306
Ventilation . . . 24, 29, 38
— artificial . . . 45
— by chimney . . 56
— by extraction . 45, 58, 60
— by wall-openings . 55
— by window . . . 48
— experimental . . 46
— Key's system of . 58, 377
— mechanical . . 45, 57
— natural . . . 44
— of floors . . . 19
— of French House of Deputies . . . 60
— of hospitals . 56, 376
— of House of Commons . 60
— of rooms . . 29, 40, 45
— of schools . . 58, 60
— outlets and inlets 52, 55
— plenum mode of . 58, 376
— principles of . 29, 38

PAGE
Ventilation of Birmingham new Infirmary . . 378
Ventilation of Dunfermline Hospital . . . 383
Ventilation of Victoria Infirmary, Glasgow . 58, 377
Ventilation and warming . 57
— of floors . . . 19
— of sewers . . 275, 383
— of soil-pipe . . . 268
Ventilators, roof-ridge, mode of action of . . . 62
Ventilators, Banner's . 56, 64
— Buchan's . . 56, 64
— Boyle's . . 56, 64
Ventilators, Howorth's . . 64
Vermicelli 203
Vicious habits and health 3, 132, 154
Vinegar 222
Virus 312

Wakes and infection . . 365
Wards, accommodation in . 373
— construction of . . 373
— heating of . . . 375
— hospital . . . 373
— lighting of . . . 375
— spaces of . . 37, 374
— ventilation of . . 376
Warming of buildings . 60, 71
Wash basins 240
Wash-down closet . . 248
Washington-Lyon disinfector 383
Wash-out closet . . . 248
Waste-water fittings . 26, 235
— — pipe . 26, 235, 243
— — system . 27, 237
Water, analysis . . . 114
— boiling of . . . 94
— carriage system of sewage . . . 234
— characters of wholesome . . . 106
— chemical composition of . . . 93, 100
— colour of . . . 106
— contamination of 102, 107
— detection of impurities in 112
— distribution of 96, 122, 128
— effects of impure . . 108

PAGE

Water, filtration of . 99, 118
— flush for closets . . 253
— freezing of . . 94
— heater for baths . . 238
— in relation to health 93, 96
— lock of traps . . 263
— modes of supply of . 122
— physical phenomena of 92
— purification of . . 118
— seal of traps . . 263
— softness and hardness of . . 100, 102, 120
— sources of . . 96, 98
— subsoil . . 12, 17, 97
— supplies . 96, 98, 100
— — of various cities . 128
Water closets . . . 245
— — apartment . . 245
— — characters of a good 252
— — cisterns . . 253
— — cleansing of . . 252
— — flush . . 246, 249
— — hopper . 246, 249
— — "Levern" . . 250
— — pan . . . 247
— — pedestal . . 249
— — siphonic . . 249
— — trough . . . 252
— — valve . . . 246
— — ventilation of . 245
— — wash-out . . 249
— — wash-down . . 249
Watery vapour . . . 75
Wells 97, 100
Wells, artesian . . . 100
— deep 100
— kinds of . . . 100
— nature of water supplies from . . 101
— pollution of 102, 112, 118
— pump 123
— shallow . . . 100
Wet and dry bulb thermometer 89
Whey 192
Whisky 214
— how made . . . 215
Whooping-cough . . . 318
— — mortality of . 318
Wind, movement of . . 62
Window ventilation . . 48
Wine 211
— how made . . . 211
— kinds of . . 213, 214
Wool as clothing . 292, 297, 298
Wool-sorters' disease . . 325
Work in relation to health . 138
Workshop spaces . . . 7

Yeast and fermentation 165, 211, 217
Yellow fever 316
— — distribution of . 316
— — influence of climate in 317

Zinc in water, tests for . . 117
Zymotic diseases . . 315 *et seq.*

THE END

WELLCOME LIBRARY INSTITUTE

Printed by R. & R. Clark, Limited, *Edinburgh.*

CATALOGUE

OF

E. & S. LIVINGSTONES'

MEDICAL

PUBLICATIONS, &c.

15 Teviot Place,

EDINBURGH.

PUBLICATION

OF

Medical and Scientific Works.

THE SUBSCRIBERS are prepared to undertake the Publication of MEDICAL and SCIENTIFIC WORKS on terms advantageous to Authors.

The rapid sale of Works hitherto placed in their hands enables them to guarantee a favourable reception in the Profession, and by the Trade at home and abroad.

The Printing of their Publications is carried on within their own premises, thereby saving unnecessary expense, and receiving more careful attention.

E. & S. LIVINGSTONE,

MEDICAL AND SCIENTIFIC PUBLISHERS,

EDINBURGH.

Price £2 : 2s. Super-Royal Folio, Cloth.

The Topographical Anatomy of the Child

By JOHNSON SYMINGTON, M.D.,

F.R.S.E., F.R.C.S.E.,

Professor of Anatomy, Queen's College, Belfast; formerly Lecturer on Anatomy, School of Medicine, and Examiner in Anatomy, University of Edinburgh.

Illustrated by 14 beautiful and correctly Coloured Plates (nearly all of which are life size) and 33 Woodcuts.

Price 4s. 6d. net.

The Conservative Treatment of Tubercular Joint Disease and Cold Abscess

AS CARRIED OUT AT BRESLAU BY

Prof. J. von MIKULICZ, LL.D.Edin.

BY

Dr A. HENLE,

Chief Assistant at the Surgical Klinik, Breslau.

With PREFACE by Professor J. von MIKULICZ.

TRANSLATED FROM THE GERMAN BY

CHARLES W. CATHCART, F.R.C.S.,

Senior Assistant Surgeon, Royal Infirmary, Edinburgh.

'We regard this as a most important contribution to the literature of a most important department of surgery. Every practising surgeon should learn for himself what the modes of treatment are which find favour with Professor Mikulicz in a domain wherein he ranks as an authority of no undeniable weight. In this handsomely bound and well printed octavo, he will find discussed the "congestion" treatment, the "orthopædic" treatment, the "iodoform" treatment, and all the other preliminary methods of avoiding the more advanced procedures of erasion, excision, &c., which may be employed before sacrificing a whole limb. We strongly recommend this volume to the attention of every practitioner.'—*The Medical Press*

Third Edition, in Two vols., price 18s.

ILLUSTRATED WITH 238 USEFUL ENGRAVINGS.

Applied Anatomy

BY

JOHN M'LACHLAN, M.D., B.Sc., F.R.C.S.E., &c.

The Book includes what is usually known as—

1. SURGICAL ANATOMY. 2. MEDICAL ANATOMY.
3. OPERATIVE SURGERY.

USED AS A TEXT-BOOK IN THE PRINCIPAL UNIVERSITIES & MEDICAL COLLEGES.

Second Edition, price 12s. net.

Elementary Textbook of Zoology

BY

ARTHUR T. MASTERMAN,

M.A.(Cantab.), D.Sc.(Lond. and St And.), F.R.S.E.,

LECTURER ON ZOOLOGY AND BIOLOGY IN THE SCHOOL OF MEDICINE OF THE ROYAL COLLEGES, EDINBURGH; EXAMINER IN BIOLOGY TO THE ROYAL COLLEGE OF PHYSICIANS, EDINBURGH, ETC.

PROFUSELY ILLUSTRATED.

Price 4s. net.

Handbook of Public Health

BY JOHN ORR,

M.D., F.R.C.P.E., M.R.C.S.(Eng.).

Just Published, price 15s. net.

Profusely Illustrated.

A TEXT-BOOK

OF

Medical Jurisprudence, Toxicology

AND

Public Health

BY

JOHN GLAISTER, M.D.,

D.P.H.(Camb.), F.R.S.E.,

Professor of Forensic Medicine and Public Health in the University of Glasgow.

'Taking this work as a whole we can unhesitatingly pronounce it to be one of the best text-books dealing with Medical Jurisprudence, Toxicology, and Public Health which we have met with. It is well written throughout, the information contained in it is full and accurate without being redundant, and the illustrations are appropriate and well executed. We can cordially recommend it to medical practitioners and students, and also to members of the legal profession who will find therein a useful guide in a class of cases which are often perplexing to the legal mind.'—*Lancet.*

Demy 8vo, price 4s. 6d. net.

Vaccination Eruptions:

ORIGINAL RESEARCH

By THOMAS DOBSON POOLE, M.D.,

Master in Surgery, University of Edinburgh; Fellow of the Obstetrical Society.

Just Published, price 10s. 6d. net.

PROFUSELY ILLUSTRATED.

HUSBAND'S
Forensic Medicine, Toxicology and Public Health

Seventh Edition, Revised and Enlarged

By R. J. M. BUCHANAN,

M.D., B.Ch.(Vict.); M.R.C.P.Lond.; M.R.C.S.Eng.;

ASSISTANT LECTURER ON FORENSIC MEDICINE AND TOXICOLOGY IN THE UNIVERSITY OF LIVERPOOL;
ASSISTANT HONORARY PHYSICIAN TO THE LIVERPOOL ROYAL INFIRMARY

AND

E. W. HOPE, M.D. D.Sc.,

PROFESSOR OF PUBLIC HEALTH, UNIVERSITY OF LIVERPOOL;
MEDICAL OFFICER OF HEALTH OF THE CITY AND PORT OF LIVERPOOL.

Just Published, Second Edition, price 6s. net.

MANUAL OF HYGIENE

For Students and Nurses

BY

JOHN GLAISTER, M.D., D.P.H.(Camb.),
F.R.S.E.,

Professor of Forensic Medicine and Public Health in the University of Glasgow.

ILLUSTRATED.

Fifth Edition, price 10s. 6d. net.

The Students' Handbook of
THE PRACTICE OF MEDICINE

Designed for the use of Students and Junior Practitioners.

By H. AUBREY HUSBAND, M.B., C.M.,
B.Sc., F.R.C.S.E., M.R.C.S., L.S.A.,
FORMERLY LECTURER ON MEDICAL JURISPRUDENCE AND PUBLIC HEALTH IN THE EXTRA-ACADEMICAL SCHOOL, EDINBURGH;
MEMBER OF THE GENERAL COUNCIL OF THE UNIVERSITY OF EDINBURGH;
EXTRAORDINARY MEMBER OF THE ROYAL MEDICAL SOCIETY, EDINBURGH;
AND CORRESPONDING FELLOW OF THE MEDICO-LEGAL SOCIETY OF NEW YORK.

Illustrations, Tables, Prescriptions, and Glossary.

3rd Edition. 5th Thousand, price 5s. net.

Illustrated by about 40 Plates (many Coloured) or 109 Figures.

Anatomy of the Brain and Spinal Cord

By J. RYLAND WHITAKER, B.A., M.B.(Lond.)
F.R.C.P., L.R.C.S.(Edin.),
Lecturer on Anatomy, Surgeons' Hall, Edinburgh; Examiner for the Triple Qualification.

'The book is an excellent Manual for the use of Students and makes a good introduction to the heavier text-books. This Edition is made more valuable by the inclusion of some new matter in the text, and by the addition of many new figures and tables'—*Scotsman.*

Just published, Second Edition, price 8s. net.

WHEELER'S
Handbook of Medicine and Therapeutics
REVISED AND ENLARGED

By WILLIAM R. JACK, B.Sc., M.D., F.F.P.S.G.,

Assistant to the Professor of Practice of Medicine, Glasgow University; Physician to the Out-Door Department, Glasgow Western Infirmary.

Demy 4to., price 7s. 6d.

Illustrated with 10 Coloured Plates.

NERVES of the HUMAN BODY

By ALFRED W. HUGHES, M.B. & C.M.Edin.,
F.R.C.S. Edin., M.R.C.S. Eng.,

Late Professor of Anatomy, King's College, London.

'An excellent work of reference for students, quite in place in a Medical School library. The drawings are large and bold, demonstrating the distributions and connections of the cranial and spinal nerves with clearness and accuracy. The cranial nerves in particular are well represented. . . . The preparation of "Nerves of the Human Body" must have cost its author much trouble, and Dr Hughes may be congratulated on the result of his labours.'—*British Medical Journal.*

Price 4s. 6d. net.

ILLUSTRATED WITH 8 COLOURED PLATES.

Manual of Surgical Anatomy

By ALFRED W. HUGHES, M.B. & C.M.Edin.,
F.R.C.S.Edin., M.R.C.S.Eng.,

Late Professor of Anatomy, King's College, London.

'Dr Hughes evidently possesses the faculty of condensing a large amount of information into a small space in a clear and methodical manner. The student will find it a very reliable guide. The work contains a number of excellent illustrations, which will greatly assist the student in learning the relative positions of various structures which he would encounter in the ligature of the principal arteries.'—*Edinburgh Medical Journal.*

Second Edition, price 6s.

Revised and Enlarged, with 12 Tinted Plates and 40 Woodcuts.

MANUAL OF THE
Minor Gynecological Operations and Appliances

By J. HALLIDAY CROOM, M.D., F.R.C.P.E., F.R.C.S.E.,

Lecturer on Midwifery and Diseases of Women, School of Medicine; President of the Obstetrical Society, Edinburgh; and Examiner in Midwifery in the University of Edinburgh and Royal College of Physicians, Edinburgh.

'We are glad to see that this valuable Manual has run into a Second Edition. Its arrangement is such as will commend itself both to the student and busy practitioner. We finish the perusal of this work impressed with its simplicity of arrangement and lucidity of expression.'—*Liverpool Medico-Chirurgical Journal.*

Price 4s. net.

YELLOW FEVER

By JAMES W. MARTIN, M.D.

ILLUSTRATED.

'It gives a very clear and concise account of the chief facts about yellow fever and its congeners among the malarial fevers of the tropics, and discusses its etiology and treatment at some length.'—*Lancet.*

Price One Shilling and Sixpence net.

DISEASES OF THE EYE.

A Manual for Senior Students and Young Practitioners.

By J. ARTHUR KEMPE, F.R.C.S.,

Late Senior Demonstrator of Anatomy, Surgeons' Hall, Edinburgh.

USED IN THE EDINBURGH MEDICAL SCHOOLS.

'It is a book for those who now require to show a knowledge of the more common eye diseases before passing the final examinations. The arrangement is good, the information explicit, and after the student is done with it as an examination guide he will find it very useful in general practice.'—*Glasgow Herald.*

'This book gives a pithy digest of the symptoms and diagnosis of the commonest diseases of the eye with practical hints as to treatment.'—*Daily Free Press.*

Price 2s. 6d. net.

THE ROTATORY MOVEMENTS

OF THE

HUMAN VERTEBRAL COLUMN

AND THE

SO-CALLED MUSCULI ROTATORES

By ALFRED W. HUGHES,

M.B. & C.M.Edin., F.R.C.S.Eng., F.R.C.S.Edin.,

Late Professor of Anatomy, King's College, London; Author of 'Nerves of the Human Body' and 'Manual of Surgical Anatomy.'

'The entire work bears evidence of careful observation, and forms a useful contribution to the mechanism of the human skeleton.'—*Edinburgh Medical Journal.*

NEW EDITION.

Revised in accordance with the British Pharmacopœia, 1898.

Price One Shilling net.

POSOLOGICAL TABLES;

Appendix on Poisons; Index of Diseases; and Medicines arranged according to their Actions.

By WILLIAM CRAIG, M.D.,

C.M., F.R.S.E.,

Lecturer on Materia Medica, School of Medicine, Surgeons' Hall, Edinburgh; Late Examiner in Materia Medica, Edinburgh University; Examiner, Royal College of Surgeons.

Being a Tabular Arrangement of all the Medicines contained in the British Pharmacopœia, with Dose, &c.

'This is a useful little book, containing a tabular arrangement of all the Pharmacopœial preparations, with their doses and methods of administration. A table on Poisons and an Index of Diseases with Appropriate Remedies are included.'—*Lancet.*

Price Five Shillings.

THE STUDENTS' HANDBOOK of GYNECOLOGY

PROFUSELY ILLUSTRATED.

THE MOST PRACTICAL HANDBOOK EVER PUBLISHED.

'It is clearly and concisely written, and it is surprising to find that it has succeeded so well, in the small space at its disposal, in covering the ground necessary for an elementary knowledge of this progressive and important branch of medical learning'—*Scotsman.*

Price 3s. 6d. net.

ZOOLOGY NOTES

SPECIALLY adapted for Students preparing for Professional Examinations in Medicine and Science. The various divisions considered in accordance with the several University Syllabuses.

BY ALEXANDER JOHNSTONE, F.G.S.,

AUTHOR OF 'BOTANY NOTES,'

Lecturer on Botany, School of Medicine, Edinburgh; and Natural Science Master, Blair Lodge.

Fourth Edition. Price 2s. net.

BOTANY NOTES

SPECIALLY adapted for Students preparing for Professional Examinations in Medicine and Science. The various divisions considered in accordance with the several University Syllabuses.

BY ALEXANDER JOHNSTONE, F.G.S.,

AUTHOR OF 'ZOOLOGY NOTES,'

Lecturer on Botany, School of Medicine, Edinburgh; and Natural Science Master, Blair Lodge.

Second Edition. Price Two Shillings net.

Revised in accordance with the British Pharmacopœia, 1898.
96 pp. Crown 8vo. Bound in Cape Morocco.

The Students' Practical Materia Medica

BY

G. HAXTON GIFFEN,

L.R.C.P.E., L.R.C.S.E., L.F.P. & S.G.,

'Bathgate' Gold Medallist in Materia Medica, Royal College of Surgeons.

'We recommend this little book.'—*Dublin Journal of Medical Science.*

'It contains a vast amount of information in small compass and is likely to become popular with students preparing for an examination.'—*Edinburgh Medical Journal.*

Price 1s. 6d. in Paper Boards; or in Cloth, 2s.

THE CHILD—HOW TO NURSE IT;

Or the Management of Children and their Diseases.

BY ALEXANDER MILNE, M.D.

'Dr Milne not only describes how the Child should be managed from the hour of birth, but he notes the distinctive characteristics of all the ailments to which children are liable, and gives instruction as to their proper treatment. A great many works have been published of late years, but there is certainly not one which is more likely to be of use to inexperienced or conscientious parents.' —*Scotsman.*

Price Threepence net.

The Monthly Nurse:

A FEW HINTS ON NURSING.

BY H. AUBREY HUSBAND, M.B., C.M., B.Sc., &c.

'We have very great pleasure in bearing testimony to this excellent little pamphlet. Monthly nursing, as it at present exists, is not at all in a satisfactory condition, and it is a relief to be able to get at some sensible advice and suggestions—Dr Husband supplies them here.'—*Medical Review.*

Price One Shilling net.

Puberty and the Change of Life.

A BOOK FOR WOMEN.

By J. C. WEBSTER, M.D., M.R.C.P.E.,

Assistant to the Professor of Midwifery and Diseases of Women in the University of Edinburgh.

'It should be read with profit by both mothers and daughters; its teachings are sound, and always on the side of that educated common sense which is but another name for science itself. The author's remarks on the evils attending the educational competition among girls deserve the attention of mothers especially. The health directions set forth in this manual, if followed out, cannot fail to avert much of the preventible pain and misery so characteristic of our modern civilisation.'—*Glasgow Herald.*

Quarto. Price Sixpence net.

Schedules for Plant Description

(ILLUSTRATED)

By JOHN WISHART,

Lecturer on Zoology and General Biology in Robert Gordon's College, Aberdeen; Herbarium Medallist of the Pharmaceutical Society of Great Britain.

'The use of these Schedules by pupils will train their powers of observation and reasoning, and prevent them from being contented with book knowledge.'—*Dublin Journal of Medical Science.*

'These tables are admirably adapted and arranged on a scientific principle for building up an instructive record of plant examination.'—*Aberdeen Daily Free Press.*

BY THE SAME AUTHOR.

Price Two Shillings net.

The Botanists' Vade Mecum.

'A very handy little pocket guide to the classification of plants, intended for use during botanical excursions. The matter is very concise and well arranged, and the value of the book is very materially enhanced by an ingenious and novel form of index.'—*Guy's Hospital Gazette.*

Price 2s. 6d. net.

Illustrated by numerous Woodcuts, Plain and in Colour.

MIDWIFERY NOTES

FOR THE USE OF STUDENTS.

By T. A. GLOVER, M.D.(Edin.)

Fellow, Obstetrical Society, London, &c.

'The author distinctly states that the object of these Notes is to help the student in his Practical Midwifery Training; to this end only matter which is likely to be exemplified in the ordinary run of cases is included and this in such a manner as to be easily digested and as easily retained. This book will be found to be a useful introduction to the Art of Midwifery.'—*Guy's Hospital Gazette.*

ILLUSTRATED WITH OVER 100 CHARACTERISTIC SKETCHES & PEN & INK PORTRAITS.

Price 2s. 6d. net.

[An EDITION DE LUXE, printed on Dutch hand-made paper and bound in half-morocco, price 5s. net—only 100 copies printed.]

CHEAP EDITION—(Words only)—Price 3d.

The Awful and Ethical Allegory

OF

DEUTERONOMY SMITH

Or, The Life History of a Medical Student.

'This excellent series of University sketches are a sort of Pilgrim's Progress of Edinburgh University studentdom, recording the gradual development of the medical, from the crude and chrysalis stage to that of his full-grown and perfect butterfly existence, and the moral of the tale lies in this, that it is of universal application; and the medical of to-day can read in it lessons for himself just as sound as the generation for whom it was written. The humour of the narrative lies largely in this, that it is written in the Biblical style, which gives to the incidents related a *naivete* that is often irresistible.'—*College Column.*

Price 2s. 6d. net.

THE STUDENTS' HANDBOOK

OF

Diseases of the Skin.

Illustrated by Coloured Plates and Wood Engravings.

'It is clearly and systematically arranged, and the student who masters its contents will have acquired a useful general knowledge of the pathological classification, course, and methods of treatment of all but the rarest diseases of the skin.'—*Manchester Guardian.*

'It will prove of service to the young practitioner, and also to older men in country practices, whose work leaves them but little time for the study of books of greater pretensions. A number of well-executed illustrations increase the working value of the book.'—*The Publisher's Circular.*

Second Edition. Price 6d. net.

Revised in accordance with the British Pharmacopœia, 1898.

Dose Tables of Materia Medica

Containing all the Doses required for Examinations and Prescribing

By T. HOMER, L.R.C.S., L.R.C.P.Edin.

Price Sixpence net.

Case-Taking Book for Hospitals;

With Hints on Case-Taking, Normal and Abnormal Temperatures, Weight of Adult Organs, &c.

The Synopsis used in the Royal Infirmary, Edinburgh.

TEMPERATURE CHARTS:

Suitable for Hospitals, Dispensaries, or Private Cases.

SPECIMEN COPIES FREE ON RECEIPT OF TWO STAMPS.

Special Sizes or Kinds produced to order at Moderate Rates.

Third Edition. Greatly Enlarged and Improved.

Price One Shilling net.

THE URINE

In Health and in Disease, together with its Chemical Examination.

By H. AUBREY HUSBAND, M.B., C.M.,
B.Sc., F.R.C.S.E., etc.,

Formerly one of the Medical Officers of the Royal Dispensary, Edinburgh. Author of the 'Students' Handbook of the Practice of Medicine,' 'Students' Pocket Prescriber,' &c.

WITH NUMEROUS PLATES.

Price 1s. 6d. Illustrated by 26 Woodcuts.

THE PHYSIOLOGY of the EYE,

With an Introductory Chapter on Optics.

By H. CAMPBELL, M.B.,
B.Sc. Lond., M.R.C.P.Lond., M.R.C.S.Eng.

New Edition. Revised and Greatly Enlarged.

Price 1s. 6d. net.

The Students' Pocket Prescriber

By H. AUBREY HUSBAND, M.B., C.M.,
B.Sc., etc.,

Author of 'The Students' Handbook of the Practice of Medicine,' 'The Urine, in Health and in Disease,' etc.

This Book is intended for Students and young Practitioners, and contains much useful information. The Prescriptions are arranged thus:—Alteratives, Antacids, Antispasmodics, Aperients, Cathartics, and Anthelmintics, Astringents, Caustics and Counter Irritants, Diaphoretics and Diuretics, Emetics and Expectorants, Gargles and Inhalations, Lotions, Liniments and Ointments, Narcotics and Sedatives, Refrigerants and Salines, Stimulants, Tonics, and Uterine Therapeutics; with an Index to the Prescriptions.

Price One Shilling net.

Morphology of the Vertebrata;

DOG-FISH, COD, PIGEON, AND RABBIT;

WITH DEVELOPMENT OF THE DOG-FISH.

By D. KNIGHT,

Of the Museum of Science and Art, Edinburgh.

ILLUSTRATED.

Part I.—Price Sixpence net.

ATLAS OF CHEMISTRY:

Inorganic and Organic,

Designed for the use of Medical and Science Students, and Science Teachers in Schools and Evening Classes.

By VICTOR V. BRANFORD, M.A.

Third Edition, Revised, price Sixpence net.

HANDBOOK OF ANIMAL CLASSIFICATION

For the Use of Medical and Science Students.

By VICTOR V. BRANFORD, M.A.

Price One Penny.

ALCOHOL: Its Action on the Body in Health.

By ALEXANDER WALKER, M.D.,

Late Medical Officer of Health, Putney.

THE CATECHISM SERIES.

(NEARLY ALL THE PARTS ARE ILLUSTRATED.)

Price One Shilling net, each Part.

ANATOMY.

Part 1—Upper Extremity.
Part 2—Lower Extremity.
Part 3—Head and Neck.
Part 4—The Abdomen.
Part 5—The Thorax.
Part 6—Bones and Joints.

BACTERIOLOGY.

[ONE PART.]

BOTANY.

[TWO PARTS.]

CHEMISTRY.

[TWO PARTS.]

FORENSIC MEDICINE.

[ONE PART.]

HISTOLOGY.

[ONE PART.]

MATERIA MEDICA.

[THREE PARTS.]

MIDWIFERY.

[TWO PARTS.]

THE CATECHISM SERIES.

Price One Shilling net, each Part

PATHOLOGY.

[PARTS 1, 2, & 3.]

PHYSICS.

[TWO PARTS.]

PHYSIOLOGY.

[FOUR PARTS.]

PUBLIC HEALTH.

Part 1—Water.
Part 2—Air and Ventilation.
Part 3—Sewage.
Part 4—Vital Statistics.
Part 5—Medicine, Food, Water-Closets, Disinfectants, Warming, Hospitals, &c.

SURGERY.

Part 1—Hæmorrhage—Repair—Inflammation—Suppuration—Ulceration—Mortification—Erysipelas—Wounds—Burns.
Part 2—Fractures and Dislocations of the Upper Extremity.
Part 3—Fractures and Dislocations of the Lower Extremity—Diseases of Blood-Vessels and Lymphatics.
Part 4—Tumours—Diseases of Bones—Diseases of Joints.
Part 5—Injuries and Diseases of Muscles and Nerves (Clubfoot, Whitlow, Ganglion, &c.) — Venereal Diseases. Regional Surgery: Injuries and Diseases of the Head.
Part 6—Regional Surgery: Face, Nose, Mouth, and Tongue, Œsophagus, Hare-lip, Neck, Tracheotomy, &c.; Thorax and Mamma.
Part 7—Regional Surgery: Vertebral Column, Abdomen, Rectum, Urinary and Genital Organs, &c.

THE CATECHISM SERIES.

Price One Shilling net, each Part

SURGICAL ANATOMY and OPERATIONS.

[TWO PARTS.]

TOXICOLOGY.

[ONE PART.]

ZOOLOGY.

[TWO PARTS.]

'The reading of these books just before going in for an examination will be of considerable use in recalling the most important points to memory.'—*Illustrated Medical News.*

Price One Shilling net.

A Manual of Dental Education

With some General Notes upon the Modern Curriculum of the Dental Student.

By ARTHUR TURNER,

Licentiate in Dental Surgery of the Royal College of Surgeons, Edinburgh;
Dental Surgeon to the Buckinghamshire General Infirmary;
Fellow of the Chemical Society.

'We can recommend it as affording much valuable information to those who think of studying dentistry.'—*Manchester Guardian.*

THE CATECHISM SERIES.

Price 1s. net, each Part.

Examination Questions in Practice of Medicine

WITH ANSWERS.

PART 1.—GENERAL DISEASES.
PART 2.—SKIN DISEASES.
PART 3.—FEVERS.

'These little books are very valuable in refreshing the mind of the student.'—*Daily Free Press.*

[*Other Parts will follow.*]

Price One Shilling net.

References to Nerves:

Being Tabular Views of the Motor Nerves to Muscles, the Nervous Supply of the Principal Articulations and of the Skin, the Deep and Superficial Origins of the Cranial Nerves, etc.; with the most important effects following Solution of Continuity of Nerves.

INVALUABLE TO THE ANATOMICAL STUDENT.

THE CATECHISM SERIES.

Price 2s. 6d. net.

SPECIAL PATHOLOGY.

Price 2s. 6d. net. Illustrated.

PHYSICAL TRAINING:

ITS THEORY AND PRACTICE.

Being an Elementary Treatise on the necessity and effects of Exercise.

By H. RIPPON SEYMOUR

Gymnastic and Fencing Master, George Watson's College, Edinburgh.

With an introduction by
WILLIAM TAYLOR, M.D., F.R.C.P.E.

'I can heartily recommend this book to all athletes. It will well repay perusal.'—*The Athletic Times.*

Price Two Shillings net.

Handbook of Deductive Logic:

Designed specially for the use of Medical Students preparing for their Preliminary Examination.

By Rev. DUNCAN STEWART, D.D.,

Minister of Spott, Dunbar.

Second Edition, price 2s. 6d. net; post free, 2s. 10d.

WALTER CRIGHTON

OR

Reminiscences of George Heriot's Hospital.

By JAMIESON BAILLIE.

PROFUSELY ILLUSTRATED.

With Portraits, Sketches, and Wash Drawings

By J. R. ABERCROMBY, and Others.

'The descriptions are exceedingly good. . . . Such an institution as George Heriot's Hospital with all its ancient customs lent itself to a book of this kind, and this volume is one of the best books of school life we have seen.'—*Edinburgh Evening News.*

Just Published, price 7s. 6d. net.

Memories of a Modern Monk

OR

Reminiscences of George Heriot's Hospital.

By C. B. GUNN, M.D.Edin.,

With a Description of the Hospital from an Architectural Standpoint

By HIPPOLYTE J. BLANC, R.S.A., F.R.I.B.A.,

And a Short Sketch of the late Dr Bedford (House Governor),

By his son, Major CHARLES HENRY BEDFORD,
D.Sc., M.D.Edin., M.R.C.S.Eng.;
Indian Medical Service; Professor of Chemistry, Calcutta University, &c.

PROFUSELY ILLUSTRATED.

Crown 8vo., 411 pp., price 3s. 6d.

CLAUDE GARTON

A Story of Dunburgh Student Life.

By THOMAS J. HENRY, F.R.C.S.E.,

AUTHOR OF 'DEUTERONOMY SMITH.'

'Mr Henry has given us a very striking book, even more powerful, in its way, than George Moore's masterpiece, "Esther Waters." It describes the experiences of a medical student in Edinburgh, from his entry to the day when he is "capped" for his diploma, and each scene stands out distinct and clear, a triumph of detailed and effective realism. To read these chapters is never to forget them; it is as though we had been present at the scenes described. Conan Doyle has done nothing better. Mr Henry has done for the Medical School of Edinburgh what Tom Hughes did for Rugby.'—*Sheffield Daily Telegraph.*

'The story is one of extroradinary fascination and dramatic power.'—*St James Gazette.*

Published Annually. Crown 8vo, price 2s. ; by post, 2s. 4d.

Edinburgh Medical School Calendar

Is the only book that contains all the information required for Graduation in Medicine, Surgery, and Public Health at Edinburgh University; Fellowship, Licence, and Licence in Dental Surgery of the Royal College of Surgeons; Fellowship, Membership, and Licence of Royal College of Physicians; Triple Qualification of Scottish Conjoint Board; Classes in the University and School of Medicine; Dispensaries, Students' Societies, &c.; also the

Preliminary and Professional Examination Questions

set by the University, Educational Institute of Scotland, Royal College of Surgeons, Royal College of Physicians, and the Triple Board, for several years past.

'It is full of the most useful information. It ought to be a most valuable work of reference for the medical student.'—*Edinburgh Medical Journal.*

Much time and money may be saved by a careful perusal of this book.'—*Medical Press and Circular.*

'The Medical School Calendar maintains its reputation for comprehensiveness and accuracy of information.'—*Scotsman.*

'The book is crammed with information on all subjects which a student requires to know in piloting his way through a course of medical study. A page of well-compiled advice to the student as to the most advantageous method of study is given. A glance through the pages of the Calendar shows the extensive provision for medical education in Edinburgh, and is itself the most convincing argument for the necessity of the publication.'—*Edinburgh Evening News.*